Antioxidants in Health and Disease

Edited by
Antonis Zampelas
Renata Micha
Antioxidants in Health and Disease
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

Edited by
Antonis Zampelas
Renata Micha
To our families for their love and support

and

to our students for their constant inspiration
Contents

Preface ........................................................................................................................................... ix
Acknowledgments ........................................................................................................................... xiii
Editors ............................................................................................................................................... xv
Contributors ....................................................................................................................................... xvii

SECTION I  Interest in Antioxidants: Why and How?

Chapter 1  Reactive Oxygen Species: Production, Regulation, and Essential Functions .......................................................... 3
  Robert B. Rucker

Chapter 2  Major Dietary Antioxidants and Their Food Sources .................. 23
  Moschos Polissiou and Dimitra Daferera

SECTION II  Antioxidants in Health

Chapter 3  Oxidative Stress in Pregnancy ................................................................. 47
  Ung Lim Teo and Andrew Shennan

Chapter 4  The Role of Antioxidants in Children’s Growth and Development ... 53
  Fátima Pérez de Heredia, Lígia Esperanza Díaz,
  Aurora Hernández, Ana María Véves, Sonia Gómez-Martínez,
  and Ascensión Marcos

Chapter 5  Adulthood and Old Age ............................................................................. 71
  Antonios E. Koutelidakis and Maria Kapsokefalou

Chapter 6  Smoking, Oxidative Stress, and Antioxidant Intake ....................... 83
  Aristeia Baschali and Dimitrios Karayiannis

Chapter 7  Physical Exercise ......................................................................................... 103
  Mustafa Atalay, Jani Lappalainen, Ayhan Korkmaz,
  and Chandan K. Sen
SECTION III  Antioxidants in Various Disease States

Chapter 8  Coronary Heart Disease and Stroke .................................................. 117
  Antonis Zampelas and Ioannis Dimakopoulos

Chapter 9  Diabetes ............................................................................................. 151
  Vaia Lambadiari, Foteini Kousathana, and George Dimitriadis

Chapter 10 Cancer ............................................................................................... 165
  Eleni Andreou

Chapter 11 Antioxidants in Neurodegeneration—Truth or Myth? ................. 199
  Francisco Capani, George Barreto, Eduardo Blanco Calvo, and Christopher Horst Lillig

Chapter 12 Gastrointestinal Disorders ............................................................... 215
  Michael Georgoulis, Ioanna Kechribari, and Meropi D. Kontogianni

Chapter 13 Antioxidants in Obesity and Inflammation ................................... 233
  Chrysi Koliaki, Alexander Kokkinos, and Nicholas Katsilambros

Chapter 14 Modulation of Immune Response by Antioxidants ..................... 249
  Kathrin Becker, Florian Überall, Dietmar Fuchs, and Johanna M. Gostner

Chapter 15 HIV/AIDS ....................................................................................... 263
  Heike Englert and Germaine Nkengfack

SECTION IV  Role of Herbs

Chapter 16 Role of Herbs and Spices—In Health and Longevity and in Disease ................................................................. 281
  Krishnapura Srinivasan

Index ................................................................................................................ 301
Preface

The present book, *Antioxidants in Health and Disease*, explores the effects of dietary antioxidants and/or antioxidant supplementation on various stages of the human life cycle, as well as on disease states, in a very balanced way.

Since the development of the “antioxidant hypothesis,” which is based on the assumption that oxidation in the body has deleterious effects on health, and thus subsequent antioxidant intake may prove beneficial, numerous studies have been carried out to test this hypothesis. After decades of scientific output, this area remains controversial. This book systematically explores these controversies and provides answers to key questions.

The book aims to critically review and synthesize the latest evidence-based findings in this area, and subsequently inform health professionals, such as physicians, dietitians, nutritionists, and nurses, and additionally biochemists, policy makers, and the general audience about the true role of antioxidants in health and disease. It disentangles myths from facts associated with antioxidant intake and further provides practical advice about recommended intakes whether from diet, supplements, or both.

The book is divided into three major sections. In Section I, mechanisms of action and major food sources are given. In Section II, the role of antioxidants in different stages of the life cycle is explored. Finally, in Section III, the effect of dietary antioxidants and/or antioxidant supplementation on the prevention and the treatment of various diseases are investigated.

In Chapter 1, the way by which reactive oxygen species are formed and regulated is presented. As stated, free radicals are not always harmful, and mechanisms to maintain a balance between essential functions and potential pathologies are outlined in this chapter.

In Chapter 2, the major natural antioxidants are classified and their distribution in food sources is presented. The major antioxidants presented include phenols and polyphenols, carotenoids, and essential oils, while major food sources are fruits, grapes and wine, vegetables, herbs, olive, and olive oil.

In Chapter 3, the implications of oxidative stress in pregnancy are explored. This chapter also reviews the most recent evidence available regarding the clinical potential of antioxidants in preventing some common and serious conditions in pregnancy.

Chapter 4 initially explores the effects of oxidative stress on children’s health. Then, a very balanced overview of the effects of antioxidants on various conditions during childhood is given, such as their effects on growth, physical and cognitive performance, treatment of deficiencies, and asthma and allergies.

Chapter 5 explores the needs of adults and the elderly in antioxidants. Owing to population aging, especially in westernized societies, and more people reaching the ages of 70, 80, or even 90 years, the possible effects of antioxidants on diseases such as cataract and Alzheimer’s are of great interest.
Chapter 6 explores the mechanisms involved in the increased oxidative stress in people who smoke. It also gives an overview on the prevention and treatment of diseases caused by smoking, relying on a combined application of antioxidants, substitution of important factors for human oxidant defense, and metal-detoxifying agents.

Chapter 7 discusses the role of endogenous and exogenous antioxidants on physical exercise and human performance. More specifically, it focuses on the need for, as well as the advantages and disadvantages of, antioxidant supplements for the physically active population and gives a special emphasis on thiol antioxidants, which play a key role in cellular redox regulation.

Chapter 8 initially gives a brief overview of the potential relationship between oxidation and the development of cardiovascular diseases, namely coronary heart disease and stroke. Then, data on the effects of antioxidants on risk factors and on end points of the diseases are presented.

Diabetes is a disease where increased oxidative stress is present. Chapter 9 explores mechanisms that contribute to increased oxidative stress in diabetic patients, and it also gives an overview of the antioxidant effects on the disease and the controversies related to antioxidant supplements.

Chapter 10 initially gives an overview of the effects of free radicals on cancer development. Then it gives, in extensive detail, the impact and the controversies of antioxidant intake through dietary sources or supplementation on cancer prevention and on the treatment of some types of cancer.

Chapter 11 explores the influence of antioxidants on neurodegenerative diseases. It explores mechanisms and gives data from interventions with more specific focus on the thioredoxin protein family (Trxs).

Chapter 12 provides an overview on the role of oxidative stress in the pathogenesis of inflammation-based gastrointestinal tract diseases, namely celiac disease and inflammatory bowel diseases, as well as the potential role of antioxidants in their prevention and treatment.

Oxidative stress is one of the unifying mechanisms underlying the development of obesity-related comorbidities, mainly type 2 diabetes and cardiovascular diseases. Chapter 13 explores the multiple contributing factors that may promote increased oxidative stress in obesity, including hyperglycemia, hyperleptinemia, increased tissue lipid availability that leads to lipotoxicity, inadequate antioxidant capacity, and chronic subclinical inflammation. It also gives a very balanced overview of the effects of antioxidants on oxidative stress in obese patients.

During immune response, activated immunocompetent cells produce large amounts of reactive oxygen species and reactive nitrogen species as a defense strategy. Chapter 14 focuses on the interference of antioxidants with the immune response, and discusses the possible consequences of unconsidered high-dose antioxidant supplementation.

Chapter 15 discusses controversies regarding antioxidant supplementation on HIV/AIDS patients.

Finally, Chapter 16 explores the role of herbs. The chapter argues that although spices are typically consumed at relatively low levels, some data indicate that spices
are in fact a very concentrated source of antioxidants and may provide a meaningful level of antioxidant activity if consumed at higher levels.

We hope that this book will provide all the valuable information to unravel current myths and straighten out facts associated with antioxidant intake, and that any reader will enjoy reading it.

Antonis Zampelas
Renata Micha
Acknowledgments

It was some years ago when Ira Wolinsky approached me and enquired whether I would be interested in editing a book on antioxidants. It is obvious that this field remains highly controversial, and I thus accepted this challenge with great enthusiasm. I would really like to thank him for this opportunity, and I look forward to future collaborations.

We, as coeditors, would also like to acknowledge the hard work of all the staff at CRC Press and thank them for their professional conduct and their efficient collaboration. Namely, we would like to thank Randy Brehm, Amor Nanas, and Jill Jurgensen who accommodated our deadline misses and editing requests, and effectively made this book possible. We couldn't have done this without them.

Special thanks are due to Nantia Mavrommataki, who provided administrative support, for her constant dedication.

Finally, we would like to sincerely thank all the authors for their scientific input to this book and for ensuring its accuracy and practicality. Its success is primarily due to their commitment and to their high-level scientific knowledge, which they transferred to the book’s text outstandingly. Thank you!

Antonis Zampelas
Renata Micha
Editors

Antonis Zampelas earned his BSc in Food Science and Technology from the Agricultural University of Athens, Greece. He holds an MSc degree in food science from the University of Reading, UK, and a PhD in Human Nutrition from the University of Surrey, UK. Professor Zampelas worked in the University of Surrey, as research fellow and also in the UK Ministry of Agriculture, Fisheries and Food, as a senior scientific officer. In Greece, and before joining the Agricultural University of Athens in 2006, he worked as an assistant professor of human nutrition and director of the professional training year in the Department of Nutrition and Dietetics at Harokopio University, Athens. He also served as president of the Hellenic Food Authority (2008–2010). He has been involved in numerous trials and projects related to the effects of diet on parameters influencing the development of cardiovascular diseases. Professor Zampelas’ research interest also includes the development of nutritional educational programs for Greek school children to prevent childhood obesity. He is also the principal investigator of the Hellenic Nutrition and Health Examination Survey. Professor Zampelas served as chair of the Department of Food Science and Human Nutrition, at the Agricultural University of Athens (2011–2014), and as a member of its senate; as president of the Hellenic Society of Lipidology, Atherosclerosis and Vascular Diseases; vice chairman of the Committee of National Drug Administration for the approval of Nutritional Supplements (2005–2007); member of the National Committee of Nutritional Policy; and member of the Executive Committee of the European Atherosclerosis Society (2005–2008). He is now vice president of the Hellenic Society of Medical Nutrition and associate editor of the international journal Atherosclerosis. Professor Zampelas currently works at the Department of Nutrition and Health of the United Arab Emirates University, at the Department of Food Science and Human Nutrition of the Agricultural University of Athens, and he is also a visiting professor at the Department of Nutrition of the University of Nicosia, Cyprus. Professor Zampelas is editor-in-chief of two nutrition textbooks, coeditor of two others, coauthor of 20 textbook chapters, and contributed to 120 peer-reviewed publications in international scientific journals.

Renata Micha is a clinical dietician, public health nutritionist, and epidemiologist who specializes in nutritional and cardiovascular epidemiology, with a focus on global diet and chronic disease and population strategies to improve diet. Dr. Micha earned her degree in nutrition and dietetics from Harokopio University of Athens, Greece (2004), and her PhD in public health nutrition from King’s College London, UK (2008). She subsequently did her 3-year (2008–2011) postdoctoral training in nutritional and cardiovascular epidemiology at the Department of Epidemiology, Harvard School of Public Health, Boston, United States. During her postdoc, she mainly focused on leading the work of the 2010 Global Burden of Diseases (GBD) Nutrition and Chronic Diseases Expert Group (NutriCoDE), a global WHO project funded by the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. In November 2011, she was
appointed research associate (junior faculty) at the Department of Epidemiology, Harvard School of Public Health, and in July 2014 she was appointed research assistant professor at Friedman School of Nutrition Science and Policy, Tufts University. In this role, she is involved in cutting-edge international research, including expanding the 2010 GBD NutriCoDE work and evaluating the comparative effectiveness of population strategies and policies to improve diet and reduce cardiovascular disease. Furthermore, in Greece, she was instrumental in the design, development, and funding of the 1st Hellenic National Health and Nutrition Examination Survey (H-NHANES), the largest national surveillance survey of its kind to ever take place in Greece. Dr. Micha currently serves as the director of the H-NHANES; in this role, she directs a team of more than 100 people of various backgrounds, with aims of evaluating dietary and lifestyle habits and related health indicators and risk factors in a nationally representative sample of the Greek population. In addition to her research, Dr. Micha has extensive teaching experience. She has developed and led teaching for one undergraduate and three graduate courses in the field of nutritional science, including in nutritional epidemiology, public health nutrition, and advanced research methods. She has designed and contributed to multiple epidemiological studies (clinical and observational) relating to the investigation of the effect of diet on the development of chronic diseases, particularly cardiometabolic diseases. Dr. Micha has received several awards and honors, and she is an ad hoc manuscript reviewer in international journals, including the New England Journal of Medicine. She has contributed to more than 35 peer-reviewed publications in international high-impact scientific journals such as New England Journal of Medicine, Lancet, British Medical Journal, Circulation, and PLoS Medicine; presented more than 40 abstracts in international scientific meetings; is a coauthor of three international books; and is a coeditor of one book.
Contributors

**Eleni Andreou**
Life and Health Sciences
University of Nicosia
Nicosia, Cyprus

**Mustafa Atalay**
Institute of Biomedicine, Physiology
University of Eastern Finland
Kuopio, Finland

**George Barreto**
Department of Nutrition and
Biochemistry Faculty of Sciences
Pontificia Universidad Javeriana
Bogotá, D.C., Colombia

**Aristea Baschali**
Department of Clinical Nutrition
Evaggelismos Hospital
Athens, Greece

**Kathrin Becker**
Division of Biological Chemistry,
Biocenter
Innsbruck Medical University
Innsbruck, Austria

**Eduardo Blanco Calvo**
Institute of Biomedical Research
(IBIMA)
Regional Hospital of Málaga
Málaga, Spain

**Francisco Capani**
Laboratory of Cytoarchitecture and
Neuronal Plasticity
Institute of Cardiological Research
“Prof. Dr. Alberto C. Taquini”
(ININCA)
Buenos Aires University and CONICET
and
Department of Biology
Universidad Argentina John F. Kennedy
Buenos Aires, Argentina

**Dimitra Daferera**
Laboratory of General Chemistry
Department of Food Science and
Human Nutrition
Agricultural University of Athens
Athens, Greece

**Fátima Pérez de Heredia**
School of Natural Sciences and
Psychology
Liverpool John Moores University
Liverpool, United Kingdom

**Ligia Esperanza Díaz**
Immunonutrition Research Group
Department of Metabolism and
Nutrition
Institute of Food Science and
Technology and Nutrition (ICTAN)
Spanish National Research Council
(CSIC)
Madrid, Spain
Contributors

Ioannis Dimakopoulos
Agricultural University of Athens
Athens, Greece

George Dimitriadis
Second Department of Internal Medicine
Research Unit and Diabetes Centre
Athens University Medical School
Attikon General Hospital
Athens, Greece

Heike Englert
University of Applied Sciences
Muenster
Muenster, Germany

Dietmar Fuchs
Division of Biological Chemistry,
Biocenter
Innsbruck Medical University
Innsbruck, Austria

Michael Georgoulis
Department of Nutrition and Dietetics
Harokopio University
Athens, Greece

Sonia Gómez-Martínez
Immunonutrition Research Group
Department of Metabolism and Nutrition
Institute of Food Science and Technology and Nutrition (ICTAN)
Spanish National Research Council (CSIC)
Madrid, Spain

Aurora Hernández
Immunonutrition Research Group
Department of Metabolism and Nutrition
Institute of Food Science and Technology and Nutrition (ICTAN)
Spanish National Research Council (CSIC)
Madrid, Spain

Maria Kapsokefalou
Unit of Human Nutrition
Department of Food Science and Human Nutrition
Agricultural University of Athens
Athens, Greece

Dimitrios Karayiannis
Department of Clinical Nutrition
Evaggelismos Hospital
Athens, Greece

Nicholas Katsilambros
First Department of Propaedeutic Medicine
Athens University Medical School
Laiko General Hospital
Athens, Greece

Ioanna Kechribari
Department of Nutrition and Dietetics
Harokopio University
Athens, Greece

Alexander Kokkinos
First Department of Propaedeutic Medicine
Athens University Medical School
Laiko General Hospital
Athens, Greece

Chrysi Koliaki
Institute for Clinical Diabetology
German Diabetes Center
Leibniz Center for Diabetes Research
Heinrich Heine University
Düsseldorf, Germany
Meropi D. Kontogianni
Department of Nutrition and Dietetics
Harokopio University
Athens, Greece

Ayhan Korkmaz
Institute of Biomedicine, Physiology
University of Eastern Finland
Kuopio, Finland

Foteini Kousathana
Second Department of Internal Medicine
Research Unit and Diabetes Centre
Athens University Medical School
Attikon General Hospital
Athens, Greece

Antonios E. Koutelidakis
Unit of Human Nutrition
Department of Food Science and Human Nutrition
Agricultural University of Athens
Athens, Greece

Vaia Lambadiari
Second Department of Internal Medicine
Research Unit and Diabetes Centre
Athens University Medical School
Attikon General Hospital
Athens, Greece

Jani Lappalainen
Institute of Biomedicine, Physiology
University of Eastern Finland
Kuopio, Finland

Christopher Horst Lillig
Institute for Medical Biochemistry and Molecular Biology
Universitätsgesundheitsmedizin Greifswald Ernst-Moritz Arndt-Universität Greifswald
Greifswald, Germany

Ascensión Marcos
Immunonutrition Research Group
Department of Metabolism and Nutrition
Institute of Food Science and Technology and Nutrition (ICTAN)
Spanish National Research Council (CSIC)
Madrid, Spain

Germaine Nkengfack
Department of Nutrition
University of Applied Sciences
Muenster, Germany

and

Department of Biomedical Sciences
University of Dschang
Dschang, Cameroon

Moschos Polissiou
Laboratory of General Chemistry
Department of Food Science and Human Nutrition
Agricultural University of Athens
Athens, Greece

Robert B. Rucker
Nutrition Department
University of California, Davis
Davis, California

Chandan K. Sen
Department of Surgery
College of Medicine
Center for Regenerative Medicine and Cell-Based Therapies
OSU Comprehensive Wound Center
The Ohio State University Wexner Medical Center
Columbus, Ohio
Andrew Shennan
Womens Health Academic Centre
Kings College London
London, United Kingdom

Krishnapura Srinivasan
Department of Biochemistry and Nutrition
CSIR—Central Food Technological Research Institute
Mysore, India

Ung Lim Teo
Maternity Unit
St Thomas’ Hospital
London, United Kingdom

Florian Überall
Division of Medical Biochemistry, Biocenter
Innsbruck Medical University
Innsbruck, Austria

Ana María Veses
Immunonutrition Research Group
Department of Metabolism and Nutrition
Institute of Food Science and Technology and Nutrition (ICTAN)
Spanish National Research Council (CSIC)
Madrid, Spain
Section I

Interest in Antioxidants: Why and How?
INTRODUCTION

This chapter provides basic information and background to set the stage for the subsequent chapters that address health or disease conditions in which reactive oxygen species (ROS) and oxidant stress play important roles. The major forms of ROS are described along with mechanisms that account for their production. Strictly defined, ROS include chemically reactive oxygen ions and peroxides. Abnormally high levels of ROS initiate reactions that structurally alter important molecules, such as DNA, RNA, proteins, and lipids, particularly lipids comprising cellular membranes [1,2]. Such events contribute to a number of pathological conditions. Ischemic muscle damage, desynchronies in growth due to excessive apoptosis, necrosis, inflammation, and insulin resistance are examples.

Despite their destructive potential, however, ROS also play essential roles in cell turnover and replacement (e.g., apoptosis or programmed cell death), as secondary messengers in a variety of cellular processes and as catalyst in the modulation of protein structure, host defense mechanisms, wound repair, chemotaxis, and the
mobilization of cellular transport systems [2,3]. Whether ROS serve as healthful biological agents or initiate oxidative damage depends on the delicate equilibrium between ROS production and their scavenging.

A free radical is an atom or molecule that contains unpaired electrons and maintains an independent existence. Free radicals can have positive, negative, or neutral charges. In most instances, free radicals initiate a change in other atoms or molecules by abstracting a hydrogen atom from C–H, N–H, or O–H bonds within biomolecules or an electron from a metal or metal complex capable of catalyzing oxidation/reduction (redox) reactions [2]. In simple reactions, there may be only a change in a given redox state of the targeted molecule. However, if the free radical does not reattach to the redox molecule or another molecule that can act as a free radical acceptor (e.g., an antioxidant), such reactions can become potentially harmful. The descriptions that follow outline the mechanisms important to maintaining the balance between essential functions and potential pathologies.

**SOME OXYGEN CHEMISTRY BASICS**

Oxygen is the third most abundant element in the universe and constitutes 20.8% of the volume of air [4,5]. In most compounds containing oxygen, the oxidation state of oxygen is −2. An oxidation state of −1 is found in peroxides. From an evolutionary perspective, the dominant forms of early life on Earth were anaerobic organisms until oxygen began to accumulate in the atmosphere. The accumulation of atmospheric oxygen started about 2.5 billion years ago, and the first aerobic organisms followed about a billion years later [5].

Oxygen is an unusual element in several ways. For example, at temperatures compatible with life, molecular oxygen exists in a triplet state, whereas almost all molecules encountered in daily life exist in a singlet state. Triplet oxygen (not to be confused with the oxygen allotrope ozone, O₃) is the ground state for dioxygen, O₂. Oxygen in the triplet state needs to transition into a singlet state before chemical reactions can more easily occur (Figure 1.1). The need for such transitions makes the vast bulk of atmospheric oxygen kinetically nonreactive on a relative scale despite being a strong oxidant from a thermodynamic perspective. For example, although dioxygen is not a highly reactive molecule, its two unpaired electrons give it free radical character. There are also other allotropic states of oxygen ranging from molecular oxygen (O₂), the most familiar form, to highly reactive ozone (O₃) and oxygen in several solid states [1–5].

The electron configuration of ground-state oxygen has two unpaired electrons occupying two degenerate molecular orbitals, i.e., orbitals that have different quantum states but the same energy level [2,4]. Degenerate orbitals are antibonding, which prevents molecular oxygen from reacting directly or readily with other molecules.

Ground-state oxygen (O₂): common representations of electron distributions

\[
\begin{align*}
\sigma_1s | \sigma^\uparrow 1s | \sigma_2s | \sigma^\downarrow 2s | \sigma_2p | \pi^\uparrow 2p |
\end{align*}
\]
Reactive Oxygen Species

5

To iterate, \( \text{O}_2 \) in its ground state can absorb energy and be transformed into the more reactive singlet oxygen (Figure 1.1). This achieves the goal of producing a molecule in which there is the same number of electrons but with a pair of outer electrons that have antiparallel spin. When this occurs, one of the electrons can potentially jump to an empty orbital, creating an unpaired electron. Singlet oxygen is not a radical, but is more reactive than dioxygen, because it can react with atoms with outer shell electrons in either spin direction. In this regard, singlet oxygen violates Hund’s rule, which states that every orbital in an atom’s subshell is singly occupied with one electron before any one orbital is doubly occupied, and all electrons in singly occupied orbitals have the same spin. Singlet oxygen has eight outer electrons existing in pairs, leaving one orbital of the same energy level empty [2,5].

In nature, singlet oxygen is formed from water during photosynthesis, using the energy of sunlight [5,6]. It can also be produced in the troposphere by the photolysis of ozone \( \text{O}_3 \) + ultraviolet light \( \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{O} \), and in mammalian systems by reactions that occur in cells of the immune system (also cf. comments related to HOCl in “Types of \( \text{O}_2 \)-Derived ROS”).

Singlet oxygen: common representations of electron distributions

\[
\sigma_1s | \sigma^*1s | \sigma_2s | \sigma^*2s | \sigma_1p | \pi_2p | \pi^*2p
\]

Figure 1.1 ROS are generated as by-products and intermediates from many types of oxidation reactions. Some relationships between oxygen in the triplet state and major forms of ROS are given. Triplet oxygen \( ^3\text{O}_2 \) has two unpaired electrons occupying two degenerate molecular orbitals, which are antibonding. However, triplet oxygen can be transformed into several forms of singlet oxygen, which contains paired electrons, and with the addition of an electron, the superoxide anion radical. Singlet oxygen is more reactive than triplet oxygen. Various ROS may then be formed from singlet oxygen and superoxide in steps involving one electron and/or one or two \( \text{H}^+ \) transfers. In the Lewis structures corresponding to a given form of oxygen, the electrons that have “free radical” potential are designated with small open circles (◦) and arrows represent potential spin states.
Another oxygen species that can be formed from ground-state oxygen is superoxide anion \[1,2,4,7\]. Superoxide anion is formed from the one-electron reduction of dioxygen and exists as a negatively charged free radical of oxygen. The systematic name of the anion is dioxide\(^-\). One electron reduction of the ground-state molecular oxygen gives rise to superoxide anion radical \(\text{O}_2^-\).

Superoxide anion radicals undergo another one-electron reduction to yield hydrogen peroxide \((\text{H}_2\text{O}_2\), cf. “Types of \text{O}_2-\text{Derived ROS}; Figure 1.1). In spite of its designation as a superoxide, superoxide anion has a relatively low reduction potential (Table 1.1), and as a consequence is not a strong oxidizing agent. Nevertheless,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Redox Couple</th>
<th>Standard Reduction Potential ((E)) and pH 7.0 in MV</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>(\text{OH}^-, \text{H}^+\text{H}_2\text{O})</td>
<td>+2310</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lipid-LO(^-), \text{H}^+\text{LOH}\</td>
<td>+1600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{HOO}^-, \text{H}^+\text{H}_2\text{O}_2)</td>
<td>+1060</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lipid-LOO(^-), \text{H}^+\text{LOOH}\</td>
<td>+800–1400</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{GS}^-\text{GSH})</td>
<td>+920</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{PUFA}[–\text{C}^-], \text{H}^+\text{PUFA}–\text{H})</td>
<td>+600</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{H}_2\text{O}_2, \text{H}^+\text{H}_2\text{O}, \text{OH}^+)</td>
<td>+320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ascorbate(^-), \text{H}^+\text{ascorbate}\</td>
<td>+282</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CoQH}^+, \text{H}^+\text{CoQH}_2) (ubiquinol)</td>
<td>+200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{Cu}^{2+}/\text{Cu}^{+})</td>
<td>+150</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{Fe}^{3+}/\text{Fe}^{2+}) (aqueous)</td>
<td>+110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{CoQ}) (ubiquinone), (\text{H}^+\text{CoQH}^+)</td>
<td>–40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dehydroascorbate/dehydroascorbate(^-)</td>
<td>–170</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{Fe}^{3+}) [ferritin]/(\text{Fe}^{2+}) [ferritin]</td>
<td>–190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{NAD}^+, \text{H}^+\text{NADH})</td>
<td>–320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{O}_2/\text{O}_2^+)</td>
<td>–330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{O}_2, \text{H}^+\text{HOO}^+)</td>
<td>–460</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(\text{H}<em>2\text{O}/\text{hydrated electron} (e^-</em>{aq}))</td>
<td>–2870</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Relative Half-Lives of Reactive Oxygen Species**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Oxidant</th>
<th>Half-Life (s)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hydroxyl radical</td>
<td>(10^{-9})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alkoxyl radical</td>
<td>(10^{-6})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Singlet oxygen</td>
<td>(10^{-5})</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peroxy radical</td>
<td>1–10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nitric oxide radical</td>
<td>1–10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Semiquinones</td>
<td>Days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrogen peroxide (aqueous solutions, pH ~7)</td>
<td>Minutes to days</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Superoxide anion radical</td>
<td>Seconds to minutes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


**Note:** The half-lives of ROS markedly differ, which underscores the need for different types of defense mechanisms.
because of its ability to reduce transition metals capable of reduction, such as iron and copper, and act as a precursor to compounds, such as \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \), it is clearly a major facilitator of free radical reactions (cf. “Production and Types of \( \text{O}_2 \)-Derived ROS”).

Superoxide anion radical: common representations of electron distributions representations

\[
\begin{array}{c|c|c|c|c|c|c|c}
\sigma_1s & \sigma_\pi 1s & \sigma_2s & \sigma_\pi 2s & \sigma_2p & \pi_2p & \pi_\pi 2p \\
\hline
\uparrow \downarrow & \uparrow \downarrow & \uparrow \downarrow & \uparrow \downarrow & \uparrow \downarrow & \uparrow \downarrow & \uparrow \downarrow \\
\end{array}
\]

**PRODUCTION AND TYPES OF \( \text{O}_2 \)-DERIVED ROS**

**ROS Production**

ROS are not an entity, but a group of compounds, each with distinct features. Accordingly, ROS can be produced by multiple chemical, physical, and biological mechanisms. Numerous examples are developed in subsequent chapters that range from pollutants, tobacco smoke, excessive drug or xenobiotic exposure, to radiation exposure. With respect to cellular metabolism, from 2% to 4% of the total oxygen during both rest and exercise can be potentially converted to some type of ROS (Refs. [1–4]; also cf. Chapters 4, 5, and 7). This amounts to ~0.44–0.9 mol of ROS equivalents generated per day for a person weighing ~70 kg and consuming 500 liters of \( \text{O}_2 \), i.e., equivalent to an energy expenditure of ~2500 kcal or ~10.5 MJ/day [8]. ROS production is particularly associated with metabolic processes that take place within mitochondria, peroxisomes, and the endoplasmic reticulum (ER) (Figure 1.2):

- In mitochondria, high rates of ATP production are often associated with increased levels of ROS as a result of the superoxide radical generation associated with the increase in oxygen flux through the mitochondrial respiratory complex [9,10]—an increase that can be dissipated in part by uncoupling electron transport from ATP synthesis. Uncoupling proteins (UCPs), located in the mitochondrial inner membrane, dissipate mitochondrial proton gradients before they can be used to provide the energy for oxidative phosphorylation leading to ATP generation [10]. Although the major function of UCPs is heat regulation, UCPs also help modulate mitochondrial ROS levels (Figure 1.3).
- In peroxisomes, an organelle designed for branched and long-chain fatty acid and \( \alpha \)-amino acid oxidations, ROS are produced predominantly by the actions of various oxidases. As an example, the first step in the oxidation of fatty acids is catalyzed by the enzyme acyl-CoA oxidase, which results in \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) and a dehydroacetyl moiety:

\[
\text{Acyl-CoA} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{trans-2,3-dehydroacetyl-CoA} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2
\]
In the ER, particularly the smooth ER, numerous reactions occur that involve oxidases and oxygenases. The smooth ER is important to the synthesis, catabolism, or modification of complex lipids, phospholipids, and steroids not metabolized directly by peroxisomes or mitochondria. The smooth ER is also essential for detoxification and the modification of xenobiotics (foreign chemical substances found within an organism that are not normally produced by the organism, e.g., drugs and food-derived pigments). Families of enzymes localized in the smooth ER (the cytochrome P450 mono- and
Reactive Oxygen Species

[ Dioxygenases, Cyt P450] modify toxins and useful secondary metabolites to facilitate their partitioning into pathways for further transport or eventual elimination [11]. Oxygen is a co-substrate for many of the reactions carried out by such enzymes. Superoxide radicals are produced when the flow of electrons from the respective substrates for a given Cyt P450 to the reaction intermediates to the final products is compromised. Moreover, reduced glutathione (GSH) is used as a co-substrate for some of the modifications in the smooth ER. In situations where glutathione is used faster than it can be resynthesized, one result is reduced levels of GSH for antioxidant enzymes, such as glutathione peroxidase that use GSH as a reductant [12].

As an additional point, regardless of the process involved, changes in pH, temperature, the presence of sequestrants or inhibitors, and the polarity of the environment are noteworthy as factors important to free radical formation and stability. For example, the dielectric constant of the cellular environment can have a significant influence on the rates of free radical reactions [12]. The dielectric constant is a measure of solvent polarity and its ability to reduce the field strength of an electric field surrounding a charged particle. Solvents most often encountered in biology have dielectric constants >15; at <15, a solvent is usually defined as nonpolar. For perspective, superoxide radical generated from redox cycling systems (e.g., the repetitive coupling of a given reduction and subsequent oxidation reactions) can vary several

**FIGURE 1.3** Relationships between H⁺ flux, ATP synthase, and uncoupling protein complexes in mitochondria. In mitochondria, there is balance between the respiratory system, ATP synthase (for work-related functions), and the UCP complexes (for control of heat regulation). In part, this is achieved by regulating the H⁺ concentrations in the compartments defined by the outer and inner mitochondrial membranes. The presence of protons in the intermembrane space together with the difference in membrane potential between this space and the mitochondrial matrix is a driving force for the conversion of ADP to ATP. Furthermore, an increase in ATP levels can slow mitochondrial respiration, owing to the ability of ATP to regulate the phosphorylation of ADP by ATP synthase. In this regard, uncoupling the proton flux is an adaptive way to avoid excessive inhibition of mitochondrial respiration. Uncoupling the proton flux from ATP synthase also helps buffer ROS production by controlling the rate of respiration. As an additional control, when the rates of respiration and substrate oxidation are high, O₂⁻ production increases. The increase in O₂⁻ levels activates UCPs. This is another important control in that it occurs when the dismutation of O₂⁻ is insufficient to avoid ROS-related damage to mitochondria. (From Ricquier, D, Proc. Nutr. Soc., 64, 47, 2005.)
orders of magnitude when the reaction is examined in water (dielectric constant, ~70) versus in alcohol (dielectric constant, ~25) or in lipid micelles.

Such medium effects, however, are never simple. This is particularly true when addressing questions related to free radical centers located in biological macromolecules such as DNA, a lipid membrane, or a given protein. The hydration sheath associated with such complex molecules can have dielectric properties that are quite different from bulk water or a mixture of protic versus aprotic solvents. Accordingly, as a general admonition, predictions of biological responses related to free radical–mediated phenomena derived from simple systems, although helpful for hypothesis generation, may not be universal or straightforward.

**Types of O₂-Derived ROS**

**Hydrogen Peroxide**

H₂O₂ is not a free radical and is freely permeable across cell membranes. Analogous to its precursor, superoxide anion radical, in its radical form, it is also less reactive than other ROS and compounds capable of oxidation or initiation of free radical cascades (Table 1.1, Ref. [13]):

\[
\text{O}_2^- + e^- + 2\text{H}^+ \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HOO}^- + \text{H}^+ 
\]

From a chemical and biological perspective, this has some advantages. It is well appreciated that within cellular membranes, carbon chains associated with membrane lipids are major sites of oxidative damage. In lipids containing unsaturated, nonconjugated carbon chains, the hydrogen associated with the carbon not involved in π-bonding (–CH=CH–C[H₂]–CH=CH–) is more easily abstracted than hydrogens associated with π-bonded carbons in conjugated carbon chains or completely saturated carbon chains. The resulting radical (–CH=CH–CH'=CH–) is highly reactive and can lead to the formation of other radicals or cause isomerization and polymerization. In the presence of O₂, a likely free radical product of a nonconjugated lipid is lipid peroxide:

\[
–\text{CH}=\text{CH}–\text{CH}^•–\text{CH}=\text{CH}– + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow –\text{CH}=\text{CH}–\text{CHOO}^•–\text{CH}=\text{CH}–
\]

Reactions initiated by ROS that result in free radicals as products are called chain reactions because the product may also serve as reactant, thereby creating a chain of events that only stops when the reagents are used up or blocked by antioxidants. In this regard, as a consequence of being a slower-reacting free radical, lipid peroxides are more easily controlled and quenched in the presence of antioxidants. O₂ may even be viewed as an important free radical modulator in this context.

Whether H₂O₂ is going to act as a potentially useful versus destructive chemical often depends on its concentration in a given tissue. All aerobic organisms studied to date from prokaryotes to humans appear to tightly regulate their intracellular H₂O₂ concentrations at relatively similar levels. H₂O₂ concentrations range from ∼0.001 µM to as high as ∼0.1 µM during peak periods of H₂O₂ generation. In mitochondria, it is estimated that the steady-state level of H₂O₂ is ∼0.04 µM [14,15].
At controlled and low concentrations, H$_2$O$_2$ is involved in oxidative reactions important to (i) the regulation of protein function by altering structure via the modification of critical amino acid residues, (ii) cell signaling, (iii) thyroxin production, and a number of cellular and organismal defense systems [14,15]. Examples related to important protein modifications include the oxidation of cysteinyl residues to form sulfinic (–SOH), sulfonic (–SO$_3$H), or S-glutathionylated (–SSG) derivatives. Such reactions can result in protein dimerization or modification of Fe–S moieties or other metal complexes at the active sites of certain enzymes [16,17]. As noted, thyroxin formation (particularly iodination of tyrosyl residues in thyroglobulin) also requires H$_2$O$_2$ generation. Moreover, H$_2$O$_2$ is required for the oxidation of tyrosine residues, and, in some proteins, is essential for their cross-linking to form active dimers, oligomers, and even polymers.

Hydrogen peroxide is also important to cell signaling. A number of kinase-driven pathways important to cell proliferation, migration, survival, and autophagy depend on H$_2$O$_2$, which aids in catalyzing changes in the redox state of given kinases [13–15]. H$_2$O$_2$ is also essential in phagocytic processes by cells such as neutrophils, monocytes, macrophages, dendritic cells, and mast cells, i.e., cells that are critical in fighting infections, as well as removing dead and dying cells that have reached the end of their lifespan [13–15]. Compounds with well-defined roles are usually highly regulated either through control of synthesis and catabolism (Figure 1.2); H$_2$O$_2$ is no exception.

With regard to synthesis, H$_2$O$_2$ is generated from the spontaneous or enzyme-catalyzed dismutation (simultaneous oxidation and reduction) of superoxide anion or enzymes that catalyze the electron reduction of molecular oxygen (e.g., xanthine oxidase; Refs. [1–4]). Furthermore, as noted previously, inefficient metabolism by cytochrome P450 enzymes in the smooth ER or oxidases associated with peroxisomes is often associated with the production of superoxide radical or excessive amounts of hydrogen peroxide [1–4]. Other cellular sources of hydrogen peroxide are NADPH oxidase [1–4,18], which is found in all major classes of phagocytic cells. A general scheme for the NADPH oxidase reaction is

\[
\text{NADPH} + 2\text{O}_2 \leftrightarrow \text{NADP}^+ + 2\text{O}_2^- + \text{H}^+ 
\]

The production of superoxide anion by NADPH (nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide phosphate) oxidase and the eventual production of hydrogen peroxide by superoxide dismutase (SOD) serve as good examples of the complexity of H$_2$O$_2$ regulation [18]. NADPH oxidase is a membrane-bound enzyme complex found in the cellular plasma membrane as well as in the membranes of phagosomes used by neutrophils. The production of superoxide anion by NADPH oxidase is commonly referred to as the oxidative or respiratory burst reaction. There is first rapid generation of superoxide anion. Next, in the presence of the enzyme SOD, which is found in high concentrations in both the cytosol and mitochondria of cells, superoxide anion is converted to hydrogen peroxide [1–4]:

\[
\text{M}^{n+} - \text{SOD} + \text{O}_2^- + 2\text{H}^+ \rightarrow \text{M}^{(n+1)+} - \text{SOD} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 
\]

where M = Cu (n = 1), Mn (n = 2), Fe (n = 2), and Ni (n = 2).
Owing to the need for a high level of control, both the activities of SOD and NADPH oxidase are controlled by a number of regulatory strategies at the cellular and organismal levels. As examples, NADPH oxidase activity is controlled both by the transcriptional regulation of NADPH oxidase complex components as well as factors that control their rates of assembly [18]. Moreover, depending on the metabolic need or function, the number of agents may stimulate assembly or act as activators, such as growth factors and cytokines (platelet-activating factor, interleukin [IL]-8), various physical stimuli, ATP, and N-formylated peptides. This suggests that \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) production is linked to processes that use a number of differing cellular signals depending on the metabolic function that is needed. There are also a number of well-controlled events that extend from the activation of the NADPH oxidase complex at the cell surface. For example, NADPH oxidase activation is followed by the hydrolysis of membrane-associated phosphatidylinositol bisphosphate, which results in an increase in the levels of inositol trisphosphate (inositol 1,4,5-trisphosphate) and diacylglycerol [18]. These molecules, in turn, promote the opening of calcium channels, and the combination of diacylglycerol and calcium causes the activation of protein kinase C. Many other cell signaling factors are also involved, such as Rac, a transcription factor associated with the Rho family of “G-protein” GTPases. G proteins act as molecular switches and play roles in cellular events ranging from organelle development, cytoskeletal dynamics, and cell movement.

Regarding SOD, there are three major families of SOD, each requiring specific metal cofactors: (i) Cu/Zn (the cytosolic form); (ii) Fe and Mn types (the mitochondrial form); and (iii) the Ni type, which is found mostly in prokaryotes [19]. SOD overcomes the potentially damaging reactions of superoxide by catalyzing its dismutation. Dietary deficiencies of dietary copper and manganese can influence SOD activity [19]. SOD activity is lower and superoxide anion concentrations are higher in Cu-deficient animal models, which can be accompanied by malformations and ROS-related developmental defects. In mitochondria, SOD upregulation has been associated with the extension of lifespan, using invertebrates and arthropods as experimental models [19]. In this regard, whenever there is complex cellular regulation of molecules, the reasons often center on maintaining plasticity. Owing to the both healthful and potentially deleterious effects of oxidants, regulation must have features that address both specificity and safety, particularly when there are opportunities for nonspecific or deleterious modifications to normal cell signaling function.

**Hydroxyl Radicals**

Hydroxyl radicals are produced from the decomposition of hydrogen peroxides (often as the result of Fenton-type reactions or photolysis) or water (as a result of radiolysis). In the Fenton reaction, transition elements are usually used as catalysts [1–4,20] if they are capable of engaging in redox cycling reactions. For example, the addition of metals such as iron and copper (most often encountered in biology) to a solution containing hydrogen peroxide can result in the following reactions with hydroxyl radical and peroxyl radical as products:

\[
\text{M}^{\circ} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{M}^{\circ\circ} + \text{HO}^- + \text{OH}^-
\]
Reactive Oxygen Species

\[ \text{M}^{+1} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{M}^+ + \text{HOO}^\cdot + \text{H}^+ \]

In cells, these reactions are modulated by the presence of proteins such as ferritin (binds iron) and metallothionein (binds Cu, Zn, and Cd). An important observation is that metal-binding proteins keep the concentrations of many redox transition metals (e.g., Cu or Fe) at extremely low levels. For example, it has been calculated that the concentration of free copper in cells is maintained at less than one atom per cell [21], thereby assuring that the probability of nonspecific interactions with \( \text{OH}^\cdot \) remains low.

Exposure of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) to ultraviolet light can also cause the homolytic cleavage of hydrogen peroxide to yield hydroxyl radicals; in particular, ultraviolet light as a form of electromagnetic radiation (i.e., between 400 and 10 nm, corresponding to photon energies from 3 to 124 eV). In a homolytic cleavage of a chemical bond, each fragment retains one of the original electrons involved in bonding; that is, the exposed electrons are distributed equally within the two resulting fragments [1–4,20]:

\[ \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{HO}^\cdot + \text{HO}^\cdot \]

Water, in the presence of alpha radiation, dissociates into hydrogen and hydroxyl radicals:

\[ \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{H}^\cdot + \text{HO}^\cdot \]

Regardless of the process, the hydroxyl radicals that are produced have high reduction potentials and rapid rates of reaction (Table 1.1). In this regard, the rates of reactions are very near the diffusion limit; that is, the reactions take place at sites where hydroxyl radicals are generated. Hydroxyl radicals also react nonselectively and are probably the most responsible for the injury induced by ionizing radiation or when tissues are exposed to excessive levels of \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \). Furthermore, unlike superoxide, which can be detoxified by SOD, the hydroxyl radical cannot be eliminated by an enzymatic reaction [20]. Accordingly, hydroxyl radicals are the most reactive of the known ROS.

Peroxynitrite

The free radical nitric oxide (NO) is an essential endothelial-derived relaxing factor and powerful vasodilator [22]. Low nanomolar concentrations of NO activate guanylyl cyclase to produce cGMP. The production of NO is derived from arginine by a reaction that is controlled by NO synthetase (NOS). NO and citrulline are products of this reaction.
There are several forms of NOS. The endothelial isoform (eNOS) is the primary signal generator of NO in the control of vascular tone. It is also involved in the regulation of insulin secretion, cardiac function, and angiogenesis. The neuronal isoform (nNOS) is involved in the regulation and development of the nervous system. There is also an inducible isoform (iNOS) that is capable of producing large amounts of NO. NO is synthesized in response to inflammatory cytokines in phagocytic cells (monocytes, macrophages, and neutrophils) and is important to defense against parasites, infections, and even tumor growth. At high levels of NO (usually the result of iNOS activation), there is reduced mitochondrial activity [22]. As a consequence, there can be an increase in tissue oxygen saturation, followed by increases in superoxide anion radical, hydrogen peroxide, and NO levels [22].

Such conditions can lead to the formation of peroxynitrite via a reaction in which superoxide reacts rapidly with NO to form peroxynitrite anion (ONOO−):

\[
\text{^{\cdot}NO + O_2}^{\cdot} \rightarrow \text{ONOO}^-(\text{rate constant, } k \sim 10^{10})
\]

Peroxynitrite is a very strong oxidizing and nitrating agent. Although not a free radical, peroxynitrite is much more reactive than superoxide and NO; accordingly, peroxynitrite can damage a wide array of molecules in cells. Peroxynitrite can react with CO₂ to form nitrosoperoxycarbonate (ONOOCO₂). Potentially damaging effects in cells may result from the decomposition to ONOOCO₂⁻, which yields carbonate (CO₃²⁻) and nitrogen dioxide radicals (\^{\cdot}N^+O₂). Such radicals can react with tyrosine to form phenoxy radical intermediates that can initiate free radical chain reactions.

**Hypochlorous Acid (HOCl) and Myeloperoxidase**

HOCl is synthesized largely by the action of myeloperoxidase in phagocytic cells (e.g., mostly neutrophils) using H₂O₂ and chloride anion as substrates [23]. Myeloperoxidase is expressed as a part of the respiratory burst reaction. Myeloperoxidase can also oxidize tyrosine to tyrosyl radical using hydrogen peroxide as an oxidizing agent:

\[
\text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + \text{Cl}^- \rightarrow \text{HOCl} + \text{OH}^-
\]

The reaction of HOCl with superoxide radical produces hydroxyl radical (A) and with H₂O₂ produces singlet oxygen (B):

\[
\text{(A) } \text{HOCl} + \text{O}_2^{\cdot} \rightarrow \text{O}_2 + \text{Cl}^- + \text{HO}^*
\]

\[
\text{(B) } \text{HOCl} + \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{O}_2^1 + \text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{HCl}
\]

In addition, hypochlorous acid can be the precursor of potent oxidizing species that react with proteins, lipids, nucleic acids, and carbohydrates and even foreign substances (e.g., inhaled particles, molds, and dust). In this regard, HOCl plays an integral part in the innate or nonspecific immune defense system designed to kill...
Reactive Oxygen Species

microorganisms or destroy substances that may lead to more serious cell and tissue injury [23]. However, as with other oxidants, when in excess, HOCl can be toxic. Moreover, the amount of HOCl required for toxicity is markedly lower than the concentrations of H₂O₂ needed to destroy otherwise healthy cells. HOCl can cause an irreversible loss of intracellular GSH, an essential reductant in cells, and is more likely to oxidize thiol groups in proteins than H₂O₂ [24]. Glutathione is only replaced by resynthesis.

Singlet Oxygen and Ozone

The reaction of ozone with a number of biological molecules produces singlet oxygen in high yield. In turn, singlet oxygen is an important intermediate in the biochemical damage attributed to ozone exposure. Both can be produced in vivo by reactions and processes associated with inflammation and, analogous to the other ROS, play both healthful and potentially damaging effects in biological systems. A number of consequences of the interactions between ROS and inflammation are described in the chapters focusing on gastrointestinal disorders (cf. Chapters 12 through 15).

Singlet Oxygen

In plants, singlet oxygen is produced during the process of photosynthesis [6]. In animals, singlet oxygen is often associated with lipoprotein oxidation and skin photosensitivity. Singlet oxygen reacts with many kinds of biological molecules, particularly reactions that often involve carbon–carbon double bonds. Singlet oxygen is a powerful electrophile. Schenck-ene reactions and Diels–Alder reactions are examples [25]. The addition of singlet oxygen to an ene-containing molecule, such as a polyunsaturated fatty acid, often results in a peroxide adduct, which can result in bond cleavage, rearrangements, and aldehyde-containing products (R-CHO).

\[
\text{R} + \text{O}_2 \rightarrow \text{R} - \text{OOH} + \text{R}
\]

Ozone

In nature, atmospheric ozone is formed from dioxygen by the action of ultraviolet light and electrical discharges. Typical ozone concentrations found in the natural atmosphere range from 0.001 to 0.125 ppm. The levels of concentration vary with altitude, atmospheric conditions, and locale [1–4,26].

In animals, compounds with the chemical signatures of ozone are produced as a product of innate immune reactions; more specifically, the intrinsic ability of antibodies to generate hydrogen peroxide from singlet oxygen via the so-called antibody-catalyzed water oxidation pathway [27,28]. The process is independent of antigenic specificity and is triggered upon binding of \(^1\text{O}_2\) to conserved (specific) binding sites within the antibody’s structure:

\[
x\text{O}_2 + \text{H}_2\text{O} \rightarrow \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 + (x - 1)\text{O}_2
\]
Like other ROS, ozone also can play a role in combating foreign substances and bacteria [27,28]. For example, exposure to ozone triggers responses, such as secretion of various cytokines, tumor necrosis factor, and γ-interferon. Given that ozone is highly reactive, it would be expected that at higher than normal levels, ozone’s interaction with biologically important molecules may lead to premature cell death and inflammation.

Epithelial cells lining the respiratory tract are the main target of ozone and its products. Moreover, epithelial cells in response to ozone exposure release a number of inflammatory mediators that may initiate events leading to pathologies related to small airway obstruction and decreased integrity of the airway epithelium (e.g., prostaglandin E2, IL-6 and IL-8, granulocyte-macrophage colony-stimulating factor, monocyte chemotactic protein-1, chemokine [ligand 5], which is also known as RANTES or “regulated on activation, normal T-cell expressed and secreted” protein [27,28]).

Regarding levels of ozone that are considered a hazard, the allowable limit in many countries (United States, United Kingdom, Japan, France, Netherlands, and Germany) is 0.1 ppm or less. In many industrial cities, levels of 0.15–0.51 ppm are often observed. High ozone levels usually occur in summer months and reach their peak in mid to late afternoon because of an increase in exhaust fumes from morning traffic and industrial activities. Exposures of 0.4-ppm ozone are often used in experimental animal studies to induce lung pathology. A 3-h exposure at 12 ppm is usually lethal for guinea pigs. Those exposed to 5–9 ppm ozone concentrations plus other air pollutants may be subject to major lung damage [26].

**Oxidative Stress**

The term “oxidative stress” is used to characterize an imbalance between the ROS concentration and the ability to detoxify excesses of ROS (production via synthesis and/or catabolic processes) and their reactive intermediates, or to facilitate the repair of ROS-mediated damage (Figure 1.2). Accordingly, cellular protection against the deleterious effects of ROS is organized at several levels (prevention, interception, and repair) [29–31]. Regulation involves both small molecules that act as antioxidants and enzymatic strategies to control either the rate of synthesis or catabolism of potential oxidants or oxygen utilization.

As examples, \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) is catabolized by catalase (\( 2\text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \rightarrow 2\text{H}_2\text{O} + \text{O}_2 \)) and various hydrogen peroxidases [32]. Catalase is found in most organisms exposed to oxygen. In particular, catalase has high catalytic capacity or turnover number, the maximum number of molecules of substrate that an enzyme can convert to product per catalytic site per unit of time. The value for catalase is 40 million s\(^{-1}\). However, the biological significance of catalase is not straightforward. For example, mice genetically engineered without catalase remain phenotypically normal. In addition to catalase, thiol and selenol peroxidases are also important to \( \text{H}_2\text{O}_2 \) regulation. There are two main subfamilies: peroxiredoxins (Prx) and glutathione peroxidases.

The Prx are antioxidant enzymes that have thiol groups at their active centers and control peroxide levels that are mediated mostly by changes in cytokine levels [33]. Prx are regenerated by thioredoxins (Trx), small molecular weight redox proteins known to be present in all organisms [34]:
Prx(reduced) + H$_2$O$_2$ → Prx(oxidized) + 2H$_2$O

Prx(oxidized) + Trx(reduced) → Prx(reduced) + Trx(oxidized)

As a consequence, Prx are often important to cell signaling involving oxidant-related processes and are relatively abundant in cells in which oxygen tension is high. Mammalian cells express six known Prx isoforms. The oxidized active-site cysteine in Prx can be reduced by cellular thiols, such as one of the Trx. Regulation of Prx can also occur through phosphorylation by kinases that respond to extracellular cytokines and related cellular signals. Of additional importance, the oxidation state of the active-site cysteine of Prx can be transferred to other proteins that cannot effectively sense changes in peroxide concentrations.

Glutathione peroxidase is a selenium-containing enzyme [35]. Glutathione peroxidases are novel because instead of sulfhydryl moieties, they employ seleno moieties (R–SeH [red] or R–Se–Se–R [ox]). Glutathione peroxidase also catalyze both H$_2$O$_2$ and lipid peroxides to water or lipid alcohols, respectively:

2GSH + H$_2$O$_2$ → GS–SG + 2H$_2$O

where GSH represents reduced glutathione as substrate and G–S–S–G oxidized glutathione as product. With regard to importance, similar to catalase knockout mice, mice genetically engineered to lack various isoforms of glutathione peroxidase or Prx only demonstrate modest phenotypic changes; however, they are more sensitive to certain exogenous sources of oxidative stress, such as hyperoxia.

Table 1.2 includes other proteins, enzymes, and examples of other molecules found in tissues that are involved in the control of ROS levels and related metabolites. Although a discussion of each of the molecules that act as reductants or antioxidants is beyond the scope of this chapter, it is important to appreciate that many of the enzymes involved in ROS regulation utilize these molecules as reductants [1–4]. As examples:

1. Ascorbic acid is important in maintaining iron and copper in reduced states at the active sites of many oxidases and peroxidases [36].
2. GSH, a tripeptide containing cysteine, is the principal reductant for glutathione peroxidase [35].
3. NADPH is essential as a cofactor for GSH regeneration from oxidized glutathione (2GSH ←→ GS–SG) via glutathione reductase, and for oxygenases and oxidases associated with the ER [35].
4. Vitamin E and carotenoids are often referred to as the first lines of defense in cellular membranes and act to sequester HOO$^\cdot$ radicals and retard reactions involving singlet oxygen [37].

Also listed in Table 1.2 are a number of dietary antioxidants that putatively counter ROS damage by scavenging free radicals (Refs. [4,29–31,38–40]; also cf. Chapter 2).
TABLE 1.2
Substances and Compounds with Antioxidant Activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Substance or Compound</th>
<th>ROS Target or Function</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Essential Compounds (Vitamins) and Related Derivatives</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A-, β-, γ-, and δ-Tocopherols</td>
<td>Lipid peroxide–initiated chain reaction breakers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β-Carotenes</td>
<td>Singlet oxygen quencher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lycopene</td>
<td>Singlet oxygen quencher</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ubiquinol (CoQ-10)</td>
<td>Radical scavenger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ascorbic acid</td>
<td>Reductant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Glutathione</td>
<td>Reductant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Urate</td>
<td>Radical scavenger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bilirubin</td>
<td>Radical scavenger</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>Proteins and Enzymes (Primary)</strong></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Superoxide dismutase</td>
<td>Dismutation of superoxide anions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GSH peroxidases</td>
<td>Reduce lipid hydroperoxides to their corresponding alcohols and reduce free hydrogen peroxide to water</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Myeloperoxidase</td>
<td>Controls hypochlorous acid production from hydrogen peroxide and chloride anion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hydrogen peroxidases</td>
<td>Converts hydrogen peroxide to water</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Catalase</td>
<td>Catalyzes the decomposition of hydrogen peroxide to water and oxygen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alpha-1-microglobulin</td>
<td>Degrades heme and is a radical scavenger as well as a reductase</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>Proteins and Enzymes (Secondary)</strong></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Metal-binding proteins (e.g., metallothionein, chaperones, ceruloplasmin)</td>
<td>Sequestration, transport, and regulation of transition metals capable of redox</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cytochrome P450s</td>
<td>Catalyzes phase 1 metabolism, most often characterized by the addition of –OH groups to nonpolar and/or aromatic compounds to facilitate transport or elimination</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conjugation enzymes (e.g., glutathione-S- and UDP-glucuronosyl-transferases)</td>
<td>Conjugate phase 1 Cyt P450 products to more polar compounds (phase II reactions) to facilitate transport, delivery, or elimination</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NADPH quinone oxidoreductases</td>
<td>Two electron reductions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GSSG reductase</td>
<td>GSH regeneration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NADPH-generating enzymes</td>
<td>NADPH production</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>DNA repair enzymes</td>
<td>DNA repair</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Protein repair enzymes</td>
<td>Catalyze oxidized and denatured protein turnover or degradation</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
Reactive Oxygen Species


c

atabetgetic

n targets of ROS 

On the damaging e
g of 1.2 (CONTINUED)

Substances and Compounds with Antioxidant Activity

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Substance or Compound</th>
<th>Diet-Derived Antioxidants/Nutraceuticals</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Polyphenol antioxidants (e.g., flavonoids, various flavones, flavanols such as catechins or epicatechins, flavanones, flavanols, isoflavone phytoestrogens such as daidzein and genistein, quercetin, rutin, resveratrol, pyrroloquinoline quinone, and hydroxytyrosol)</td>
<td>More than 4000 distinct species: many have antioxidant activity; others affect cell-to-cell signaling, receptor sensitivity, inflammatory enzyme activity, or gene regulation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phenolic acids (e.g., cinnamic acid, caffeic acid, salicylic acid, and vanillin)</td>
<td>Redox cycling, general antioxidant activity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carotenoid (e.g., lutein, zeaxanthin, carotenes)</td>
<td>More than 600 known carotenoids in two classes: xanthophylls (which contain oxygen) and carotenes (which are hydrocarbons, and contain no oxygen); quench singlet oxygen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lipoic acid</td>
<td>Reducing agent, free radical scavenger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>Co-factor for glutathione peroxidase</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**COMMON TARGETS OF THE DAMAGING EFFECTS OF ROS**

Carbohydrates, lipids, proteins, and nucleic acids (RNA and DNA) are all targets of ROS and their derived products [4]. Carbohydrates and lipids can be oxidized to carbonyl compounds. Such oxidation reactions can lead to the formation of the advanced glycation or lipoxidation end products (often abbreviated as AGEs/ALEs), rearrangement of double bonds, changes in conformation, and carbon chain cleavage leading to end products such as malondialdehyde [41]. When glucose is involved, the initial products are Schiff base products followed by Amadori rearrangements. A good example of an AGE is glycated hemoglobin (hemoglobin A1c), which correlates with blood glucose levels [41].

![Chemical reaction](image)

When proteins interact with ROS, additional responses may include (i) oxidative attack of the polypeptide backbone; (ii) peptide cleavage due to ROS attack of glutamyl, aspartyl, and prolyl side chains; (iii) oxidation of amino acid side chains; or (iv) cross-linking or N-terminal modifications due to reactions with carbohydrate or lipid-derived carbonyls such as malondialdehyde. In this setting, the accumulation of damaged protein is dependent on the balance between prooxidant, antioxidant, and associated proteolytic
activities [1–4,6,17,20,41]. When ROS interact with DNA, oxidation usually occurs at guanine residues due to the high oxidation potential of this base relative to cytosine, thymine, and adenine. DNA stand breaks occur with 8-oxoguanine (8-hydroxyguanin) as a measurable product in blood and urine [20]. Moreover, ROS can also randomly damage RNAs. Oxidation of mRNAs in vitro and in vivo can result in lower rates of mRNA translation efficiency and aberrant protein products [20].

FINAL PERSPECTIVES

Many compounds have gained acceptance as antioxidant supplements independent of their original dietary source (i.e., as nutraceuticals). Indeed, currently, one of the most active areas of nutrition-related research focuses on foods or food-derived compounds with putative antioxidant potential (Refs. [38–43], cf. Table 1.2). Moreover, an additional dimension includes the products derived from such compounds and their potential interactions with the intestinal microbiota [44].

Although under most conditions, combinations of conventional nutrients with antioxidant or reducing potential in addition to endogenous enzymes and their corresponding co-factors appear sufficient to regulate ROS levels, additional secondary metabolites and compounds, particularly those found in fruits and vegetables, are now viewed by many as not only having complimentary but also potentially independent roles in oxidant defense [42]. Nevertheless, important caveats are in order when making claims about dietary antioxidants [43–47]. As examples, some claims are based on assays in vitro that measure antioxidant chemical potential and may have little relevance in vivo [47]. Furthermore, experimental studies using more diverse sets of experimental end points, rather than single end points, and clinical studies using larger pools of subjects, tend to demonstrate less benefit related to supplements than that proposed in many of the earlier preliminary studies (cf., Refs. [45,46]). It is also becoming increasingly apparent that ingestion of a complex food may set into motion dozens of cell signaling strategies and feedback loops that are likely not to occur with a single dietary supplement [38,39]. Moreover, many compounds (particularly polyphenols) with antioxidant potential at low concentrations can catalyze redox cycling and may cause free radical generation at higher concentrations [47,48]. With that said, however, the antioxidant potential of a number of natural compounds in foods remains to be a major factor in the correlation between ingestion of fruit- and vegetable-rich diets and the a reduction in pathological events that are influenced by free radicals.

REFERENCES


CONTENTS

Introduction ......................................................................................................................... 23
Classification of Natural Antioxidants ............................................................................. 24
    Phenols and Polyphenols ............................................................................................... 24
        Simple Phenols ........................................................................................................ 24
        Phenolic Acids ........................................................................................................ 24
        Flavonoids .............................................................................................................. 26
    Other Polyphenols ....................................................................................................... 28
Carotenoids ...................................................................................................................... 28
Essential Oils ................................................................................................................... 30
Distribution of Natural Antioxidants in Selected Food Sources ..................................... 30
    Fruits .......................................................................................................................... 30
    Grapes and Wine ........................................................................................................ 34
    Vegetables ................................................................................................................ 35
    Herbs ........................................................................................................................ 36
    Olive and Olive Oil .................................................................................................... 39
References ......................................................................................................................... 40

INTRODUCTION

The plant kingdom boasts of a great number of species consumed by humans in various ways: fresh, dry, cooked, processed, or as decoctions. These are fruits, vegetables, herbs and spices, olive and olive oil, grapes and wines, and juices and beverages, which contain in their chemical composition more or less antioxidant compounds classified to structurally different categories. The quality and quantity of these naturally occurring compounds depend on a number of parameters, such as the plant material, plant part, development stage, seasonal variation, environmental conditions, geographic origin, genetic factors and evolution, dehydration procedure, storage conditions, cooking method, isolation techniques, and analytical methods used for their identification (Kivilompolo et al. 2007, Figueiredo et al. 2008, Palermo et al. 2013).
An antioxidant has been defined as “any substance that, when present at low concentrations compared to those of an oxidizable substrate, significantly delays or prevents oxidation of that substrate” (Halliwell and Gutteridge 1995). Plant secondary metabolites have been the subject of research for many decades in order for their chemical structure to be characterized and their possible antioxidant effect to be attributed to this structure. In this chapter, the classification of these phytochemicals and their distribution in food sources is presented.

CLASSIFICATION OF NATURAL ANTIOXIDANTS

Phenols and Polyphenols

Phenols and polyphenols constitute one of the most numerous and widely distributed group of secondary metabolites in the plant kingdom. This group of compounds is characterized by the presence of at least one phenolic ring to their chemical structure, and is divided into subgroups that may differ significantly in stability, bioavailability, and physiological functions in relation to human health (Tsao 2010). More than 8000 phenolic structures have been identified from various sources; among them, fruits, grains, vegetables, spices, herbs, wine, and decoctions are important (Boskou 2006, Tsao 2010).

Simple Phenols

The most common simple phenols are thymol, carvacrol, and eugenol. The first two compounds are found in high amounts in the essential oils of many Lamiaceae species belonging to the genus *Origanum*, *Thymus*, and *Satureja*, which display various biological activities. Tyrosol, hydroxytyrosol, and oleuropein are natural phenolics occurring in olive and olive oil. Along with tocopherols, other natural antioxidants contribute to the high nutritional value of olive oil. Tocopherols consist of a chroman ring and a long, saturated phytyl chain, and are found in nature in four homologs, namely α-, β-, γ-, and δ-tocopherol (Figure 2.2). They are lipophilic compounds and are present in all oilseeds.

Phenolic Acids

Phenolic acids are usually found in plant tissues in the form of ester, salt, or glycosides, constituting the aglycone part of the compound. The aglycone part can be liberated by acid or alkaline hydrolysis, or by enzymes. Free phenolic acids can be found in fruits and vegetables; however, in other plant tissues such as grains, seeds, and in herbs, they are usually present in bound form (Tsao 2010, Hossain et al. 2010). Phenolic acids can be divided into two main categories, namely benzoic and cinnamic acid derivatives (Figure 2.1). The known representatives of benzoic acid derivatives in plants are p-hydroxybenzoic, vanilllic, syringic, protocatechic, gallic, and salicylic acids. Among the cinnamic acid derivatives, also known as phenylpropanoids, ferulic, caffeic, p-coumaric, chlorogenic, and sinapic acids have been reported. Rosmarinic acid, an ester of caffeic acid and 3,4-dihydroxyphenylacetic acid, is an important naturally occurring phenolic bioactive compound found in important quantities in plants of the Lamiaceae family (Saltas et al. 2013).
FIGURE 2.1  Molecular structures of characteristic phenols and polyphenols found in natural sources.
Flavonoids
Flavonoids are the most abundant group of natural phenolic compounds for which >4000 molecules have been identified (Tsao 2010). According to their chemical structure, flavonoids can be distinguished into two main categories: the flavone derivatives and the anthocyanins. The most popular flavone derivatives are flavones, flavonoles, flavanones, isoflavones, chalcones, and flavanols (Figure 2.1). They are usually found in food sources in the form of glycosides. The basic flavone structure is presented in Figure 2.1.

Flavones are considered to be the hydroxylated derivatives of this basic structure at positions 5 and 7, and one, two or three hydroxyls can be found at positions 3′, 4′, and 5′. A characteristic flavone compound is luteolin, including its glycosides, which are widely distributed in many plant families. Dietary sources of luteolin include herbs and spices such as oregano, rosemary, thyme, and pepper; vegetables such as carrots, celery, spinach, lettuce, and parsley; and olive oil (Justesen 2000, Boskou 2006, Lopez-Lazaro 2009, Cecchi et al. 2013). Luteolin 7-O-glycosides are the most frequently occurring; for example, cynaroside or luteolin 7-O-glucone is found in artichoke (Lattanzio et al. 2009) and in aqueous infusion of dried sage leaves (Zimmermann et al. 2011).

Flavonols are the 3-hydroxy derivatives of flavones (Figure 2.1). Quercetin and kaempferol hold prominent positions among the studied flavonols, followed by myricetin. The literature has presented at least 279 and 348 different glycosidic combinations of quercetin and kaempferol, respectively (Tsao 2010). They are found in fruits as 3-O-glycosides mainly, and more rarely as 7-O-glycosides (Belitz et al. 2009). Quercetin-3-O-glucoside is found in significant amounts in the berry skin of grapes and in the wine made from them, constituting 42.6% and 39.4% of the total flavonol content, respectively (Nisco et al. 2013). Quercetin and its glycosides have also been found in dill, cress, tarragon, and in several Lamiaceae plants such as rosemary, oregano, sage, basil, and thyme (Hossain et al. 2010, Miron et al. 2011).

Flavanones contain in their molecule the basic flavone structure with the lack of double bond at C3 (Figure 2.1). This subgroup of flavonoids is mainly presented in citrus species (Ghafar et al. 2010). Hesperetin and its glycoside hesperidin (hesp-7-O-rutinoside) have been considered as the characteristic compounds of orange fruits. Naringenin and its glycosidic form, naringin, are found in the bark of grapefruit. Eriodictyol-7-O-rutinoside is one of the detected flavanones in lemon bark (Belitz et al. 2009). However, in fewer cases, the above-mentioned aglycones, alone or in combination with the same or different sugar moieties, contribute to the phenolic content of lemon balm (Melissa officinalis), wild thyme (Thymus serpyllum), and oregano (Origanum vulgare) extracts (Dastmalchi et al. 2008, Miron et al. 2011). Flavanonols or dihydroflavonols are the 3-hydroxy derivatives of flavanones. Taxifolin is a famous flavanone found in citrus fruits and fruits of Rosa canina and R. micrantha (Tsao 2010, Guimarães et al. 2013).

Two other subgroups of flavonoids, closely related to the flavone structure, are isoflavones and chalcones (Figure 2.1). Isoflavones have the B ring attached to the C3 position of the C ring, and they are found in natural sources either in free or glycosidic form. The food sources of isoflavones are mainly plants of the Leguminosae family, such as beans and soya (Tsao 2010). Studies presented daidzein, genistein,
Major Dietary Antioxidants and Their Food Sources

and their β-glucosides conjugates as being >80% of the total determined isoflavones in soya milk (Toro-Funes et al. 2014). In chalcones, rings A and B are joined together by an unsaturated carbonyl system. They play an important role in the biosynthesis of flavonoids, as chalcone is enzymatically isomerized to a flavanone intermediate where all classes of flavonoids branch out (Tsao 2010). They have an intense yellow color and are mainly present in fruits. Phloretin is a characteristic dihydrochalcone found in the free form, and in varying glycosidic structures in apples, apple pomaces, and juices (Ramirez-Ambrosi et al. 2013).

Flavanols or flavan-3-ols are noncolor flavonoids widely distributed in all common fruits, while among herbs, black and green tea are rich sources. Flavan-3-ols are also known as catechins, and they exhibit a strong antioxidant activity. Tea polyphenols are already used in the food industry as natural antioxidants (He et al. 2009). They are structurally differentiated from the other flavonoids because they do not contain carbonyl at C4, or the double bond between C2 and C3 of the C ring (Figure 2.1). The well-known flavan-3-ols are catechin, catechin gallate, gallocatechin, gallocatechin gallate, and their corresponding isomers, namely epicatechin, epicatechin gallate, epigallocatechin, and epigallocatechin gallate. In the biosynthesis of flavonoids, it is possible to form dimeric or oligomeric compounds of flavan-3-ols, which are called proanthocyanidins or condensed tannins. Proanthocyanidins are the noncolor precursors of anthocyanins, and they usually coexist with flavanols in plant tissues.

Four catechins and six catechin gallates have been identified in the fresh young shoots of tea (Camellia sinensis) grown in Australia, with epigallocatechin gallate constituting up to 116 mg/g on a dry basis (Yao et al. 2004). In aqueous extracts of Chinese green tea, the total catechin content was determined to be 93.6% (w/w) of infusions, with the catechin gallates accounting for >82% (w/w) of the tea extract (He et al. 2009). Other good sources of flavanols and proanthocyanidins are plants of the genus Cistus (Danne et al. 1993, Barrajón-Catalan et al. 2011), which nowadays are a part of several natural mixtures used as decoctions. Other food sources of flavanols are the fruits of plants from the Ericaceae and Rosaceae families, orange juice, chocolate, red wine, and beans (Boskou 2006, Guimarães et al. 2013).

The anthocyanins are a famous flavonoid group that causes the red to violet and blue color of flowers and fruits. They exist in plants as glycosides, mainly at the C3 position, and their aglycone parts, known as anthocyanidins, are produced by acid hydrolysis. The most important anthocyanidins are pelargonidin, cyanidin, and delphinidin. Especially the last two, together with their ether derivatives, peonidin, petunidin, and malvidin, are responsible for the color of grapes, red currants, morelos, cherries, and various berries such as blackberry, blueberry, and raspberry, making them a valuable source of anthocyanins (Pantelidis et al. 2007, Nisco et al. 2013, Carrieri et al. 2013). The anthocyanin contents in black and red grapes are estimated at 70% and 23% of their total phenols, respectively (Carrieri et al. 2013). Vegetables are another food source of anthocyanins. A delphinidin glycoside was found in eggplant, two pelargonidin derivatives in radish, a cyanidin derivative in red cabbage, and a cyanidin glycoside with peonidin-3-arabinoside in red onion peel (Belitz et al. 2009). Artichoke heads were found to contain several cyanidin glycosides mainly, but two peonidin and one delphinidin derivatives are also referred (Lattanzio et al. 2009).
Other Polyphenols

In food, there are also other polyphenols, besides the simple phenols, phenolic acids, and flavonoids, that are of great biological interest.

Resveratrol (trans-3',4',5'-trihydroxystilbene) belongs to the stilbenes, and is a natural antioxidant mainly found in berries, leaves, and canes of grapes, as well as in red wine and lesser in white wines. Hydrolyzable tannins are another group of polyphenols found mainly in the wood and bark of oak and chestnut tree. They are divided into simple hydrolyzable tannins, which are esters of gallic acid or its glycosides or its esters with glucose, and ellagitannins, which contain in their structure a glycoside of glucose and ellagic acid (a gallic acid dimer) (Figure 2.1). Ellagitannins have been found in aqueous extracts of many Cistus species of the subgenus Leucocistus and Halimioides in quantities ranging from 0.63 to 15.79 mg/mL; however, they are mostly absent from plants of the subgenus Cistus (Barrajón-Catalan et al. 2011). Punicalin, punicalagin, and punicalagin gallate are common ellagitannins found in Cistus salvifolius, C. ladanifer, and C. monspeliensis. It is believed that they contribute substantially to the antioxidant properties of the crude aqueous leaf extracts of Cistus spp. (Saracini et al. 2005, Barrajón-Catalan et al. 2011).

Lignans are phytoestrogens present in seeds, cereals, legumes, fruits, and vegetables. Their consumption is believed to have positive effects on human health (Gerstenmeyer et al. 2013). Sesame and flax seeds are good sources of lignans, which are also found in rye grains and rye products in lesser amounts. Secoisolariciresinol and its diglycoside isolariciresinol; lariciresinol and its monoglycoside 7-hydroxyma-
tairesinol; syringaresinol; pinoresinol with mono-, di-, and triglycosides; sesaminol with di- and triglucosides; and sesamolinol and its diglucoside have been detected in the extracts of the above-mentioned sources (Gerstenmeyer et al. 2013). Sesame seeds and oil also contain sesamin and sesamolin, which are considered antioxidant compounds (Rangkadilok et al. 2010). The sesamin and sesamolin contents in sesame range between 0 and 7.23 mg/g seed and between 0 and 2.25 mg/g seed, respectively, strongly depending on of the sesame type and origin (Rangkadilok et al. 2010).

Carotenoids

Carotenoids are a group of tetraterpenes widely distributed in nature, giving fruits and vegetables from a light yellow to a dark red color. They are divided into carotenoids, which are unsaturated hydrocarbons, and to xanthophylls, which are their oxygenated derivatives. Typical representatives of this group are β-carotene, α-carotene, lycopene, zeaxanthin, and lutein (Figure 2.2). Carotenoids are the precursors of vitamin A. Food sources of carotenoids are fruits like citrus, peaches, apricots, watermelon, and melon, and vegetables including all yellow ones, corn, carrots, tomatoes, red pepper, etc. Carotenoids constitute the major pigment in carrots. Apocarotenoids are natural polyenes with a shortened carbon skeleton structurally related to carotenoids. Such apocarotenoids are present in the red dark stigmas of Crocus sativus flowers, whose dried form is the famous and expensive spice saffron, and are known as crocins. Crocins are very water-soluble colorings, mainly found as all-trans- and 13-cis-glycosyl esters of crocetin (Tarantilis et al. 1995). Crocins are mainly composed of digentiobiosyl crocetin (Figure 2.2). Saffron, especially in powder form, is
Major Dietary Antioxidants and Their Food Sources

often confused and adulterated with curcumin, which is a diphenylheptanoid compound extracted from turmeric rhizome and used in the food industry as a coloring with strong antioxidant properties (Figure 2.1). The antioxidant potential of carotenoids has been reported in the literature and may play an important role in human health, protecting cells and tissues from the damaging effects of free radicals and

![Molecular structures of characteristic essential oil compounds, carotenoids, and α-tocopherol found in natural food sources.](image)

**Figure 2.2** Molecular structures of characteristic essential oil compounds, carotenoids, and α-tocopherol found in natural food sources.
singlet oxygen. β-Carotene can act as an antioxidant or as prooxidant, depending on both its concentration and the low or high concentration of oxygen (Lee et al. 2004). By studying the in vitro antioxidant activity of crocins with the 2,2-diphenyl-1-picrylhydrazyl (DPPH) test, a correlation with the crocin concentration was observed—crocins showed an IC$_{50}$ value of 44 ± 1 μg/mL; at a concentration of >50 μg/mL, the antioxidant activity started to decrease (Kanakis et al. 2009).

**Essential Oils**

Essential oils (EO) are natural mixtures of volatile compounds that belong principally to the terpenes group and found in a special category of plants called aromatic plants. A great variability of monoterpenes and sesquiterpenes constitute the EO composition of plants of different families, such as Lamiaceae, Asteraceae, Apiaceae, Verbenaceae, and Cistaceae, whose aerial parts are used as herbs and spices, or consumed in their fresh form as vegetables (Daferera et al. 2002, Candan et al. 2003, Güllüce et al. 2003, Petropoulos et al. 2004). Thymol and carvacrol, primarily, γ-terpinene and p-cymene secondarily, are basic EO compounds in oregano, thyme, marjoram, dittany, and savory. Limonene is a common monoterpenic predominantly found in the peel of citrus fruits, and also present in lemongrass EO. α-Pinene is one of the main components in the EO of rosemary, mountain tea, and sage (Alijannis et al. 2001). β-Phellandrene is a basic compound in the EO of parsley and dill leaves. Eucalyptol and camphor are characteristic compounds in sage, rosemary, and *Achillea*. Pulegone predominates in the EO composition of pennyroyal. Monoterpene alcohols such as α-terpineol, terpinen-4-ol, and borneol are found in *Achillea*, marjoram, and rosemary. Neral and geranial are the principal components of lemongrass EO. Farnesene and chamazulene are parts of the EO composition of chamomile.

Phenylpropanoid derivatives, such as cinnamaldehyde, eugenol, and myristicin, frequently constitute the EO composition. Cinnamaldehyde is the predominant cinnamon EO compound; eugenol is found in clove and basil oil; and myristicin is a characteristic compound in parsley EO (Petropoulos et al. 2004). In some cases, the volatile compounds are the thermal degradation products of carotenoids. For example, safranal and isophorone are considered such compounds, and are the principal EO compounds in saffron spice (Tarantilis and Polissiou 1997). Organosulfur compounds are common among the *Allium* species. Garlic oil consists of diallyl sulfides, methyl allyl sulfides, and vinyl dithiins, in quantities that vary according to the extraction technique, extraction temperature, and the solvent used for their isolation (Kimbaris et al. 2006). The bioactive properties of garlic oil are attributed to its acyclic sulfur compounds (Figure 2.2).

**Distribution of Natural Antioxidants in Selected Food Sources**

**Fruits**

Fruits are very good sources of various phenolic compounds and carotenoids (Belitz et al. 2009). The content of carotenoids among different fruits varies widely, from
0.3 mg/kg of fresh weight (fw) in pears to 27 mg/kg (fw) in peaches (Belitz et al. 2009). Oranges, pears, peaches, and sweet melons contain relatively high amounts of β-carotene, cryptoxanthin, and zeaxanthin. Peaches are also rich in lycopene, phytoene, phytofluene, and ζ-carotene. Moreover, in the carotenoid composition of oranges, the epoxy carotenoids are found in significant amounts. Fruits like pineapples, bananas, figs, and grapes are poor in β-carotene, lutein, and neoxanthine (Belitz et al. 2009).

The total phenol content in fruits shows fluctuations. Apples and grapes contain 0.1–1.0 g/100 g (fw), plums contain 0.2–1.4 g/100 g (fw), whereas peaches contain 0.03–0.14 g/100 g (fw). Cinnamic acid derivatives are the most popular phenolic compounds in fruits, mainly found as esters of p-coumaric, ferulic, and caffeic acids with quinic acid and often with d-glucose. Chlorogenic acid (syn. 5-cafeoylquinic acid) is the predominant compound in apples and pears. The major cinnamic acid derivatives found in cherries, morellos, plums, peaches, and apricots are neochlorogenic (syn. 3-cafeoylquinic) and chlorogenic acids. Cherries and morellos also contain 3-p-coumaroylquinic acid in significant amounts. In the case of strawberries and various types of berries such as blackberries, a diversity of cinnamic acid derivatives exist. Chlorogenic acid is the major one in blackberries, while the most commonly occurring, regardless of its quantity, is p-coumaroylglycerol. Benzoic acid derivatives are found in strawberries, grapes, and citrus fruits. Salicylic acid is the most widespread, followed by gentisic acid. In strawberries, p-hydroxybenzoic, gallic, ellagic, protocatechuic, and vanillic acids are also found. The content of phenolic acids in fruits depends of the fruit variety, degree of maturation, and storage period.

L-Ascorbic acid (a form of vitamin C) also exists in fruits, influencing their total antioxidant capacity. Small fruits of various blackberries, raspberries, gooseberries, red currants, and cherries contain variable amounts of phenols, among them anthocyanins. The anthocyanin content ranged from 1.3 to 223.0 mg cyanidin-3-glucoside equivalents per 100 g (fw), and the total phenol content from 657 to 2611 mg gallic acid equivalents per 100 g dry weight (dw) (Pantelidis et al. 2007). The largest amount of anthocyanins was found in a native Cornelian cherry population with red color, while the highest total phenol content was found in a raspberry × blackberry cultivar (sunberry). The anthocyanin content in three sweet cherry varieties was estimated to be between 2 and 24 mg cyanidin-3-O-rutinoside equivalent/100 g (Pappas et al. 2011). The ascorbic acid content in such fruits ranged from 14 to 103 mg/100 g (fw); however, it was negatively correlated with ferric reducing antioxidant power (FRAP) values, leading the authors to hypothesize that no direct correlation can be established between ascorbic acid content and total antioxidant capacity (Pantelidis et al. 2007). Literature reports show that ascorbic acid can act as an antioxidant or prooxidant depending on certain conditions (Lee et al. 2004). The major anthocyanins found in common fruits such as apples, pears, peaches, plums, figs, oranges, morellos, cherries, and blackberries are glycosides of cyanidin; those in strawberries are glycosides of pelargonin, and those in bananas are glycosides of petunidin (Belitz et al. 2009). Cyanidin 3-O-glucoside and cyanidin 3-O-rutinoside are predominant compounds in plums, sweet cherries (Prunus avium L.), and blackberries, although variations among different varieties were observed. The above-mentioned common fruits also contain flavonols and flavan-3-ols, with major representatives being quercetin 3-O-glucoside and epicatechin, respectively.
# TABLE 2.1
## Distribution of Natural Antioxidants in Selected Food Sources

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Food Source</th>
<th>Natural Antioxidant Group</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Fruits and Fruit Products</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pears, peaches</td>
<td>Carotenoids, phenolic acids, flavonols, flavanols</td>
<td>Belitz et al. 2009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apricots</td>
<td>Phenolic acids, flavonols, flavanols</td>
<td>Belitz et al. 2009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cherries</td>
<td>Anthocyanins, flavanols, phenolic acids, flavonols</td>
<td>Belitz et al. 2009, Pappas et al. 2011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blackberries, raspberries, gooseberries, red currant</td>
<td>Anthocyanins, phenols</td>
<td>Pantelidis et al. 2007</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strawberry tree</td>
<td>Anthocyanins, flavanols, flavonols, galloyl derivatives, proanthocyanidins</td>
<td>Guimarães et al. 2013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blackthorn</td>
<td>Phenolic acids, flavones, flavonols, anthocyanins</td>
<td>Guimarães et al. 2013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wild roses, dog roses</td>
<td>Flavononols, flavanones, anthocyanins, flavanols, flavonols, proanthocyanidins</td>
<td>Guimarães et al. 2013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Apples, cider apples, pomace, juice</td>
<td>Anthocyanins, proanthocyanidins, phenolic acids, dihydrochalkones, flavonols, flavanols</td>
<td>Ramirez-Ambrosi et al. 2013, Belitz et al. 2009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Citrus, citrus juice</td>
<td>Flavanones, carotenoids</td>
<td>Ghafar et al. 2009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mandarin peel</td>
<td>Polymethoxylated flavones, flavanones, chalcones</td>
<td>Zhang et al. 2012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grapes</td>
<td>Anthocyanins, phenolic acids, stilbenes, flavonols, flavanols, proanthocyanidin</td>
<td>Teixeira et al. 2013, Nisco et al. 2013, Carrieri et al. 2013, Cantos et al. 2002</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Olive oil</td>
<td>Phenolic alcohols, phenolic acids, secoiridoids, lignans, flavones, flavonols, anthocyanins, carotenoids, tocopherols</td>
<td>Tripoli et al. 2005, Boskou 2006, Christophoridou and Dais 2009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Seeds</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sesame, flax, rye grains</td>
<td>Lignans</td>
<td>Gerstenmeyer et al. 2013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Vegetables</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Artichoke</td>
<td>Cinnamic acid derivatives, flavones, flavanones, flavonols, anthocyanins</td>
<td>Lattanzio et al. 2009, Palermo et al. 2013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eggplant, red cabbage, radish, red onion</td>
<td>Anthocyanins</td>
<td>Belitz et al. 2009</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spinach</td>
<td>Flavonoids, p-coumaric acid</td>
<td>Boskou 2006</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dill</td>
<td>Essential oil, flavonols</td>
<td>Justesen 2000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parsley</td>
<td>Essential oil, flavones</td>
<td>Petropoulos et al. 2004, Justesen 2000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
Major Dietary Antioxidants and Their Food Sources

TABLE 2.1 (CONTINUED)
Distribution of Natural Antioxidants in Selected Food Sources

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Food Source</th>
<th>Natural Antioxidant Group</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Herbs</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oregano, sage, rosemary</td>
<td>Essential oils, phenolic acids, flavones, flavonols, phenolic triterpenes</td>
<td>Miron et al. 2011, Zimmermann et al. 2011, Hossain et al. 2010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thyme, basil</td>
<td>Essential oils, phenolic acids, flavones, flavonols</td>
<td>Hossain et al. 2010</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lemon balm</td>
<td>Essential oil, phenolic acids, flavones, flavonanes</td>
<td>Dastmalchi et al. 2008</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tarragon</td>
<td>Phenolic acids, caftaric acid, flavonols</td>
<td>Miron et al. 2011</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Herbal Infusions</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oregano, pennyroyal</td>
<td>Flavanols, essential oil compounds, phenolic acids, triterpenic acids</td>
<td>Kogiannou et al. 2013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marjoram, savory, mountain tea, chamomile</td>
<td>Flavanols, essential oil compounds, phenolic acids</td>
<td>Kogiannou et al. 2013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cistus</td>
<td>Flavanols, proanthocyanidins, ellagitannins</td>
<td>Barrajón-Catalan et al. 2011, Danne et al. 1993, Saracini et al. 2005</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Strawberry tree (Arbutus unedo), blackthorn (Prunus spinosa), dog rose (Rosa canina), and wild rose (Rosa micrantha) fruits, consumed fresh or as jams, liqueurs, or decoctions, are good sources of phenolic acids and flavonoids (Guimarães et al. 2013) (Table 2.1). Blackthorn fruits presented the highest amounts of anthocyanins (100.40 mg/100 g), flavones/flavonols (57.48 mg/100 g), and phenolic acids (29.78 mg/100 g) compared with strawberry tree and wild roses. Strawberry tree contained the largest quantity of flavan-3-ol (36.30 mg/100 g), followed by wild rose (32.62 mg/100 g) and dog rose (19.90 mg/100 g), while it was not detected in blackthorn. Among the identified phenolic acids, 3-O-cafeoylquinic acid was the most abundant, quercetin 3-O-rutinoside was the most detected flavonol, and (+)-catechin was the predominant flavan-3-ol. Cyanidin 3-O-glucoside was detected in all samples to be the major anthocyanin, with the exception of blackthorn where cyanidin 3-O-rutinoside and peonidin 3-O-rutinoside predominated.

Nowadays, modern analytical techniques are applied in food analysis, which allows the identification of more compounds not previously reported. Nineteen new compounds were characterized in the case of cider apples (two flavonols, four dihydrochalcones, nine hydroxycinnamic acids, and four flavonols), while in apple pomace and juice, five new compounds were identified (two dihydrochalcones and three flavonols) (Ramirez-Ambrosi et al. 2013).

The flavonoid composition of citrus fruits is characterized by the presence of flavanones, which naturally occur in glycosidic form and are responsible for the bitter
taste in those fruits. The intensity of the bitterness depends on the type of substitu-
ents in the basic aglycone part of the glycosides. Hesperdin is the characteris-
tic flavanone of sweet oranges, also found in lemon peel, which has a neutral taste. The
bitter taste of some orange cultivars is attributed to the compound neohesperidin.
Naringin is the bitter compound of grapefruits (Belitz et al. 2009). Mandarin peel
was found to contain polymethoxylated flavones, flavanones, and chalcones. It was
mentioned that polymethoxylated flavonoids have high oral bioavailability, show-
ing, among others, antioxidant activity (Zhang et al. 2012). Citrus juices are a good
source of phenolic compounds whose quantity range between 105 and 490 mg of
gallic acid equivalent/100 mL juice, depending on the citrus species. Their flavonoid
content in different lime species and in oranges was determined to be from 2.99 to
22.25 mg of hesperidin equivalent/100 mL juice (Ghafar et al. 2010).

Grapes and Wine

Table and wine grapes are a special category of fruits constituting a major source
of phenolic compounds. Phenolics in grapes are responsible for the color, flavor,
and stringency of wine, contributing to its antioxidant properties. Phenolics in table
and wine grape cultivars present qualitative similarities; however, quantitative dif-
fferences were observed. The anthocyanin content in grapes fluctuates depending on
the cultivar. In four red table cultivars, it was estimated to be from 69 to 151 mg/kg
(fw) (Cantos et al. 2002). The berry skin and wine of the grape cultivar Vitis vinifera
L. (cv. Aglianico), grown in southern Italy, was characterized to be a valuable source
of anthocyanins, with an amount of 9996.1 mg/kg (fw) and 716.3 mg/L, respectively
(Nisco et al. 2013). Malvidin and petunidin glycosides constitute the majority of the
anthocyanin composition, with malvidin-3-glucoside being the predominant com-
-pound (Nisco et al. 2013). In three black table grapes, malvidin was found to be the
predominant anthocyanin, while in four red ones petunidin was distinguished to
be predominant (Carrieri et al. 2013). The major anthocyanin in red table grapes is
peonidin-3-glucoside, while in wine grapes it was reported to be malvidin-3-gluco-

Red grape cultivars contain higher amounts of phenolic compounds relative to
white grapes, owing to the presence of anthocyanins in their composition (Cantos et
al. 2002). However, the average total phenolic content in black, red, and white table
grapes was determined to be 297 ± 70, 138 ± 15, and 196 ± 103 mg/kg (fw), respec-
tively, indicating that, in the some white cultivars, exceptions exist (Carrieri et al.
2013). The relatively high amount of total phenolics in some white grape cultivars was
attributed to the presence of flavonols and flavan-3-ols, occurring in higher quanti-
ties and contributing to the higher percentages to the total phenolic content (Cantos
et al. 2002, Carrieri et al. 2013). Quercetin 3-glucuronide, quercetin 3-glucoside, and
quercetin 3-rutinoside have been determined as the main flavonols in all table grapes
(Cantos et al. 2002). Studies on the relation between antithrombotic activity and the
polyphenolic profile of 12 table grapes showed that quercetin and cyanidin displayed
a positive correlation, suggesting that the greater their concentration, the stronger
the inhibition of tissue factor synthesis (Carrieri et al. 2013). Cinnamic acid deriva-
tives were also found in grapes, constituting about 4–13% of the total phenol content.
Caffeoyltartaric acid and \( p \)-coumaroyltartaric acid are the most common (Cantos et al. 2002). The \textit{trans}- and \textit{cis}-isomers of resveratrol are both present in grapes, although the \textit{trans}-isomers exist in larger quantities. In berry skin and wine from the Aglianico cultivar, \textit{trans}-resveratrol was determined at 444.41 mg/kg (fw) and 3.79 mg/L respectively, while the corresponding detected levels for the \textit{cis}-isomer was 2.7% and 1.8% lower (Nisco et al. 2013). Resveratrol is present in the skin and seeds of berry grapes but not in the flesh (Teixeira et al. 2013). The groups of phenolic compounds and their distribution in tissues of mature grape berry are presented in Table 2.1.

**Vegetables**

Vegetables are consumed by humans daily as fresh, cooked, or processed (e.g., canned). As with other food sources, their contents of natural, possible antioxidant compounds vary both qualitatively and quantitatively. Besides fruits, vegetables are also rich sources of phenolic compounds, mainly benzoic and cinnamic acid derivatives, flavones, and flavanols. Vegetables with red, violet, and blue color also contain anthocyanins. Eggplant has a delphinidin glycoside; radish contains two pelargonidin glycosides; red cabbage has a cyanidin derivative; and onions with red peel contain cyanidin and a peonidin glycoside in its anthocyanin composition (Belitz et al. 2009). Some plant species are considered vegetables, despite their content of EO or other volatile compounds, such as parsley, dill, onion, and garlic. \( \alpha \)-Phellandrene is the main component of dill leaves EO. In aqueous methanol extract of dill, the flavonols isorhamnetin, kaempferol, and quercetin were detected as glucuronyl conjugates. Quercetin–rhamnoglucoside was also detected as a minor component of dill (Justesen 2000). \( \beta \)-Phellandrene was determined as the predominant compound in the EO composition of three types of parsley, namely plain, curly, and turnip-rooted. Fluctuations were observed in the relative percentages of their EO compounds, strongly depending on the sowing date, growth stage, and plant part (Petropoulos et al. 2004). Myristicin was present in notable percentages in all types of parsley; however, the highest values were observed in curly parsley. The aqueous methanol extract of parsley was found to contain a flavone fraction, consisting of apigenin-7-apiosyglucoside (apin), apigenin-acetyl-apiosylglucoside, diosmetin-apiosylglucoside, and diosmetin-acetyl-apioglucoside (Justesen 2000).

\textit{Alliin} (\( S \)-allyl-L-cysteine sulfoxide) is considered the precursor of the aromatic compounds of onion and garlic, and is present in fresh tissues. When garlic is chopped or crushed, the enzyme allinase is activated and acts on alliin, producing allicin (diallyl thiosulfinate). Under certain conditions, allicin is converted directly to acyclic sulfur compounds or, via thioacrolein, produces vinyl dithiins isomers, which can further decompose to acyclic sulfides with heating. Garlic EO consists mainly of acyclic polysulfides and vinyl dithiin isomers (Figure 2.2). These two groups have different properties, and their content in garlic EO is related to the applied temperature during the isolation process, as well as the time that affects the heating. Thus, the relative percentage of polysulfides decreased from 77.4% to 8.7%, whereas that of vinyl dithiin isomers increased from 4.7% to 70.8%, when the isolation techniques changed from harsh thermal (simultaneous distillation extraction, 2 h) to short time thermal (microwave-assisted hydrodistillation extraction, 30 min) and room temperature isolation (ultrasound-assisted extraction) (Kimbaris et al. 2006).
Among other vegetables, reference will be made to artichoke (*Cynara cardunculus* subsp. *solymus*), a native plant in Mediterranean countries that contains large amounts of polyphenols with high antioxidant activity and display high bioavailability (Lattanzio et al. 2009). The edible part of artichoke is the immature inflorescence, called head; however, its by-products, leaves, external bracts, and stems, also contain bioactive polyphenols and could be used as an antioxidant source. The total phenol content in artichoke heads, external bracts, and leaves was determined to be 2.32, 1.67, and 1.01 g gallic acid equivalent per 100 g of dry weight, respectively (Palermo et al. 2013). The principal phenolic group found in artichoke heads and leaves are the phenolic acids. There is a wide range of caffeoylquinic derivatives, with chlorogenic acid (5-O-caffeoylquinic acid) being the most abundant. In artichoke extracts, cryptochlorogenic (4-O-caffeoylquinic acid), neochlorogenic (3-O-caffeoylquinic acid), 1-O-caffeoylquinic, 1,3-O-dicaffeoylquinic (cynarin), 3,4-O-dicaffeoylquinic, 1,5-O-dicaffeoylquinic, and many other dicaffeoylquinin acids are also found. Their content in artichoke tissues is related to the physiological stage of the tissue, ranging from 8% (dw) in young to 1% (dw) in senescent tissues (Lattanzio et al. 2009). Flavonoids represent <10% of the total phenol content in artichoke. Luteolin and apigenin are the major flavones, found both as 7-O-glucoside and 7-O-rutinoside. Luteolin-7-O-glucoside is also known as cynaroside. Recent studies also report the presence of flavanones, mainly found as naringenin and eriodictyol glycosides, and flavonols that are represented by many quercetin and two myricetin glycosides (Palermo et al. 2013). Anthocyanins are present only in artichoke heads and consist of cyanidin, peonidin, and delphinidin glycosides. The most abundant are the cyanidin glycosides with the cyanidin 3,5-diglucoside and cyanidin 3-O-β-glucoside being among the principal ones (Lattanzio et al. 2009). The cooking method is one factor that affects the total phenol content and the percentage composition of the various phenolic compounds. Compared with the raw material, cooked artichoke contained reduced relative percentages of chlorogenic acid but increased percentages of cryptochloregenic acid and 4,5-O-dicaffeoylquinic acid, while steamed artichoke showed a higher phenolic content than the microwaved ones (Palermo et al. 2013). The antioxidative activity of artichoke extracts is related to its total phenol content, and probably to cynarin and caffeic acid, as they both present antioxidative properties. These compounds coexist in artichoke extracts with other bioactive compounds such as luteolin and cynaroside, indicating a possible additive or synergistic effect (Lattanzio et al. 2009).

**Herbs**

Herbs are used in food as flavorings and spices, but also for making various decoctions such as sage, chamomile, mountain tea, black and green tea, etc. The flora of the Mediterranean region includes many aromatic taxa, most of them endemic. Traditionally, people living in this region have introduced these herbs into their daily diet.

Herbs contain a variable amount of EO, which is constituted by numerous compounds in different qualitative and quantitative combinations (Aligiannis et al. 2001, Daferera et al. 2002, Güllüce et al. 2003, Candan et al. 2003, Petropoulos et al. 2004,
Eucalyptol, camphor, and α-terpineol are the major components in *Achillea millefolium* EO (oil yield 0.6% v/w), as well as in many other *Achillea* species (Candan et al. 2003). Bisabolol oxides are also found in considerable percentages (total 7.1%) in *Achillea* EO. The EO of *A. millefolium* displayed a strong antioxidant effect on the *in vitro* free radical (IC$_{50}$ = 1.56 μg/mL in DPPH, IC$_{50}$ = 2.70 μg/mL in hydroxyl), and lipid peroxidation generation (IC$_{50}$ = 13.50 μg/mL), compared with the corresponding values of ascorbic acid, curcumin, and butylated hydroxy toluene (BHT) (Candan et al. 2003). α-Pinene, eucalyptol, camphor, camphene, and borneol are found as basic compounds in *Salvia cryptantha* and *S. multicaulis* plants (oil yield 0.37–0.42% v/w). The EO of both *Salvia* species had greater antioxidant activity relative to the controls in DPPH and hydroxyl radicals, while their methanolic extracts were efficient only in the DPPH test (Tepe et al. 2004).

Carvacrol, thymol, γ-terpinene, and *p*-cymene are characteristic compounds of many *Origanum*, *Thymus*, and *Satureja* species (Daferera et al. 2002, Güllüce et al. 2003). *Satureja hortensis* (savory) EO displayed a lesser ability to act as a donor for hydrogen atom or electron (IC$_{50}$ = 350 μg/mL) compared with the water subfraction of the methanol extract (IC$_{50}$ = 30.89 μg/mL) in the DPPH test, although it inhibited 95% of the linoleic acid oxidation. The methanol extract of *S. hortensis* callus culture also showed a strong effect in the DPPH test (IC$_{50}$ = 23.76 μg/mL) and it was comparable to the BHT effect (IC$_{50}$ = 19.8 μg/mL) (Güllüce et al. 2003). The strong antioxidant capacity of the water/methanol extracts of *S. hortensis* can be attributed to the presence of phenolic acids, mainly rosmarinic acid, which are widespread in plants of the Lamiaceae family. Moreover, the rosmarinic acid content of 11 Lamiaceae samples of lemon balm (*M. officinalis*), sage (*Salvia officinalis*), oregano (*O. vulgare* ssp. *hirtum*), rosemary (*Rosemary officinalis*), basil (*Ocimum basilicum*), thyme (*Thymys vulgaris*), hyssop (*Hyssopus officinalis*), and savory, was determined. The rosmarinic acid content fluctuated from 81 ± 4 mg/g (in lemon balm) to 12 ± 3 mg/g (in hyssop) of dried plant material, while its quantity in savory was estimated at 56 ± 6 mg/g (dw) (Saltas et al. 2013).

Aqueous methanol extracts of rosemary, sage, oregano, basil, and thyme included various phenolic compounds belonging to the phenolic acids, flavones, phenolic terpenes, and flavonols (Hossain et al. 2010). A variety of phenolic acids was observed in all samples, among them gallic, caffeic, syringic, vanillic, protocatechuic, chlorogenic, *p*-coumaric, and rosmarinic acids. Luteolin and apigenin (in free or glycosidic form), quercetin, and quercetin-3-*O*-hexoside were also present. Carnosol and carnosic acid were present in oregano, rosemary, and sage extracts. Similar qualitative results have been observed in the aqueous and aqueous/ethanol extracts of Romanian oregano and wild thyme (*T. serpyllum*), apart from the phenolic triterpenes (Miron et al. 2011). Oregano water extract presented high content of total phenols (184.9 mg gallic acid eq./g, dw) showing important antioxidant activity (EC$_{50}$ = 6.98 μg/mL) (Miron et al. 2011). The corresponding extracts of tarragon (*Artemisia dracunculus*) was found to contain 3-*O*-caffeoylquinic acid (neochlorogenic), 4-*O*-caffeoylquinic acid (cryptochlorogenic), caftaric acid, various *dicafeoylquinic* acid isomers, isorhamnetin, and quercetin (Miron et al. 2011). The aqueous ethanol extract of lemon balm leaves (*M. officinalis*) contain a phenolic fraction estimated at 268.9 ± 21.3 mg gallic acid eq./g (dw), which contained rosmarinic acid, caffeic
acid, m-coumaric acid, eriodictyol-7-O-glucoside, naringin, naringenin, hespiridin, and hesperetin (Dastmalchi et al. 2008). Rosmarinic acid was the major constituent and was quantified at 96.45 ± 0.13 mg/g (dw). Lemon balm extracts possess strong antioxidant activity that can be explained by its phenolic composition (Dastmalchi et al. 2008). In the literature, qualitative and quantitative differences may be observed in the phenolic profile of the same herbs owing to the differences in plant origin, isolation method, extracting solvent system, and analytical technique (Kivilompolo et al. 2007, Dastmalchi et al. 2008, Miron et al. 2011).

The antioxidant properties, by the oxidation of trans-2-hexenal into the corresponding carboxylic acid, of 14 individual EOs from black and white pepper (Piper nigrum L.), cardamom (Elettaria cardamomum L.), nutmeg (Myristica fragrans Houtt.), mace (Myristica fragrans Houtt), juniper berry (Juniperus communis L.), fennel seed (Foeniculum vulgare Mill., var. dulce Thelling), caraway (Carum carvi L.), dry cinnamon leaves (Cinnamomum zeylanicum BL), marjoram (Origanum majorana L.), laurel (Laurus nobilis L.), ginger (Zingiber officinalis L.), garlic (Allium sativum L.), and clove bud (Caryophyllus aromaticus L.) have been examined (Misharina et al. 2009). The EOs of garlic, clove bud, ginger, and leaves of cinnamon showed maximal efficiency, inhibiting hexenal oxidation at 80–93%, while black pepper oil showed minimal efficiency (49%). Garlic oil was the most effective. The antioxidant activity of an EO is attributed mainly to its major components; however, the synergistic or antagonistic effect of one compound present in the mixture in a minor percentage is also considered (Misharina et al. 2009, Amorati et al. 2013).

The total phenol contents in infusions of some Greek herbs, namely oregano (O. vulgare), Cretan marjoram (O. microphyllum), pink savory (Satureja thymbra), mountain tea (Sideritis syriaca), pennyroyal (Mentha pulegium), and chamomile (Matricaria chamomilla), have been determined (Kogiannou et al. 2013). The concentration of the total phenols in the herbal infusions was determined at high levels, ranging from 30.9 to 109.1 mg gallic acid equivalent per cup (200 mL). The flavanol content, also measured in these infusions, ranged between 8.3 and 40.0 mg rutin per cup. Oregano infusion was the most abundant both in total phenol and flavanol content, followed by pink savory. Pennyroyal infusion contains a high amount of phenols (82.9 mg gallic acid equivalent per cup); however, its flavanol content was estimated at only 13.2 mg/cup. On the contrary, the flavanol content in chamomile infusion (25.2 mg/cup) was high, >50% of the total phenol content (46.4 mg gallic acid equivalent per cup). The antioxidant capacity of the herbal infusion measured by the DPPH and FRAP methods showed the following sequence: oregano > pennyroyal > pink savory > chamomile > mountain tea and Cretan marjoram. The highest antioxidant activity of oregano infusion is attributed to its carvacrol, thymol, and caffeic acid contents. Carvacrol was detected in all herbal infusions, although higher amounts were measured in oregano. The herbal infusions were also rich in phenolic acids displaying a varied qualitative profile (Kogiannou et al. 2013). Protocatechic acid was the major one in oregano, mountain tea, and chamomile infusions. Syringic acid was primarily found in pink savory and Cretan marjoram infusions, while vanillic acid was the basic content in pennyroyal infusion. Among the detected cinnamic acid derivatives, caffeic acid was predominant in all cases, ranging from 73.57 μg/cup in mountain tea to 895.19 μg/cup in oregano infusion. Catechin and epicatechin were found in all herbal infusions, while
kaempferol, quercetin, genistein, and naringenin were detected in specified plant cases (Kogiannou et al. 2013). Ursolic acid, a triterpenic acid, was quantified in the oregano and pennyroyal infusions, and it positively correlated with antiradical activity and FRAP, indicating that the antioxidant activity of herbal infusions can also be attributed to the presence of nonphenolic compounds (Kogiannou et al. 2013).

Another study on herbal infusions used 70 commercial medicinal plants from a local market, and their total phenol content correlated with the antioxidant capacity of the infusions (Katalinic et al. 2006). The total phenol concentration in all plant infusions varied between 9.0 and 2218.0 mg catechin equivalents (CE) per liter of infusion. The total phenol content for Thymi herba, Serpylli herba, *Mentha piperita* folium, *S. officinalis* folium, Basilici herba, Hyperici herba, Majoranae folium, *Tiliae officinalis* flos, Satureja herba, Chamomillae flos, Lauri folium, and Rormarini folium, was estimated to be between 136 and 876 mg CE/L infusion. The highest value was determined in *Melissa folium* infusion (2218.0 mg CE/L), which showed the strongest antioxidant property. In the DPPH test, *M. folium* infusion showed a similar behavior to catechin, but not as good as quercetin; however, it was more efficient as a free ABTS radical scavenger, compared with trolox and vitamin C (Katalinic et al. 2006). In infusions of different samples of dried sage leaves, rosmarinic acid and luteolin-7-O-glucoside were the predominant compounds with values ranging between 12.2 and 296 mg/L and between 37.9 and 166 mg/L, respectively. The phenolic triterpene carnosic acid was another compound found in significant amounts (9.1–32.9 mg/L). Moreover, the phenolic composition of sage infusion include caffeic acid, chlorogenic acid, salvianolic acid I and isomers, carnosol, rosmanol, apigenin glycosides, and other luteolin glycosides (Zimmermann et al. 2011).

**Olive and Olive Oil**

Table olives and virgin olive oil are valuable food for people of all countries around the Mediterranean basin. Greece, Turkey, Spain, and Italy are the most important producer countries. Phenolics are responsible for the stability of olive against oxidation and contribute to its nutritional properties, including its antioxidant effect. The polyphenol content differ among the produced olive oils, depending on the olive cultivar, geographical origin, ripening degree, extraction procedure, and storage (Tripoli et al. 2005, Cecchi et al. 2013). The major phenols found in virgin olive oil are hydroxytyrosol and oleuropein, which are responsible for its bitter and pungent taste (Tripoli et al. 2005). Other phenolics that can be found in olive oil are caffeic acid, *p*-coumaric acid, *p*-hydroxybenzoic acid, ferulic acid, cinnamic acid, 2,3-dihydroxybenzoic acid, homovanillic acid, vanillic acid, vanillin, syringic acid, apigenin, luteolin, quercetin, 1-acetoxy-pinoresinol, pinoresinol, oleuropein, ligstroside, sinapic acid, and tyrosol derivatives (Tripoli et al. 2005, Boskou 2006, Christophoridou and Dais 2009). The lignans 1-acetoxy-pinoresinol and pinoresinol are present in extra virgin olive oil (Christophoridou and Dais 2009). Tocopherols are included in the lipophilic phenolic fraction of olive oil.

Oleuropein is found in significant amounts in olive fruit and becomes reduced with the maturation of the fruit. The oleuropein content is higher in the first stages of fruit maturation, and in green cultivars compared with black ones, while the
amounts of hydroxytyrosol and tyrosol increase as the fruits ripen (Tripoli et al. 2005). Olive ripening is a crucial factor affecting the quality of the produced oil and its total phenolic content (Cecchi et al. 2013). The basic phenolic fraction in the ethanolic extracts (80%, v/v) of olive pastes of different cultivars and harvesting times was oleuropein (mean value, 139.6 ± 12.0 mg/kg on dry material [dm]) and isomers of oleuropein aglycone (sum of mean values, 667.4 mg/kg, dm), followed by verbascoside (mean value, 241.9 ± 8.9 mg/kg, dm). The hydroxytyrosol content was estimated at 35.7 ± 8.5 mg/kg, dm (Cecchi et al. 2013).

Nuclear magnetic resonance analysis of the phenolic extracts received from extra virgin olive oils using a mixture of ethanol–water (80:20, v/v) led to the qualification and quantification of hydroxytyrosol (34.03–64.37 \( \mu \)mol/100 g of oil), tyrosol (25.06–61.26 \( \mu \)mol/100 g), oleuropein, ligstroside and their aglycones (sum 22.62–61.74 \( \mu \)mol/100 g), pinocembrin (1.25–1.61 \( \mu \)mol/100 g), 1-acetoxy-pinocembrin (2.01–2.87 \( \mu \)mol/100 g), \( p \)-coumaric acid, vanillin, vanillic acid, homovanillyl alcohol, luteolin, apigenin, and syringaresinol (Christophoridou and Dais 2009). Although all examined samples showed the same qualitative pattern, quantitative differences among the individual components were observed, because of the different cultivars and locations. The largest quantitative differences were observed between olive oils of the same cultivar from the same prefecture but different locations (Christophoridou and Dais 2009).

In this chapter, the components of natural sources used in human nutrition were described. The literature reports several in vitro or in vivo biological activities, including antioxidant activity, for these compounds. The evaluation of such activities is not easy, as various components exist simultaneously and can act synergistically or antagonistically (Amorati et al. 2013). In addition, it is not necessary for a natural antioxidant to exist in high concentration in the food source to present a positive result, as each compound displays different bioavailabilities in humans (Pantelidis 2007).

REFERENCES


Cecchib, L., Migliorinib, M., Cherubinib, C., Giustib, M., Zanontib, B., Innocentib, M., Mulinaccib, N. 2013. Phenolic profiles, oil amount and sugar content during olive ripening of three typical Tuscan cultivars to detect the best harvesting time for oil production. Food Res. Int. 54: 1876–1884.


Major Dietary Antioxidants and Their Food Sources


Section II

Antioxidants in Health
3 Oxidative Stress in Pregnancy

Ung Lim Teo and Andrew Shennan

CONTENTS
Introduction .................................................................................................................. 47
Fertility ......................................................................................................................... 47
Miscarriage .................................................................................................................. 48
Preeclampsia ................................................................................................................. 48
Intrauterine Growth Restriction .................................................................................. 49
Preterm Labor ............................................................................................................... 49
Preterm Premature Rupture of Membrane ................................................................. 50
Gestational Diabetes Mellitus ..................................................................................... 50
Conclusion .................................................................................................................... 51
References .................................................................................................................... 51

INTRODUCTION
The role of antioxidants in pregnancy is promising as we move toward disease prevention rather than cure, and recent findings that oxidative stress may be linked to some maternal–fetal conditions in pregnancy has been encouraging. Studies have been carried out to investigate interventions in the pre- and periconceptual periods, as well as in the antenatal period, to prevent adverse pregnancy disorders related to oxidative stress, particularly preeclampsia because of its impact on both morbidity and mortality in both mother and fetus. Oxidative stress has also been implicated in fertility and miscarriage. This chapter reviews the most recent evidence available about the clinical potential of antioxidants in the prevention of some common and serious conditions in pregnancy.

FERTILITY
Human sperm is vulnerable to oxidative stress because of its high contents of polyunsaturated fatty acids, which leads to the destruction of its DNA strands [1]. Defective DNA strands in sperm can cause impaired fertility, abnormal embryonic development, high rates of miscarriage, and an increased risk of defects in offspring. Antioxidants have been found in the epididymis (extracellular superoxide dismutase, selenocysteine-independent glutathione peroxidase, GPx5), seminal fluid (vitamin C, uric acid, tryptophan, spermine, and taurine), and in the male reproductive tract that help
reverse the effects of oxidative stress [2]. Smoking, alcohol intake, and obesity can all increase oxidative stress and therefore deplete the antioxidant stores, causing male subfertility. A recent Cochrane review of 34 randomized controlled trials, but only involving 2876 couples, suggests that antioxidant supplements such as vitamin C and E can increase live births in male factor subfertility [3]. A large, well-designed, robust placebo-controlled clinical trial needs to be carried out to confirm these findings.

The oocyte is also prone to oxidative stress induced by reactive oxygen species (ROS), and high levels in smokers and women with increased alcohol consumption have been reported. Low levels of ROS are necessary for the induction of oocytes (meiosis I), and high levels of ROS impair oocyte maturation, ovulation, and fertilization [1].

A study has shown that older women (aged 39–45 years) have increased ROS and reduced antioxidants compared with younger women (aged 27–32 years), and therefore reduced antioxidant capacity to neutralize the amount of ROS in the follicular fluid of ovarian follicles. This could cause mitochondrial DNA changes and chromosomal aneuploidy, possibly leading to a higher risk of miscarriage and fetal anomaly, explaining this age-related morbidity [4].

Although male subfertility has been found to improve with antioxidant supplements, less robust clinical evidence is available to recommend antioxidant supplements to treat female subfertility. Antioxidant supplementation, in certain cases, can cause adverse effects in women, but usually only in very high doses [5].

MISCARRIAGE

Studies have shown an increase in placental oxygenation from 8 to 12 weeks’ gestation corresponding to placental perfusion before early miscarriage. It was also shown that markers of oxidative stress were increased in the placenta of women with early miscarriage compared with controls. Therefore, it has been hypothesized that they resulted from premature placental perfusion. Another study demonstrated an increased amount of ROS and reduced antioxidants in the peritoneal cavity of women with miscarriages. Sperm DNA damage could cause miscarriage [6]; however, studies showing potential treatment with antioxidants are very limited.

Increased natural killer cells are found in the endometrium of women with recurrent miscarriage. Natural killer cells release angiogenic factors in the endometrium, causing increased preimplantation angiogenesis. This causes abnormal placentation, early intraplacental maternal circulation, and increased oxidative stress possibly leading to miscarriages [7]. ROS (plasma lipid peroxidase, reduced glutathione [GSH], malondialdehyde [MDA]) have been found elevated while antioxidant enzymes (GPx, superoxide dismutase and catalase, vitamin E, β-carotene) are decreased in women with recurrent miscarriages [4]. However, meta-analyses of studies to date with periconceptual and early pregnancy supplementation of vitamins or antioxidants have shown no benefit in the prevention of early miscarriage [1,8].

PREECLAMPSIA

Preeclampsia is a syndrome that can occur after 20 weeks’ gestation, with multi-organ involvement characterized by new onset of hypertension (≥140/90 mm Hg),
proteinuria (≥300 mg/24 h), and symptoms such as visual disturbances, epigastric pain, or headache. The incidence of preeclampsia is around 2–7% of all pregnancies [1]. The spectrum of preeclampsia includes HELLP syndrome and eclampsia. HELLP is manifested as a deranged liver function test, breakdown of hemoglobin (hemolysis), and low platelet count. Eclampsia is described as seizure activity with hypertension that can be life-threatening to both mother and fetus. Other complications of preeclampsia include pulmonary edema, liver and renal failure, stroke, and thromboembolism. Moreover, of the women who die, many will not have a seizure; that is, eclampsia is not the inevitable endpoint of the untreated disease. Preeclampsia can also affect fetal growth in utero, causing growth restriction, low birth weight fetus, and often the need for premature birth and sometimes stillbirth. Preeclampsia, therefore, can have a devastating effect in terms of morbidity and mortality in both mother and fetus.

The mechanism of preeclampsia is unknown but is thought to occur because of defective placental implantation. After fertilization, trophoblast forms two layers called cytotrophoblast and syncytiotrophoblast. The cytotrophoblast invades the decidua and remodels the spiral arteries by breaking down the smooth muscle layer to enable low resistance blood flow to the placental bed. In preeclampsia, the spiral arteries do not break down completely, causing persistent high resistance blood flow. This causes reduced perfusion leading to hypoxia. Intermittent reperfusion of the placenta is thought to cause the release of ROS, which have been found in elevated levels in the placentas of women with preeclampsia [1]. Placental villi are also found to be less well developed in preeclamptic placenta, with fewer branches and less complex vascular loops, compared with a placenta with a normal pregnancy outcome [9].

Antioxidant supplementation during pregnancy, therefore, would theoretically be able to reduce oxidative stress in the placenta and may be able to prevent preeclampsia. Meta-analyses of 10 trials involving 6533 women found no reduction in preeclampsia, high blood pressure, or preterm birth with antioxidant supplementation [10]. Antioxidant supplementation has been reported to cause a small increase in the risk of low birth weight [1]. Therefore, routine antioxidant supplementation in pregnancy is not recommended.

INTRAUTERINE GROWTH RESTRICTION

As described in the pathogenesis of preeclampsia, abnormal placentation due to oxidative stress is thought to be the cause of intrauterine growth restriction (IUGR). Owing to reduced perfusion from defective spiral arteries, there is utero–placental insufficiency leading to restricted growth of the fetus. Raised ROS like lipid peroxides [11], MDA, and xanthine oxidase [12] with low antioxidants have been found in plasma, placenta, and umbilical cord of women with IUGR. There is little evidence that supplementation aids this process, but little research has been done.

PRETERM LABOR

Preterm labor is defined as cervical change with strong, regular uterine contractions leading to delivery before 37 weeks’ gestation. Worldwide, the rate of preterm
birth ranges between 5% and 18% of babies, but is increasing [13]. Preterm delivery, which causes significant mortality and morbidity in newborns, can be categorized into spontaneous or indicated [4]. Causes of spontaneous preterm labor include uterine overdistension, infection, cervical disease, and endocrine disorders. However, the exact mechanism and pathway leading to preterm labor is not clear. Various studies have been and still are being done to find answers, with the hope of finding treatment or prevention.

Raised oxidative stress markers like MDA and 8-hydroxydeoxyguanosine with lower antioxidant levels such as GPx, GSH, and selenium [14] are found in women with preterm labor. Activities of FKBP12 rapamycin-associated protein and glutathione S-transferase (providing defense against oxidative stress) are also reduced in women with preterm labor. Other study findings also indicate inflammation and oxidative stress with lower antioxidant levels, demonstrating a reduced capacity to counter oxidative stress as a cause of preterm labor [4]. However, a recent randomized controlled trial using vitamin C and E supplementation in low-risk pregnant women showed no significant difference in the incidence of preterm labor [11,15]. Vitamin C supplementation in pregnancy may even increase the risk of preterm labor [16].

**PRETERM PREMATURE RUPTURE OF MEMBRANE**

There are postulations that preterm premature rupture of membrane (PPROM) stems from ROS and pro-inflammatory cytokines that cause collagen remodeling [17] and the activation of collagenolytic enzymes [18,19], leading to reduced strength and integrity of the fetal membrane. *In vivo* and *in vitro* studies of vitamin C and E in the strengthening of fetal membrane showed that a combination of vitamin C and E did not prevent the weakening of the fetal membrane and, unexpectedly, vitamin C supplementation alone can cause weakening of the fetal membrane *in vitro* [17]. A controlled double-blind trial of 109 patients found that daily supplementation of 100 mg vitamin C reduced the incidence of premature rupture of membrane [20]. A larger placebo-controlled double-blinded randomized controlled trial of 697 women at risk of preeclampsia reported that supplementation of vitamin C and E at doses of 1000 mg and 400 IU, respectively, was associated with increased risk of both premature rupture of membrane (i.e., occurring at term) and PPROM [21].

A recent prospective randomized controlled study, looking at prolonging the latency period after PPROM with vitamin C and E supplementation and maternal and neonatal outcome, demonstrated that supplementation does prolong the latency period after PPROM with no significant difference in adverse maternal and neonatal outcome [22,23]. These studies are still preliminary, and routine vitamin C and E supplementation after PPROM in the general population is not currently recommended.

**GESTATIONAL DIABETES MELLITUS**

Elevated levels of ROS and low antioxidant levels are found in women with gestational diabetes mellitus, which could be related to the pathogenesis or complication
of hyperglycemia [24–27]. The placenta of women with gestational diabetes mel-
litus are found to have increased antioxidant gene expression but is less responsive
to exogenous oxidative stress compared with tissues of normal pregnant women,
possibly owing to the protective or adaptive mechanism in response to the increased
oxidative stress [28].

CONCLUSION

Oxidative stress has been implicated in many important disorders in pregnancy; how-
ever, studies to date have failed to show significant benefit in antioxidant supplemen-
tation in pregnancy. Antioxidant supplementation is, therefore, not recommended
for the prevention or treatment of disorders in pregnancy currently. However, there
is little doubt that oxidative stress is implicated in the pathophysiology of certain
disorders in pregnancy. Vitamin C and E have been most commonly used as anti-
oxidant supplements in trials to date. Further trials should look into different doses,
regimens, and other types of antioxidant supplements. More research and robust
large placebo-controlled clinical trials are needed to investigate the role of oxidative
stress in pregnancy disorders, and the safety and benefit of antioxidant supplementa-
tion in pregnancy.

REFERENCES

1. Poston, L., Igosheva, N., Mistry, H.D., Seed, P.T., Shennan, A.H., Rana, S., Karumanchi,
S.A., Chappell, L.C. Role of oxidative stress and antioxidant supplementation in preg-
2. Aitken, R.J., Koppers, A.J. Apoptosis and DNA damage in human spermatozoa. Asian J
5. Zadák, Z., Hyspler, R., Tichá, A., Hronek, M., Fikrová, P., Rathouská, J., Hrnciariková,
D., Stetina, R. Antioxidants and vitamins in clinical conditions. Physiol Res. 2009;58
Suppl 1:S13–S17.
6. Robinson, L., Gallos, I.D., Conner, S.J., Rajkhowa, M., Miller, D., Lewis, S., Kirkman-
Brown, J., Coomarasamy, A. The effect of sperm DNA fragmentation on miscarriage rates:
Epub July 12, 2012.
natural killer cells and angiogenesis in recurrent reproductive failure. Hum Reprod.
8. Rumbold, A., Middleton, P., Pan, N., Crowther, C.A. Vitamin supplementation for pre-
9. Ruder, E.H., Hartman, T.J., Blumberg, J., Goldman, M.B. Oxidative stress and antioxi-
10. Rumbold, A., Duley, L., Crowther, C.A., Haslam, R.R. Antioxidants for preventing pre-
11. Karowicz-Bielińska, A. Lipid peroxides concentration in women with intrauterine growth


4 The Role of Antioxidants in Children’s Growth and Development

Fátima Pérez de Heredia, Ligia Esperanza Díaz, Aurora Hernández, Ana María Veses, Sonia Gómez-Martínez, and Ascensión Marcos

CONTENTS

Introduction .............................................................................................................. 53
Micronutrients and Early Development ............................................................... 53
Oxidative Stress and Children’s Health ............................................................... 54
Antioxidants, Growth, and Physical Development ............................................. 56
Antioxidants and Growth .................................................................................... 56
Antioxidants in the Treatment of Deficiency Diseases ........................................ 58
Antioxidants, Asthma, and Allergies .............................................................. 59
Antioxidants and Obesity .................................................................................... 59
Antioxidants, Cognitive Function, Behavior, and Mental Development ......... 60
Antioxidants and Brain Development ............................................................... 60
Antioxidants and Behavioral/Cognitive Alterations: ADHD ......................... 61
Antioxidants in Autism Spectrum Disorders .................................................... 62
Antioxidants in Down Syndrome .................................................................. 63
Conclusions ........................................................................................................... 64
Acknowledgments ............................................................................................... 65
References ............................................................................................................. 65

INTRODUCTION

MICRONUTRIENTS AND EARLY DEVELOPMENT

The first years of life are crucial for the adequate physical, cognitive, and emotional development of children and future adults. Childhood is the life period with the highest developmental rate, and a continuous, adequate, and balanced provision of nutrients is essential to ensure optimal development and health. However, the presence of undernourishment during childhood is still a matter of great concern worldwide. Data from the United Nations Children’s Fund (UNICEF, 2006) show that one in four children are underweight and at increased risk for disease and mortality. This
is a major problem in developing countries, where access to food is limited and child malnutrition has been traditionally caused by energy and/or macronutrient (mainly protein) deficiency, leading to impaired growth and development (Figure 4.1). In recent years, however, the concern for underweight has been paralleled by another, not less important, issue: the steep rise in pediatric overweight and obesity in both industrialized and developing countries. The increase in overweight children should not mask another form of malnutrition—that which comes from an inadequate supply of nutrients in the diet. This fact can be the result of limited access to food, but also of the poorer nutritional values of current diets worldwide, promoted by the switch in dietary habits toward consumption of highly refined foods to the detriment of fresh products, the lower nutrient content of fresh foods due to modern growth and husbandry practices and long-distance transport, or the reluctance of children to eat certain foods such as fruits and vegetables (Maggini et al., 2010; Singh, 2004). The combined contributions of these factors may lead to suboptimal, if not overtly insufficient, provision of nutrients that are essential for maximum growth and development during childhood, such as vitamins and minerals. This, in turn, leads to clinical or subclinical deficiencies of not just isolated nutrients but rather a group of them (Thurlow et al., 2006), and that can be observed in children from developing countries as well as from the most industrialized ones (Maggini et al., 2010; Singh, 2004).

**Oxidative Stress and Children’s Health**

Oxidative stress results from an imbalance between the body’s production of reactive oxygen species (ROS) and the antioxidant mechanisms in place. Generation of ROS can be the result of environmental injury (toxic chemicals, air pollutants, etc.); however, it is also a normal physiological process that can be part of the defense response against pathogens and abnormal cells, or a by-product of metabolism and respiration. However, when exceeding certain levels, ROS can oxidize cellular components, mainly membrane fatty acids, genetic material, and proteins, leading to (even irreversible) cell damage and loss of function. To keep ROS levels within a healthy physiological range, the organism depends on a series of enzymes, such as glutathione peroxidase (GSH-Px), with the capacity to protect the cell from oxidative damage (Granot and Kohen, 2004). Research conducted in the last decades suggests a role for oxidative stress in growth and development disturbances in children. For example, broncho-pulmonary diseases, enterocolitis, perinatal brain damage, and neonatal hemochromatosis in newborns, or asthma, cystic fibrosis, diarrhea, and kwashiorkor in older children, have all been associated with oxidative stress (revised by Granot and Kohen, 2004).

Vitamins such as A, E, or C; minerals like zinc or selenium; and certain phytochemical compounds such as polyphenols are known to be natural antioxidants, and as such they have been suggested to have a protective effect against some of the above-mentioned diseases. In fact, it has been reported that deficiencies in antioxidant vitamins and minerals during childhood may contribute to alterations in growth and physical and mental development, as we will discuss below. In addition, recent evidence suggests that other food components with antioxidant properties
The Role of Antioxidants in Children's Growth and Development

Inadequate supply of nutrients in the diet
- Energy and/or macronutrients deficiency

Malnutrition
- Underweight
- Overweight

Impaired growth and development
- Clinical/subclinical deficiencies
- Increased prevalence of diseases

First years of life
- Development

Adequate physical cognitive, emotional, and mental development
- Maximum growth and development

Antioxidants
- Vitamins A, E, and C; zinc, selenium; polyphenols

FIGURE 4.1 Role of antioxidants in child growth and development.
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

(i.e., polyphenols), for which deficiencies have not been described (and are therefore not named nutrients), may contribute to optimal health in this period of life.

This chapter aims to provide an overview of the current knowledge on the role of antioxidants in physical and cognitive development during childhood and adolescence, looking at both classic antioxidants (vitamins, minerals) and the emerging ones (polyphenols). We will discuss their implication in development-associated pathologies, and the effectiveness of supplements based on evidence from intervention studies and trials.

ANTIOXIDANTS, GROWTH, AND PHYSICAL DEVELOPMENT

Antioxidants and Growth

The recommended daily intakes for antioxidant micronutrients for children and adolescents are shown in Table 4.1. Intakes below the recommendations are relatively common for some of them.

Micronutrient deficiency can impair growth and development in children. In pediatric populations at risk of or experiencing malnutrition, supplementation with micronutrients, not only energy and macronutrients, can improve growth outcomes (Branca and Ferrari, 2002; Goyle, 2012). For example, vitamin A deficiency has been shown to contribute to stunting (impaired growth leading to short stature) in children (Beaton et al., 1993; Kirkwood et al., 1996; Underwood, 1994). Vitamin A deficiency is one of the most frequent micronutrient deficiencies. According to data

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Vitamin A (µg/day)</th>
<th>Vitamin C (mg/day)</th>
<th>Vitamin E (mg/day)</th>
<th>Zinc (mg/day)ᵃ</th>
<th>Selenium (µg/day)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0–6 months</td>
<td>375</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>1.1–6.6</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7–12 months</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>2.7</td>
<td>0.8–8.3</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1–3 years</td>
<td>400</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>2.4–8.4</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4–5 years</td>
<td>450</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>5.0</td>
<td>3.1–10.3</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6–9 years</td>
<td>450–500</td>
<td>30–35</td>
<td>5.0–7.0</td>
<td>3.1–11.3</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10–13 years</td>
<td>600</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>7.5 (G), 10 (B)</td>
<td>4.6–15.5 (G), 5.7–19.2 (B)</td>
<td>26 (G), 34 (B)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14–19 years</td>
<td>500–600 (G), 600 (B)</td>
<td>40–45</td>
<td>7.5 (G), 10 (B)</td>
<td>3.0–15.5 (G), 4.2–19.2 (B)</td>
<td>26 (G), 34 (B)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


Note: B, boys; G, girls.

ᵃ Zinc recommendations depend on bioavailability.
from the World Health Organization (WHO) in 2005, its prevalence in regions at risk of hipovitaminosis A was estimated in 33.3% of preschool children, which translates to 190 million children worldwide (WHO, 2009). A prospective study on stunted Sudanese infants and children (6 months to 6 years of age) showed that the intake of vitamin A and carotenoids was associated with the extent of growth recovery with time, especially in the youngest children (Sedgh et al., 2000). Therefore, ensuring adequate levels of vitamin A in children is a goal to achieve.

Studies on vitamin A supplementation, however, suggest that this measure may be useful for stimulating growth only in those children with impaired growth at baseline or experiencing the specific deficiency. A study conducted in Indonesian preschool children showed that vitamin A supplementation (103,000 IU for children <2 years of age and 206,000 IU for older children, once every 4 months) could improve height and weight gain under certain conditions. For example, the effectiveness of the supplementation was influenced by age (more effective in older children) and breast-feeding (before 2 years of age, growth improvement was only observed in non-breast-fed children), but especially by nutritional status, as those children with serum retinol levels >0.35 μmol/l showed no significant height or weight gain (Hadi et al., 2000). Another study in older (4–14 years) Brazilian children, on the contrary, found no significant effect of a similar single dose of vitamin A (200,000 IU) in growth during the 6 months after the intervention (Saccardo Sarni et al., 2003). The authors assessed the dietary intake of the participants and found that a considerable percentage of them (>60%) had intakes of retinol and carotenoids far below the recommendations; as they associated this low intake with an overall insufficient consumption of fruit and vegetables, they understandably concluded that such an unbalanced diet would result in multiple micronutrient deficiencies, making a single-nutrient supplement useless (Saccardo Sarni et al., 2003).

Another antioxidant deficiency that has been related to impaired growth is that of zinc, first described in the 1960s (Prasad et al., 1963). In addition, zinc deficiency is associated with delayed puberty, skin conditions, impaired wound healing, altered immune function, and increased susceptibility to infections (Maggini et al., 2010). Interestingly, the availability of zinc in human milk is higher than in cow’s milk or infant formulae (Sandström et al., 1983), which indicates another way in which breast-feeding contributes to optimal growth in newborns during the first months of life.

Several studies have shown a benefit for zinc supplementation in improving children’s weight and height (Brown et al., 2002; Lind et al., 2004; Umeta et al., 2000), with effects being more significant in those children who were underweight or stunted (Brown et al., 2002; Perrone et al., 1999; Sayeg et al., 2000; Umeta et al., 2000). Interestingly, the work by Lind and colleagues (2004) showed that while supplementation with zinc (10 mg/day) improved growth, and supplementation with iron (10 mg/day) improved cognitive development, the combination of both minerals did not have a significant effect on either outcome compared with placebo (Lind et al., 2004), due perhaps to the interactions between the minerals at the absorptive level (Sandström, 2001). However, in the study by Perrone and colleagues (1999), the combination of zinc and iron (12.5 mg/day + 12 mg/day, respectively) was more effective for improving growth than zinc alone; even more, zinc alone was effective only in those children with higher ferritin levels (i.e., better iron status). The
different conclusions arising from Lind’s and Perrone’s studies might be perhaps explained by two important methodological differences: first, zinc and iron supplements in Perrone’s study were provided 12 h apart, which could prevent interactions at the absorptive level, while in Lind’s intervention both minerals were given together. Second, Perrone’s study specified that all children were stunted, while this characteristic was not specifically stated in Lind’s work (Lind et al., 2004; Perrone et al., 1999).

Recently, a new level has been revealed in the relationship between physical development and antioxidant levels according to the HELENA study results, where a significant association between vitamin status and cardiorespiratory and muscular fitness has been shown (Gracia-Marco et al., 2012). According to this study, after controlling for potential confounders, cardiorespiratory fitness in boys was positively associated with retinol and vitamin C serum concentrations, while muscular strength was associated with levels of retinol, carotenoids, and vitamin E. In girls, cardiorespiratory and muscular fitness were both positively correlated with carotenoid levels.

**Antioxidants in the Treatment of Deficiency Diseases**

Kwashiorkor, a typical protein-malnutrition disease, has been associated with low levels of antioxidant vitamins C, A, and E, and lower levels of GSH-Px and its cofactor selenium (Ashour et al., 1999; Fechner et al., 2001). However, despite the consistent findings linking kwashiorkor, oxidative stress, and low antioxidant (both endogenous and dietary) levels, intervention studies have not provided support for antioxidant supplementation in the treatment of the disease. Early work with vitamin E supplementation (10 mg/day) did not find any significant improvement in growth in children with kwashiorkor (Beau and Sy, 1996); later, another trial using multisupplementation (1.8/day mg riboflavin, 23 mg/day vitamin E, 55 μg/day selenium, and 300 mg/day N-acetylcysteine for 20 weeks) again found no significant increases in weight gain or height, or amelioration of disease-related symptoms (edema, diarrhea, or fever) when compared with placebo (Ciliberto et al., 2005). More recently, a systematic review of trials involving supplementation with riboflavin, vitamin E, selenium, and cysteine isolated or in combination demonstrated the lack of a significant difference in the prevalence of kwashiorkor or its associated mortality (Odigwe et al., 2010).

Anemia is another of the most common nutrition-related diseases in children, with prevalence ranging between 20% and 31% in school-aged children and between 46% and 49% in preschool children (WHO 2008, data from 2005). Although the main nutritional deficiency leading to anemia is that of iron, other micronutrients, and antioxidants in particular, like vitamins A, C, and zinc, have been associated with increased risk of anemia (Konomi and Yokoi, 2005 and Sommer et al., 2002 as cited in Chen et al., 2012; Maggini et al., 2010). Vitamin C, for example, contributes to optimal growth by reduction of non-heme iron from ferric to ferrous form, increasing its absorption by the intestinal epithelium (Sandström, 2001; Siegenberg et al., 1991). On the contrary, zinc and some polyphenols may sequester iron and reduce its bioavailability (Sandström, 2001; Siegenberg et al., 1991).

Supplementation with vitamin A has been found to improve markers of iron status and anemia. In China, preschool children (up to 6 years of age) were given
supplements of vitamin A alone, vitamin A plus zinc, or vitamin A plus multivi-
tamin/mineral cocktail, which included calcium, vitamin C, and B vitamins, for 6
months (Chen et al., 2012). The multinutrient supplementation proved to be the most
effective for improving anemia, whereas the combination of vitamin A and zinc
provided the best results in terms of stimulating growth (increased height). Similar
results were obtained with another intervention with a multimicronutrient supplement
including vitamin A, vitamin B-12, iron, and zinc, conducted in older children (6–11
years) in Haiti (Ianotti et al., 2014). Vitamin A alone can as well improve hemoglobin
status; Mwanri and colleagues (2000), working with Tanzanite children, found that
vitamin A (5000 IU, 3 days/week for 3 months) increased the beneficial effect of
iron supplementation (200 mg ferrous sulfate) when given together. Similarly, both
micronutrients alone improved height and weight gain when compared with placebo;
however, the combination provided the best results (Mwanri et al., 2000).

**Antioxidants, Asthma, and Allergies**

Particularly interesting is the role that antioxidants can play in the development and/
or treatment of asthma and allergies, two of the most prevalent diseases in childhood,
with figures on the rise (Asher et al., 2006; Williams et al., 2008). Vitamins C and
E, through their antioxidant and immunomodulatory actions, have been shown to
improve lung function and hyperreactivity (Romieu and Trenga, 2001; Rubin et al.,
2004). There is even evidence for a relationship between maternal antioxidant intake
(vitamin E in particular) during pregnancy and the development of asthma later in
childhood (Devereux et al., 2006). A study in Iraqi children showed reduced serum
levels of vitamin C and E in those with asthma, when compared with healthy chil-
dren, and also a negative association between serum antioxidants and the severity
of asthma symptoms (Al-Abdulla et al., 2010). However, little information is avail-
able, to our knowledge, regarding the effectiveness of the use of dietary antioxidant
supplements in the treatment of asthma and allergies in children.

Similarly, studies in the last two decades suggest beneficial actions of polyphenols
(especially quercetin and catechins) in alleviating the symptoms of allergic diseases
and immune hypersensitivity (revised by Singh et al., 2011). A role for polyphenols in
reducing food allergies in children and associated asthma and rhinitis has been pro-
posed; however, most data come from *in vitro* or animal studies, or from interven-
tions in adults, and little is known about the potential or safety of these compounds
in children.

**Antioxidants and Obesity**

When considering the relationship between antioxidants and growth, the most imme-
diate association arising is that between antioxidant deficits and impaired growth.
However, antioxidants can contribute to the healthy growth of children by helping
prevent overweight and obesity; in other words, deficiencies in antioxidant micronu-
trients have been linked to a higher risk of obesity in early ages.

Oxidative stress has been found to play a relevant role in the etiopathogenesis of
obesity, which could be mediated by food intake (revised in Puchau et al., 2010).
Some authors have found overweight and obese children and adolescents to present lower serum levels of antioxidant vitamins and minerals, like zinc, selenium (Azab et al., 2014), vitamins C and E (García et al., 2013), carotenoids, and α-tocopherol (Gunanti et al., 2014). Interestingly, higher concentrations of vitamin A (García et al., 2013) and retinol (Gunanti et al., 2014) have been associated with higher adiposity.

Information from intervention studies in relation to the effect of supplementation on obesity in children is still scarce. Some trials that combined dietary treatments for obesity with antioxidant supplementation have reported improvements in markers of oxidative stress (Codoñer-Franch et al., 2010; D’Adamo et al., 2013; Murer et al., 2014) and obesity-related alterations, such as cardiometabolic risk parameters (D’Adamo et al., 2013; Hashemipour et al., 2009) or impaired liver function (Murer et al., 2014). However, none of these studies has reported a significant effect of supplementation on body weight or indices of adiposity, or else some have reported no significant effect on these measurements (Hashemipour et al., 2009). In fact, it is interesting to mention that voices have risen to warn about the potential detrimental effects of excessive or unnecessary vitamin supplementation on the risk of developing obesity in children (Zhou and Zhou, 2014). Some evidence suggest a relationship between vitamin intake (mainly B vitamins) and weight gain, and although this relationship has not been directly established with antioxidant vitamins, and it could well not be the case for them, it should be remembered that the most usual method of micronutrient supplementation is the administration of multivitamin–multimineral complexes. Therefore, further evidence is needed before a clear relationship between antioxidant status and pediatric obesity can be established, and especially before antioxidant supplementation can be considered as a therapeutic tool.

**ANTIOXIDANTS, COGNITIVE FUNCTION, BEHAVIOR, AND MENTAL DEVELOPMENT**

**Antioxidants and Brain Development**

The high metabolic activity and demand for nutrients of the brain, combined with the lack of storage structures within it, make this organ highly dependent on dietary provision of energy and essential nutrients for its correct functioning. The first years of life are crucial with regard to brain plasticity and development; in consequence, diet plays a key role in cognitive development, behavior, and mental health in children and adolescents. In fact, quite often the nutritional deficiencies that impair physical growth are also associated with impaired cognitive function (it is the case, e.g., with iron-deficiency anemia; Falkingham et al., 2010).

Antioxidant micronutrients have multiple functions, and can act as coenzymes or prostatic parts of enzymes essential to brain growth and development (Benton, 2001). Zinc, for instance, is important for neurodevelopment, and research has shown that early (pre- or perinatal) deficiency may have permanent adverse effects on cognitive development (Benton, 2010). In addition, low zinc intakes have been associated with behavioral problems in children, such as attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder (ADHD) (DiGirolamo et al., 2010). However, results from intervention studies have
not provided sound evidence in favor of zinc supplementation for improving cognitive abilities and/or mental health.

There have been attempts at using antioxidant supplements to improve cognitive and academic performance in children, but with uneven results (reviewed in Benton, 2001), and suggesting a significant effect mainly (or only) on those children who had learning difficulties or were malnourished. For example, in a study where children (9–14 years old) were given orange juice daily for 6 months, IQ was increased only in those with poor initial vitamin C status (Kubula and Katz, 1960, as cited in Benton, 2001). Interventions with multivitamin–multimineral supplements have provided positive results with regard to behavior and intellectual capacities (Benton, 2001, 2010); however, it is difficult to discern to which extent these benefits could be attributed to the antioxidants present in the supplements.

A special role can be attributed to vitamin E, not so much as a therapeutic agent in itself but as adjuvant of fatty acid supplementation for children with neurodevelopmental impairment. A growing body of evidence supports the use of polyunsaturated fatty acids (PUFA) of the ω-3 family in the treatment of disorders with either an inflammatory or a neurological component. Owing to their characteristic chemical structure, these fatty acids are essential for cell membrane formation, especially in the nervous and immune systems; in addition, they are precursors of anti-inflammatory eicosanoids. These properties make ω-3 PUFA important candidates for the treatment of neurodevelopmental disorders (Grassmann et al., 2013; Sinn, 2008). However, that same chemical nature makes them highly susceptible to lipid peroxidation, and that is where vitamin E exerts its protective action, preserving the integrity of the fatty acids. For that reason, combined supplementations of ω-3 PUFA and vitamin E have been proposed to treat neuronal alterations in children (Gumpricht and Rockway, 2013).

**Antioxidants and Behavioral/Cognitive Alterations: ADHD**

ADHD is characterized by impulsivity, excess of activity, and limited capacity to keep attention (American Psychiatric Association [APA], 1994). Its prevalence is estimated to be between 2% and 18% of children (Rowland et al., 2002), although these figures may rise with the new diagnostic criteria proposed by the APA in the DSM-V (Ghanizadeh, 2013). Both genetic and nongenetic factors are involved in the pathogenesis of ADHD. Among them, oxidative stress appears again as an important agent (Ross et al., 2003). Therefore, antioxidants are receiving growing interest for their potential to reduce oxidative stress in the brain, which may help in the treatment of ADHD and other neurodevelopmental disorders (Gumpricht and Rockway, 2013; Ng et al., 2008).

Observational studies have found an inverse relationship between zinc status in children and attention, including ADHD (Benton, 2010). Intervention studies also suggest a therapeutic potential for zinc supplementation. For example, 55 mg/day zinc sulfate in combination with the standard drug treatment with methylphenidate for 6 weeks seemed to improve parent- and teacher-reported behavior in children aged 5–11 years (Akhondzadeh et al., 2004), although these authors remained cautious about the need to replicate the study with different zinc doses. In the same year, a large controlled clinical trial was published showing how zinc supplementation...
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

(150 mg/day zinc sulfate during 12 weeks) improved hyperactivity, impulsivity, and socialization, but not lack of attention (Bilici et al., 2004). On the contrary, although a significant negative association has been found between serum zinc levels and symptoms of depression or anxiety, no differences have been observed in those parameters between children receiving the supplement (10 mg ZnO/day for 5 days/week during 6 months) and their controls (DiGirolamo et al., 2010). Ghanizadeh and Berk (2013), in their systematic review of clinical trials, concluded that there is still not enough sound evidence of zinc supplements being useful for ameliorating ADHD in children and adolescents (Ghanizadeh and Berk, 2013).

Research with polyphenol supplements is still in a preliminary stage; however, the maritime pine bark extract known commercially as Pycnogenol®, rich in phenolic acids, catechin, taxifolin, and procyanidins, could be useful for treating the symptoms of ADHD. An intervention with this extract (1 mg/kg body weight/day for 4 weeks) caused a significant reduction of hyperactivity and improved attention, concentration, and visual–motor coordination in children with ADHD (Trebatická et al., 2006); however, further research is clearly needed.

**Antioxidants in Autism Spectrum Disorders**

Oxidative stress has been proposed to be also involved in the etiopathology of disorders of the autism spectrum, and, consequently, it could be a therapeutic target (Deth and Muratone, 2010; Ghanizadeh et al., 2012). There is evidence of lower levels of glutathione in children with these conditions, when compared with healthy ones (Geier et al., 2009). The antioxidant action of glutathione is important for protecting the brain tissue from oxidative stress and associated neuroinflammation in autism. Supplementation with glutathione in children with autism spectrum disorders has been shown to improve the levels of some of the transsulfuration metabolites (Kern et al., 2011); however, the effects on clinical symptoms still deserve further exploration.

The oxidative stress hypothesis has led to test the efficacy of dietary antioxidants, like zinc, to treat these disorders and/or their symptoms. In this line, recent studies have demonstrated that serum zinc concentrations are reduced in children with autism spectrum disorders (Faber et al., 2009; Yasuda et al., 2011), while other studies do not support such findings (Adams et al., 2011). We still lack results from clinical trials with zinc supplementation in children with autism spectrum disorders.

Similarly, supplementation with polyphenols can represent an option worth exploring in the future. Recently, results have been published from two interventions in which combinations of luteolin, quercetin, and rutin were given to children (ranging from 4 to 14 years) for at least 4 months (Theoharides et al., 2012) or for 6 months (Taliou et al., 2013). After the treatments, significant improvements were reported in communication skills, social interaction, and overall behavior in both studies (Taliou et al., 2013; Theoharides et al., 2012).

Also worth mentioning is the study by Gvozdjáková and co-workers (2014), in which children with autism were treated with the nondietary antioxidant ubiquinol (a reduced form of coenzyme Q10). Twenty-four children, aged 3–6 years, received
100 mg/day ubiquinol for 3 months; after that period, both coenzyme Q10 levels and various symptoms of autism were reported to be improved.

**Antioxidants in Down Syndrome**

Down syndrome is one of the most frequent congenital conditions, with a prevalence of 1–2 in 1000 births (Weijerman and de Winter, 2010), and associated with learning disabilities and a higher risk of cognitive deterioration and of developing dementia at an earlier age (Thiel and Fowkes, 2005). As with the other diseases here mentioned, comorbidities of Down syndrome, especially cognitive impairment, have been proposed to be caused by oxidative stress. The gene that codifies one of the most relevant enzymes in ROS production, superoxide dismutase (SOD), is located in chromosome 21; because of the extra copy of this chromosome present in individuals with Down syndrome, this gene is overexpressed by up to 50%, and in consequence generation of ROS is increased in affected individuals. In addition, IQ has been positively associated with GSH-Px activity in individuals with Down syndrome (reviewed in Ani et al., 2000). This has led to the suggestion that nutritional supplementation could ameliorate oxidative stress in individuals with Down syndrome and improve some of the comorbidities of their condition, although evidence available provides inconclusive results. For example, serum zinc levels have been reported to be lower in Down syndrome, suggesting that supplementation with this mineral could be beneficial; however, clinical trials proving the efficacy of such supplements are lacking (Ani et al., 2000).

As a natural component of GSH-Px, selenium is one of the antioxidant micronutrients proposed for the treatment of Down syndrome. Back in 1990, Antila and co-workers gave selenium supplements (15–25 μg of selenium/kg/day) to individuals with Down syndrome and reported a 25% increase in the activity of GSH-Px and a 24% reduction in the SOD/GSH-Px ratio compared with corresponding controls (Antila et al., 1990). This intervention, however, was conducted on a very small sample (only seven subjects), varying greatly in age (1–54 years) and length of treatment (4–18 months); also, it did not report any measurements of cognitive function, making it difficult to draw conclusions regarding the effectiveness of selenium administration for treating the cognitive comorbidities of Down syndrome.

Almost two decades later, Ellis and coworkers (2008) provided an antioxidant cocktail (10 μg selenium + 5 mg zinc + 0.9 mg vitamin A + 100 mg vitamin E + 50 mg vitamin C daily) to 156 infants (up to 7 months of age) with Down syndrome. At 18 months follow-up, the authors failed to observe any significant effect on SOD activity or any of the cognitive outcomes measured, like locomotor activity or hearing and language development, when compared with placebo. Later on, Lott and colleagues (2011) conducted a similar intervention with adults (aged 40 years or older; 900 IU α-tocopherol, 200 mg ascorbic acid, and 600 mg α-lipoic acid per day), and again observed neither improvement in cognitive function nor a stabilization of cognitive decline compared with the controls (Lott et al., 2011).

Finally, as a summary, Figure 4.2 shows the potential effects of oxidative stress and antioxidants in child growth and development.
With the experimental evidence available thus far, there seems to be little doubt regarding the involvement of antioxidants, including dietary, in the physical and mental development of children, and of the role of antioxidant deficiencies in growth impairment and the occurrence of diseases that hinder children’s physical and cognitive performance.

Less clear is the efficacy of antioxidant supplements for increasing growth and cognitive function in the early years of life, or for treating disease, except in those cases where specific nutritional deficiencies exist and must therefore be corrected.

It is also important to remark that vitamins, minerals, and polyphenols have pleiotropic roles in the body—in other words, one single compound will exert a wide range of functions other than sequestering ROS; for example, polyphenols have anti-inflammatory properties, and zinc is a cofactor for enzymes involved in gene transcription. It is therefore difficult to discern whether the effects of the antioxidants discussed in this chapter are due to their capacity to protect cells and molecules from oxidation, or to their other functions.

However, some areas of research, like those related to neurodevelopmental disorders in children, are still young but pointing at potentially interesting pathways to follow, like the use of zinc and polyphenol supplements, regardless of the actual mechanism of action involved in their effect.
ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The authors would like to thank Bayer’s contribution to the preparation of this chapter.

REFERENCES


The Role of Antioxidants in Children's Growth and Development


The Role of Antioxidants in Children’s Growth and Development


Adulthood is the longest period of human life. Scientific evidence supports that diet in this life period is correlated with possible progression of degenerative diseases in older age (Zampelas, 2003). Higher intake of antioxidant-rich foods is clearly associated with health improvement and longevity in adulthood. The specific mechanisms are under investigation; however, several studies have shown that a diet rich in plant-based, antioxidant-rich foods, herbs, and beverages may promote health and could decrease the risk of various age-related diseases (Benzie & Choi, 2014). Nevertheless, a major parameter that determines the final effect of natural antioxidants on the human body is their bioavailability. Antioxidant bioavailability, and consequently their bioactivity, is affected by multiple interactions in the lumen during digestion and may release a variety of metabolites with different pharmacokinetic actions (Kapsokefalou et al., 2006; Karabela et al., 2011; Koutelidakis et al., 2013).

Antioxidants are molecules that can interact with free radicals and terminate the chain reaction procedure before it destroys the vital molecules (Jacob, 1995). The ability of antioxidants to eliminate free radicals from the body and thus reduce the destruction of cellular organelles, such as lipids and DNA, may be the most important protective mechanism that prevents the pathophysiological processes of several diseases (Osawa et al., 1999; Saffari & Sadrzadeh, 2004; Sies et al., 2005). Although the human body has an enzymatic system (superoxide dismutase, catalase, glutathione peroxidase, etc.) with antioxidant scavenging/defense properties, the
primary antioxidant defense of the body is dependent on dietary micronutrients such as vitamin E, vitamin C, β-carotene, and lycopene (Wootton-Beard & Ryan, 2011). In recent years, several studies have demonstrated the important role of the antioxidant selenium and the role of various phytochemicals such as polyphenols, and specifically flavonoids (Morton et al., 2000; Cabrera et al., 2006; Benfeito et al., 2013).

Ascorbic acid is a major plasma antioxidant factor that is needed for collagen synthesis. Humans must obtain an adequate intake of vitamin C to maintain its plasma and tissue levels. Current dietary recommendations suggest an ascorbic acid intake of at least 70 mg/day for women and 100 mg/day for men, with higher levels advised in pregnant women and in smokers, because of increased oxidative stress (Yoshihara et al., 2010; Doll & Ricou, 2013; Benzie & Choi, 2014). The typical concentration of ascorbic acid in fasting plasma is 10–60 μM, and its best food sources are fruits, particularly citrus, kiwi fruit, and strawberries (Benzie & Choi, 2014). The National Health and Nutrition Examination Surveys (NHANES) have shown that low serum levels of vitamin C is associated with an increased risk for all-cause mortality (Simon & Hudes, 1999). In contrast, the Nurses’ Health Study did not find evidence for a protective effect of vitamin C against cardiovascular disease (Osganian et al., 2003).

Vitamin E is a fat-soluble antioxidant and has been proposed as the most important inhibitor of lipid peroxidation. Vitamin E prevents platelet activation and adhesion, and is the basic antioxidant factor of low-density lipoprotein (LDL). The recommended daily allowance (RDA) for men and for women is 15 mg/day α-tocopherol (Masella et al., 2004; Yoshihara et al., 2010). The typical concentration of α-tocopherol in fasting plasma is 16–40 μM (Benzie & Choi, 2014). Vitamin E consumption is difficult to assess as it depends on the processing and storage methods; however, the best food sources of tocopherols are plant oils, wheat germ, sunflower seeds, and nuts (Benfeito et al., 2012; Benzie & Choi, 2014). The Nurses’ Health Study showed that supplemental vitamin E use for >2 years resulted in lower predicted cardiovascular disease risk; however, this beneficial effect was lost at lower doses and for shorter periods of use (Stamper et al., 1993).

Carotenoids, such as lutein, zeaxanthin, and β-carotene, are lipophilic antioxidant compounds that are present in various plant and animal food sources. Their typical concentration in plasma ranges from 0.160 to 0.354 μM (Benzie & Choi, 2014), and they are linked to known mechanisms of action, such as protection from lipid peroxidation, immune function, DNA damage protection, and gene regulation. The recommended daily intakes for vitamin A are 900 μg retinoic acid (RA) and 700 μg retinol activity equivalents (RAE) for adult men and women, respectively (Pokorny et al., 2001). Another important dietary antioxidant is selenium, a nutrient associated with protein foods. The role of selenium is the defense against oxidation procedure and the regulation of thyroid hormone. The recommendation (RDA) for adults is 55 μg selenium per day, and the best food sources include seafood, meat, whole grains, and vegetables (depending on soil content) (Pokorny et al., 2001).

Recently, experimental data suggest the important role of polyphenols and especially of flavonoids on cell protection against oxidative stress (Benfeito et al., 2012). They can prevent or minimize oxidative damage processes by scavenging free radical species and enhancing the endogenous antioxidant system by stimulating the synthesis of endogenous antioxidants (Pokorny et al., 2001; Yoshihara et al., 2010; Benfeito...
The typical concentration of anthocyanins in fasting plasma is 0.046 µM and that of quercetin is 0.001 µM (Benzie & Choi, 2014). It is also considered to confer further protective function owing to the synergistic action of different antioxidant components, such as flavonoids, into the food matrix (Koutelidakis et al., 2013). Nevertheless, there are no recommendations for daily flavonoid consumption because of the complex and multifactorial process of its absorption and because its metabolism differs among individuals. Furthermore, the European Food Safety Authority (EFSA) does not yet verify the nutritional or health claims for flavonoids and foods rich in antioxidants, such as herbal infusions (EFSA Panel on Dietetic Products, 2011).

**Bioavailability of Natural Antioxidants and Its Effect on Antioxidant Biomarkers in Adults**

The antioxidant effect of several foods or beverages has been linked to the absorption and metabolism of its bioactive constituents; that is, a prerequisite for bioactivity is bioaccessibility and bioavailability. This means that food components must be absorbed into the enterocyte, and moved and distributed to the organ tissues. Absorption, metabolism, pharmacokinetics, tissue distribution, and rate of excretion in urine or feces reflect the bioavailability of the components and thus the biological role of food into the organism (Duthie et al., 2000; Scalbert et al., 2002; Manach et al., 2005; Koutelidakis & Kapsokefalou, 2012).

The holistic range of the possible health benefits of antioxidant-rich diets suggests their effect on various biomarkers in the human body (Koutelidakis et al., 2009; Koutelidakis & Kapsokefalou, 2012). The total antioxidant capacity of plasma, oxidized LDL, malondialdehyde, and oxidized DNA are some examples of biomarkers that indirectly indicate the synergistic effect of the antioxidant compounds on humans. Table 5.1 presents the effect of the consumption of several beverages, such as tea, cacao, or wine, on specific antioxidant biomarkers (Duffy et al., 2001; Erba et al., 2005; Hodgson et al., 2005; Widlansky et al., 2005).

Although many studies had indicated an increase of total antioxidant capacity or decrease of oxidized products after consumption of foods rich in antioxidants (Duffy et al., 2001; Erba et al., 2005), other studies suggest that natural antioxidants such as flavonoids are purely absorbed and have an extended metabolism in the body; thus, their contribution to serum total antioxidant activity and their final effect on organ tissues are controversial (Lotito & Frei, 2006). For example, the plasma concentration of all polyphenols, including catechins, quercetin, and anthocyanins, is only 1 mM, even with a diet that provides up to 1 g/day of polyphenols from fruits and vegetables (Manach et al., 2005). The plasma concentrations of ascorbic acid and α-tocopherol are 80 and 40 mM, respectively, while their daily consumption are 200 and 10 mg in healthy adults, respectively (Benzie & Choi, 2014).

According to the “EFSA Panel on Dietetic Products, Nutrition, and Allergies,” it is not established that changes in the overall antioxidant capacity of plasma exert a beneficial physiological effect on humans, as required by Regulation (EC) No. 1924/2006. Furthermore, the induction of antioxidant enzymes, such as catalase or superoxide dismutase, cannot be used alone as evidence for claims related to the “antioxidant defense system” for nonessential food constituents. The EFSA panel
### Effect of Consumption of Various Foods on Plasma or Urine Antioxidant Biomarkers in Adults

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Antioxidant Biomarkers in Plasma or Urine</th>
<th>Subjects</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>Food Used</th>
<th>Study Duration</th>
<th>Results–Effect</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>MDA–LDL, vitamin C, total catechins, urinary 8-PGFa</td>
<td>Healthy</td>
<td>Water control–crossover</td>
<td>Green tea (Camellia sinensis)</td>
<td>2 weeks</td>
<td>No effect</td>
<td>Hirano-Ohmori et al., 2005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TAC, plasma flavonoids (HPLC), vitamin C α-Tocopherol, β-carotene, vitamin C</td>
<td>CAD</td>
<td>Water control–crossover</td>
<td>Green tea (Camellia sinensis)</td>
<td>4 weeks</td>
<td>Positive effect (flavonoids)</td>
<td>Duffy et al., 2001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F2-isoprostanes (in plasma and urine)</td>
<td>Healthy, smokers</td>
<td>Dosage effects</td>
<td>Black, green tea (Camellia sinensis)</td>
<td>4 weeks</td>
<td>Positive effect</td>
<td>de Maat et al., 2000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plasma glutathione, DNA oxid., peroxides, TAC Cu oxid. LDL, TBARS, TAC, plasma phenolics MDA, isoprostanates, DNA damage</td>
<td>Healthy</td>
<td>Water control–crossover</td>
<td>Black, green tea (Camellia sinensis)</td>
<td>7 days</td>
<td>No effect</td>
<td>Hodgson et al., 2001</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plasma total catechins, TAC</td>
<td>Healthy</td>
<td>Randomized–controlled diet</td>
<td>Green tea (Camellia sinensis)</td>
<td>42 days</td>
<td>Positive</td>
<td>Erba et al., 2005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plasma F2-isoprostanes, MDA</td>
<td>CAD</td>
<td>2 h after consumption</td>
<td>Black tea (Camellia sinensis)</td>
<td>Acute</td>
<td>No effect</td>
<td>Widlansky et al., 2004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Healthy</td>
<td>2, 4, and 6 h after consumption</td>
<td>Cocoa (Theobroma cacao)</td>
<td>Acute</td>
<td>Positive effect</td>
<td>Wiswedel et al., 2004</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Note:* CAD, cardiovascular disease; HPLC, high-performance liquid chromatography; LDL, low-density lipoprotein; MDA, malondialdehyde; TAC, total antioxidant capacity; TBARS, thiobarbituric acid reactive substances.
concludes that “for biomarkers relative to antioxidant capacity, changes in antioxidant status, oxidative damage to proteins, lipids and DNA, nonoxidative DNA damage and neoplastic degeneration of cells no definition has been provided of ‘premature aging’ or of ‘healthy aging’ in relation to the antioxidant properties of foods, and therefore the claimed effect is considered to be general and nonspecific, and thus does not comply with the criteria laid down in Regulation (EC) No. 1924/2006” (EFSA Panel on Dietetic Products, 2011).

**Dietary Antioxidants and Disease Prevention in Adulthood**

Recent research data suggest that the beneficial biological role of natural antioxidants is focused not only on their antioxidant scavenging activity but also on their involvement in multiple metabolic signaling pathways at the cellular level. For example, flavonoids may influence the expression of genes encoding the overproduction or underproduction of substances associated with the pathophysiology of cancer and cardiovascular diseases. For example, tea catechins are possibly involved in the transcription of regulatory factors that determine the form of protein synthesized in cells of various tissues (Morton et al., 2000; Bauer et al., 2004; Ho et al., 2009).

Regarding atherosclerosis pathophysiology, several antioxidants have been shown to possibly alter metabolic pathways associated with endothelial function, inflammatory process, platelet aggregation, and hemostasis (Hodgson et al., 2005; Kaliiora et al., 2005). In some cases, antioxidants such as catechins modify the expression of cyclooxygenase through suppressing factor AP-1; increasing the expression of an endogenous antioxidant of LDL, paraoxonase 1 (PON-1); deregulating the gene expression of inflammatory factors such as vascular endothelial growth factor, interferon-γ, and interleukin (IL)-4; and modulating the transcription factor nuclear factor (NF)-κB in endothelial cells and macrophages (Jochman et al., 2008).

Regarding cancer, antioxidants may affect genes associated with tumorigenesis. They may affect the cell cycle and act on the process of apoptosis. For example, flavonoids have been found to promote apoptosis in cancer cells via deregulation of the gene p53, which regulates the cell cycle phases. Flavonoids seem to inhibit the transcription of AP-1, preventing the transformation of DNA and affecting c-jun and c-foc expression. Thus, by promoting the expression of proteins associated with the c-jun-form heterodimers, they may decrease the activation of genes that cause cancer. Although for cardiovascular disease, research data show a direct effect of antioxidants and particular flavonoids in the pathophysiology of the disease, the data for the effect on cancer prevention are controversial, and further research is needed (Ahmad & Mukhtar, 1999).

**Antioxidant Supplements and Adult Health**

Although the consumption of a diet rich in antioxidants is correlated with specific health benefits, there is no clear evidence supporting the claim that the intake of supplementary individual antioxidants exerts significant bioactivity (Benzie & Choi, 2014). This may be explained by the holistic antioxidant effect of a whole food or diet, which is the result of the synergistic action of specific antioxidants (Koutelidakis & Kapsokefalou, 2012).
In a meta-analysis of the effect of antioxidant supplements for the prevention of mortality in healthy participants and patients with various diseases, Bjelakovic and coworkers showed that antioxidant supplements had no significant effect on mortality in a random-effects meta-analysis (RR, 1.02; 95% CI, 0.99–1.06), but significantly increased mortality in a fixed-effect model (RR, 1.04; 95% CI, 1.02–1.06). In trials with a low risk of bias, the antioxidant supplements significantly increased mortality (RR, 1.05; 95% CI, 1.02–1.08). When the different antioxidants were assessed separately, analyses found increased mortality with vitamin A, β-carotene, and vitamin E, but no significant detrimental effect of vitamin C (Bjelakovic et al., 2008).

In another study, Kris-Etherton and coworkers (2004) suggested that the existing scientific databases do not justify the routine use of antioxidant supplements for the prevention and treatment of cardiovascular disease. Furthermore, in vivo studies have shown that the administration of vitamin E raised the plasma lipid peroxidation product levels in smokers on a high-fat diet and increased the fat content of livers in rats fed a high-fat diet plus ethanol (Yoshihara et al., 2010) (Table 5.2).

### TABLE 5.2
Recommended Dietary Allowance, Tolerable Upper Intake Level, Experimental Doses, and Regimen Used in Antioxidant Supplements

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Antioxidant Supplements</th>
<th>RDA</th>
<th>Experimental Doses</th>
<th>Median Doses</th>
<th>Regimen</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>Women</td>
<td>TUIL</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>ND</td>
<td>ND</td>
<td>1.2–50 mg</td>
<td>15.5 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vitamin A</td>
<td>900 μg</td>
<td>700 μg</td>
<td>3000 μg</td>
<td>400–7500 μg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vitamin C</td>
<td>90 mg</td>
<td>70 mg</td>
<td>2000 mg</td>
<td>60–2000 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vitamin E</td>
<td>15 mg</td>
<td>15 mg</td>
<td>1000 mg</td>
<td>10–5000 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>55 μg</td>
<td>55 μg</td>
<td>400 μg</td>
<td>20–200 μg</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


Note: RDA, recommended dietary allowance; TUIL, tolerable upper intake level.

### DIETARY ANTIOXIDANTS IN THE ELDERLY

**SPECIAL NEEDS OF THE ELDERLY AND IMPORTANCE OF DIETARY ANTIOXIDANTS**

Old people tend to be neglected by both their families and the health-care system, and they sometimes live in isolation in their final stage of life. They are usually unable to shop and cook properly, and only a small fraction of them consume the recommended levels of energy, essential trace elements, or vitamins A and D. Consumption of vegetables is usually low, and few of them manage to achieve the recommended five portions a day (Heinrich & Prieto, 2008). “Although health status has multiple contributing factors, nutrition is one of the major determinants of successful aging.
Many older adults have at least one or more chronic health condition. Disparities in health are believed to be the result of complex interaction among genetic variations, environmental factors, and cultural and health behaviors. Inequities in access to health care, income, and poverty, as well as food security also contribute to health disparities among older adults” (Bernstein & Munoz, 2012).

Nowadays there is a trend to increase the lifespan, and research is generally focused on dietary traditions or interventions that allow healthy aging. The antioxidant content of diet may play a pivotal role in the aging procedure and directly affect the appearance of neurodegenerative diseases (Heinrich & Prieto, 2008). The elderly life stage involves important physiological changes, including increased oxidative stress in tissues; thus, the antioxidant content of diets may decrease the impact of several pathophysiological processes (Zampelas, 2003; El Assar et al., 2013).

Vitamin A absorption is increased in the elderly; thus, the recommendations of 800 mg and 1000 mg for women and men, respectively, adequately cover the needs of old age. Furthermore, for the fat-soluble vitamin E, there is no risk of inefficiency in old age because it is stored in the liver. On the contrary, in old age, there is an extended metabolism of vitamin C, especially in men. Men need 150 mg ascorbic acid daily for a normal plasma concentration of 1 mg/dL, while women need the recommended amount of 75–80 mg (Zampelas, 2003). According to the Dietary Reference Intakes (DRIs), the RDA for men >70 years old is 900 μg/day vitamin A (as RAE), 90 mg/day vitamin C, and 20 μg/day vitamin E (as α-tocopherol). For females >70 years old, the RDA is 700 μg/day vitamin A, 75 mg/day vitamin C, and 20 μg/day vitamin E (Food and Nutrition Board, Institute of Medicine, National Academies, 2011).

Recent scientific reports suggest that adherence to a balanced diet rich in antioxidant components, such as the Mediterranean diet, could protect older adults from the progression of degenerative diseases. A balanced combination of antioxidant nutrients may be necessary to have a significant effect on the prevention of cognitive decline and dementia in the elderly. The Academy of Nutrition and Dietetics encourage older people to achieve intakes meeting the DRIs for antioxidant vitamins and minerals, and the recommendation of a multivitamin supplement only if food intake is low. High dietary intake of vitamins E and C was associated with a lower risk of Alzheimer’s disease, while decreased vitamin E levels have been associated with memory deficit in old people (Benfeito et al., 2012).

Research on antioxidant intakes at supplemental levels is inconclusive, and the conflicting results may be the result of various genetic factors and prior nutrient deficiencies. Furthermore, there is no evidence demonstrating the effective action of antioxidant supplements in doses higher than the DRIs in the elderly. On the contrary, the high consumption of vitamins A and E may induce toxicity in older adults due to the increased absorption of these antioxidant compounds (Gillette et al., 2007; Bernstein & Munoz, 2012).

**Dietary Antioxidant Consumption and Disease Prevention in the Elderly**

The increasing oxidative stress during aging is correlated with the progression of various disease pathophysologies such as cataract, arteriosclerosis, Alzheimer’s disease, and Parkinson’s disease (Lau et al., 2005; Lloret et al., 2011; El Assar et al.,
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

2013; Zampatti et al., 2014). Cataracts and age-related macular degeneration (AMD) are common diseases of older adults. Higher intakes of phytochemicals may help prevent or delay the development and progression of cataracts and AMD. Adequate intakes of flavonoids and carotenoids, especially lutein and zeaxanthin, through a diet rich in fruits and vegetables increase their serum concentrations and the macular pigment density, and may help in the prevention of AMD (Bernstein & Munoz, 2012; Zampatti et al., 2014). A balanced diet containing antioxidant compounds is considered a basic parameter for enhancing endogenous stress responses and could be effective during the aging process, favoring a successful vascular aging; thus, it may reduce the risk for cardiovascular disease (El Assar et al., 2013).

Human brain and nervous system cells are particularly sensitive to oxidative stress because (i) the brain constitutes 2% of the total weight and consumes 20% of recruited oxygen; (ii) it is rich in polyunsaturated fatty acids, which are easily oxidized; (iii) it contains large amounts of iron and ascorbate that catalyze lipid peroxidation; (iv) many neurotransmitters are auto-oxidized and produce reactive oxygen species; (v) in specific brain areas, neuronal mitosis promotes oxidative damage; and (vi) via activation of genes such as Enos, IL-1β, TNF-α, and NF-κB, inflammatory processes may occur in nerve cells, thereby producing free radicals and cytokines. Therefore, the brain and nerve cells being prone to oxidative process may lead to the aging process and the emergence of diseases such as Alzheimer’s and Parkinson’s (Sun et al., 2002; Lau et al., 2005).

In recent years, many scientific studies, mainly in animals and humans, have suggested a possible beneficial effect of several food antioxidants in the deceleration of aging process in the brain, which causes the neurodegenerative diseases of old age. Cognitive tests in mice with Alzheimer plaques showed that diet containing fruits and vegetables, which are rich in antioxidants, improved cognitive functions and increased the number of neuronal cells. Mice that ate fruits rich in polyphenols, such as berries, had increased memory, improved cognitive status, and showed proliferation of neuronal cells, which are attenuated during aging, due to the increased expression of ERK genes in synaptosomes (Lau et al., 2005). The main mechanisms of action of antioxidants in neurological diseases include the possible influence on specific genes, antioxidant scavenging, and the regulation of cellular pathway messaging (Sun et al., 2002; Lloret et al., 2011). For example, polyphenols have been found to inhibit free radicals in the brain, preventing the production of substances that promote neurological diseases, such as inflammatory cytokines and interleukins, in microglia and peripheral nerves. They may also activate the factor NF-kB and remove iron, which is found in large concentrations in synaptosomes and mitochondria in the brain of patients with Alzheimer’s and Parkinson’s and has been linked to the pathogenesis of those diseases. Dietary antioxidants may reduce lipid peroxidation induced in the presence of iron in the mitochondria of mouse brain cells. They also form complexes with iron that reduce the in vitro production of aldehydes, a contributing factor in the production of reactive oxygen species and toxicity in the dopaminergic system (Sun et al., 2002; Esposito et al., 2003; Weinreb et al., 2004).

Alzheimer’s disease is a neurodegenerative process associated with oxidative stress. It is known that the intracellular amyloid β could play a pivotal role in the
pathophysiology of the disease. Amyloid β binds to heme groups in mitochondrial membranes, causing electron transport chain impairment and loss of respiratory function. Although many clinical trials have investigated whether antioxidants are beneficial in the treatment of Alzheimer’s, and there are some effective results from animal studies, there are no clear data confirming that antioxidants are an effective therapy; more research is necessary to clarify this point (Lloret et al., 2011). Findings from studies of antioxidant intake above RDA levels in subjects with diagnosed cognitive impairment or Alzheimer’s disease demonstrated no difference in the delay of cognitive decline (Bernstein & Munoz, 2012).

REFERENCES


Adulthood and Old Age


6 Smoking, Oxidative Stress, and Antioxidant Intake

Aristea Baschali and Dimitrios Karayiannis

CONTENTS

Introduction.............................................................................................................. 84
Interrelationship between Cigarette Smoke Chemistry and OS................................. 85
Radicals in Cigarette Tar .......................................................................................... 85
   Free Radicals (FRs) ......................................................................................... 85
   Quinones ......................................................................................................... 86
   Trace Heavy Metals ......................................................................................... 86
Radicals in Gas Phase .............................................................................................. 87
   Oxidative Radicals ......................................................................................... 87
   Peroxynitrite ................................................................................................. 87
   Glutathione Depletion .................................................................................... 87
Effects of Cigarette Smoke on OS in Humans .......................................................... 88
Interrelationship between Smoking and Antioxidant Intake ...................................... 89
Dietary Antioxidants and Smoking .......................................................................... 89
   Vitamins ........................................................................................................ 91
   Minerals and Trace Elements ......................................................................... 94
   Interaction of Smoking and Dietary Antioxidants ............................................ 95
Case of Natural Antioxidants ................................................................................... 95
   Vitamin C ....................................................................................................... 95
   Vitamin E ....................................................................................................... 96
   Vitamin A and Non–Provitamin A Carotenoids .............................................. 96
Flavonoids ............................................................................................................. 97
   Zinc ................................................................................................................ 97
   Copper .......................................................................................................... 97
   Selenium ....................................................................................................... 98
   Iron ................................................................................................................. 98
Case of Antioxidants in Supplementation Studies ...................................................... 98
   Vitamin C Supplementation Studies .............................................................. 98
   Vitamin E Supplementation Studies .............................................................. 99
   Non–Provitamin A Carotenoid Supplementation Studies ............................... 99
INTRODUCTION

Oxidative stress (OS) is a normal phenomenon in the body. The main contributors to OS, reactive oxygen species (ROS), are produced by living organisms as a result of normal cellular metabolism. Under normal conditions, physiologically important intracellular levels of ROS are maintained at low levels with various enzyme systems involved in redox homeostasis in vivo (Jakob and Reichmann 2013). At low to moderate concentrations, ROS function in normal cellular processes; however, at high concentrations, they produce undesirable changes in cellular components such as lipids, proteins, and DNA. The shift of the balance between oxidants/antioxidants is called “oxidative stress.” For the past two decades, OS has been one of the hottest topics among biological researchers worldwide.

Several reasons may be given to justify the importance of knowledge on ROS and reactive nitrogen species (RNS) production and metabolism: identification of biomarkers for oxidative damage, evidence for the occurrence of serious of chronic health problems due to OS, identification of different dietary antioxidants present in vegetables such as bioactive molecules, and so forth. OS contributes to many disease states, including cancer, neurological disorders, atherosclerosis, hypertension, ischemia/perfusion diabetes, acute respiratory distress syndrome, idiopathic pulmonary fibrosis, chronic obstructive pulmonary disease, and asthma (Da Costa et al. 2012).

Cigarette smoke is a highly complex aerosol consisting of several thousands of chemical substances, approximately 4700 of which are distributed between the gas and particle phases. It is divided into mainstream smoke (inhaled smoke) and sidestream smoke. Mainstream smoke is divided into a solid particulate phase (tar) and a gas phase (toxic gases, volatile organic compounds, volatile organic compounds, free radicals [FRs], etc.) (Siasos et al. 2014, Wooten et al. 2006). Cigarette tar contains extremely high concentrations of stable FRs (about 10^{17} spins g^{-1}) with a very long lifetime. Sidestream smoke is divided into the solid and gas phases, and contains higher concentrations of toxic and carcinogenic compounds and other volatile and semivolatile compounds. FRs and antioxidants in the gaseous phase are present in a stable state that is continuously formed and destroyed, and the concentration increases as the smoke ages. The gaseous phase is about 0.4–0.5 g/cigarette and contains 500 volatile organic and inorganic compounds. The particulate phase (tar) consists of fine and very fine particles (0.1–1.0 micron, aerodynamic diameter) that penetrate deep into the alveoli. Some of the soluble components of aqueous cigarette tar (ACT) can generate superoxide anion (O_2^−) and then hydrogen peroxide (H_2O_2) and reactive hydroxyl radical (HO), which cause oxidative damage to cellular membrane lipids, proteins, enzymes, and DNA (Romero et al. 2013). Sidestream smoke is composed of similar chemical components in solid and gaseous phases, and is also rich in short-lived and highly reactive FRs. Passive smoking (or environmental
Smoking, Oxidative Stress, and Antioxidant Intake

It is known that smoking is harmful to human health, from the results of many epidemiological studies linking smoking with high mortality from the onset of heart disease and cancer (Siasos et al. 2014). A large number of data on the composition of mainstream smoke have been published, and the matter has been examined in detail. The enormous complexity of cigarette smoke is the result of multiple thermolytic processes occurring during the combustion of the cigarette rod. These processes include distillation, pyrolysis, and combustion, and are influenced by factors including the design of the cigarette and the composition of tobacco. Numerous chemical classes of organic compounds present in cigarette smoke include saturated and unsaturated hydrocarbons, alcohols, aldehydes, ketones, carboxylic acids, esters, phenols, nitriles, terpenoids, and alkaloids. As the composition of cigarette smoke is complex, some components of tobacco have been scrutinized more than others have, either because of their greater relative abundance in tobacco (which makes them easy to analyze), their known pharmacological properties, and/or because they are believed to be carcinogenic or potentially harmful to smokers.

**INTERRELATIONSHIP BETWEEN CIGARETTE SMOKE CHEMISTRY AND OS**

There are a number of chemical classes of tobacco ingredients that have been reported to affect OS (Chalmers 1999). Owing to the complexity of cigarette smoke, it is impossible to be comprehensive, and much remains unknown. The components of smoke included in this chapter are compounds or metal ions that act as electrophiles, FRs, reactive anions or metal ions that act as reducing agents (donate an electron), or FRs or metal ions that act as oxidizing agents (accept an electron). ROS and RNS are generated when mainstream cigarette smoke interacts with aqueous media or physiological fluids. Some components of tobacco are involved in OS only when chemically modified by metabolic processes in vivo. Also, it is possible to distinguish between an oxidant from the direct action of the components of cigarette smoke and secondary antioxidants that occur as a reaction to inflammation resulting from smoking-related OS.

**RADICALS IN CIGARETTE TAR**

**Free Radicals (FRs)**

Studies have shown that the FRs in cigarette smoke originate not only from the combustion process but also from secondary reactions involving nitrogen oxide species (like nitric oxide [NO] and nitric dioxide [NO₂]) following smoke generation. These species are involved in the generation of oxygen-centered radicals via the addition of nitrogen dioxide to unsaturated compounds (i.e., reactive double bonds). This may lead to the generation of carbon-centered radicals that subsequently react with atmospheric oxygen to form oxygen-centered radicals (Wooten et al. 2006).
Mainstream tobacco smoke contains up to 700 ppm NO that is produced from nitrogen-containing compounds (like proteins and alkaloids) in tobacco. This high concentration of NO is partially responsible for the generation of FRs in cigarette smoke. There is also indirect evidence that NO₂ is involved in the generation of other radical species. By spin trapping the gas-phase FRs, the oxidation products derived from the corresponding spin trap can be clearly seen by electron paramagnetic resonance (EPR) spectroscopy (Chalmers 1999).

Oxygen-centered FRs such as alkoxyls and peroxyls have also been identified in cigarette smoke by spin trapping, or by using a nonreductive scavenging method. However, the EPR spectra for O-centered radicals in the literature are usually weak and complex because they are mixed with C-centered radicals, which are formed first and are more stable. By employing 5-diethoxyphosphoryl-5-methyl-1-pyrroline-N-oxide (DEPMPO), however, the lifetime of peroxyl radicals is increased by >15 times (Zuo et al. 2014). In the literature, N-t-butyl-α-phenylnitrone and 5,5-dimethyl-1-pyrroline-N-oxide have also been used as spin traps in cigarette smoke studies, although they are less suitable for O-centered radicals compared with DEPMPO. This work investigated some of the FRs in mainstream cigarette smoke in both the gas and particulate phases by combining spin-trapping techniques with EPR spectroscopy (Valavanidis et al. 2009).

Hydrogen peroxide is a naturally occurring by-product of OS, formed during normal breathing in living organisms by the catalytic disproportionation of superoxide by superoxide dismutase (SOD). Another enzyme, catalase, is very effective in converting H₂O₂ into “harmless products, water and molecular oxygen” (Wooten et al. 2006). If this cellular defense mechanism is overwhelmed, excess H₂O₂ can undergo disproportionation through the Fenton reaction to form hydroxyl radicals. The hydroxyl radicals from H₂O₂ are highly oxidizing species and are well known to cause oxidative damage to essential biomolecules, including DNA. H₂O₂ has been found in ACT and unbuffered aqueous solutions of catechin, a component of tobacco abundant in both ACT and total particulate matter (TPM). H₂O₂ concentration in smoke condensate has been shown to increase with age, temperature, and pH. H₂O₂ found in cigarette smoke and H₂O₂ formed as a physiological response to smoke constituents are considered to be a source of OS and/or damage to smokers.

Quinones
Quinones are easily formed by components of cigarette smoke that can undergo autoxidation. The toxicology of kinins has been studied extensively. Generally, the toxicity of quinones is believed to occur by two mechanisms: the mechanism of redox cycling, which produces excess ROS as by-products, and the formation of covalent bonds with the basic biological molecules (especially molecules containing thiol groups). Both mechanisms may contribute to the occurrence of OS (Valavanidis et al. 2009).

Trace Heavy Metals
Tobacco plants carry the metal ions from the soil through the roots into the sheets. Trace amounts of heavy metals are accumulated on the sheets, and they are known to transfer in trace amounts from the treated and processed sheets to the inhaled
tobacco smoke. These metals include cadmium, lead, mercury, arsenic, iron, copper, chromium, nickel, and selenium. Both redox-active and redox-inactive metals could potentially cause an increase in ROS in smokers (Valavanidis et al. 2009).

**Radicals in Gas Phase**

The gas phase of cigarette smoke contains high concentrations of inorganic gases ($O_2$, $N_2$, CO, NO, HCN, $H_2S$, and $NH_3$), as well as various alkanes, alkenes, alcohols, and saturated and unsaturated aldehydes as volatile products of organic combustion. More specifically, the main gas-phase constituents are oxidative radicals, peroxynitrite, and glutathione.

**Oxidative Radicals**

Cigarette smoke contains abundant oxidants in the gas vapor. Even if the NO is from the same root, it is neither reactive nor particularly toxic. NO combines slowly with molecular oxygen in the air (for a period of seconds) to form the toxic oxidant and nitrating agent NO$_2$. According to a proposed mechanism, NO$_2$ reacts rapidly with other smoke constituents, such as isoprene and butadiene, to form nitrosocarbon-centered radicals (Pryor et al. 1983). Atoms in the molecule are generally very reactive species. The gaseous-phase carbon in the molecule in tobacco reacts instantaneously with molecular oxygen to form peroxyl radicals that react with the NO gas phase of the smoke to form alkoxy radicals and NO$_2$, thus creating a continuous cycle. There are two interesting effects of the above reaction scheme (Jakob and Reichmann 2013): (a) the oxidizing radicals in cigarette smoke are formed by reactions between the gas-phase constituents, and not primarily by pyrolysis or combustion reactions in the burning tobacco, and (b) the radicals collected inside an enclosed container of gas-phase smoke (Siasos et al. 2014) increase until the supply of NO· is depleted, persisting for several minutes.

**Peroxynitrite**

Peroxynitrite RNS is formed by the reaction of NO and superoxide. Peroxynitrite is itself an FR, which is derived from two FRs, but it is also a strong oxidant that has been shown to induce failure in key biomolecules in physiological media. Peroxynitrite has been recognized as an OS-inducing compound in aqueous fractions of cigarette smoke. After depletion of the intracellular reduced glutathione (GSH) content with electrophilic aldehydes, peroxynitrite interferes with specific target molecules, resulting in the activation of the stress associated with signal transduction and gene expression in cells treated with cigarette smoke in vitro (Wooten et al. 2006).

**Glutathione Depletion**

Glutathione is a tripeptide composed of glutamate, cysteine, and glycine, and is synthesized and utilized in every organ of the body. It is abundant in the cytoplasm, nuclei, and mitochondria, and is the main water-soluble antioxidant in these cell compartments in millimolar concentrations. Amendments of intracellular GSH with electrophiles in the vapor phase of cigarette smoke were first reported decades before
it was reported that the concentration of protein sulfhydryl groups in plasma is about 500 μM. After exposure to cigarette smoke, the concentration of protein sulfhydryl groups decreased by about 60%. γ-Glutamylcysteine ligase is the rate-limiting enzyme involved in GSH synthesis, and its expression has been shown to be induced in response to cigarette smoke (Min et al. 2011). Cigarette smoke exposures evoke a powerful GSH adaptive response in the lung and systemically.

**EFFECTS OF CIGARETTE SMOKE ON OS IN HUMANS**

The acute effects of smoking (ACS) on OS markers have been mainly analyzed in exhaled air, bronchoalveolar lavage (BAL), and blood. Most studies have shown a direct increase in OS after ACS; however, in several studies, smoking had no effect (Wooten et al. 2006). Few studies have described the results of ACS in oxidative markers in exhaled breath condensate and air. In breath, the condensate 8-isoprostane, a product of lipid peroxidation, increased 15 min after ACS, and hydrogen peroxide increased 30 min after exposure. Smoke exhaled nitric oxide (eNO) was increased at 1 and 10 min but decreased 5 min after ACS in another study. This inconsistency probably reflects differences in eNO measurements and characteristics of individuals. No difference was observed in eNO at 15, 30, and 90 min after smoking. Breath condensate nitrate levels increased at 30 min after ACS; however, nitrite and nitrotyrosine levels did not change.

Another study has investigated the effects of smoking on markers of OS in BAL, indicating increased superoxide release from BAL fluid (Balf) leukocytes and increased Trolox equivalent antioxidant capacity (TEAC). The latter surprising result can be explained by the fact that the studied subjects were all chronic smokers already associated with high levels of Balf TEAC. No difference was found in intracellular GSH and oxidized glutathione (GSSG) in leukocytes, and thiobarbituric acid reactive substances (TBARS) in Balf and epithelial lining fluid.

Regarding peripheral blood, nitrate, nitrite, and cysteine levels were depressed for a short time just after smoking one cigarette (van der Vaart et al. 2004). No difference was observed in the production of reactive oxygen intermediates from neutrophils. Unlike in Balf, TBARS increased in plasma and plasma TEAC decreased 1 h after smoking. Levels of F2-isoprostane, another product of lipid peroxidation, showed no change in plasma, possibly because all subjects in this study were chronic smokers and already have high F2-isoprostane levels.

Generally, acute smoking increases markers of OS in all experimental models—human, animal, and in vitro (Rahal et al. 2014). NO and GSH are the only two parameters that have been investigated in all models. NO and its related substances increase within 24 h after smoke exposure. The GSH/GSSG ratio, reflecting the vital balance between oxidants and protecting antioxidants, decreased following acute smoke exposure in both animal and in vitro studies but not in the single study published in humans. This discrepancy can be explained by differences in species, smoke dose, or compartment (human Balf vs. animal lung homogenate).

Interestingly, ACS even results in damage of fatty acids in cell membranes, as measured by an increase in degradation products of lipid peroxidation in humans (exhaled air and plasma) and animals (Balf and lung tissue). No in vitro studies
investigating the acute smoke effects on lipid peroxidation products have been found. Because different time points within 24 h have been studied, it is possible to observe a time response of OS (van der Vaart et al. 2004). In humans, all oxidative markers increase within the first hour after ACS and most markers returned to normal within 90 min. Exhaled air is the first compartment in which an increase in OS markers can be observed, followed by BALF and blood. In animals, most markers of OS change in the first 6 h after ACS and return to normal within 24 h. In all compartments (lung tissue, BALF, and blood), GSH or its derivatives are depressed in the same period, suggesting a generalized response to ACS.

As in humans, only a few time points have been studied in in vitro models. The initial depletion of GSH after ACS appeared to be followed by an increase in GSH 24 h later, suggesting a protective mechanism of cells against OS from smoke. The importance of the GSH/GSSG balance was shown in several studies. When GSH was added to the experiment, the OS and inflammatory response induced by cigarette smoke could be prevented. In summary, smoking immediately increases markers of OS in all models and even results in damage to the cell membrane.

**INTERRELATIONSHIP BETWEEN SMOKING AND ANTIOXIDANT INTAKE**

**DIETARY ANTIOXIDANTS AND SMOKING**

A great number of epidemiological studies state that the consumption of antioxidant-rich diets (fruits and vegetables) could reduce the risk of developing human degenerative diseases, by possibly protecting the organism more efficiently against OS (Da Costa et al. 2012). The most acceptable explanation was the presence of antioxidant nutrients, including vitamin C and E, carotenoids, flavonoids, selenium, etc., which protect against oxidative damage to the DNA, lipids, and proteins. Antioxidants are synthetic or natural substances, in low concentrations compared with the biomolecules that they should protect. Their protective role is provided by their reaction with ROS and inhibition of the oxidation chain reactions, reducing their accumulation and finally limiting the harmful effects of FRs (Romero et al. 2013). The human defense against OS includes endogenous and exogenous antioxidants. Endogenous antioxidants or endogenous radical scavengers, such as glutathione and coenzyme Q, are produced by the cell itself; however, the endogenous production is usually insufficient to inhibit OS (Kinnula 2005, Rahman et al. 2006). Exogenous antioxidants, including nutrients and phytochemicals entering the organism through the diet (found in specific foods) or through supplements with antioxidant formulations and cofactors such as copper, zinc, manganese, iron, and selenium, can strengthen the organism and help combat diseases.

Endogenous and exogenous antioxidants play an important role in the regulation of ROS in a physiological manner (Table 6.1). In special conditions such as excessive FR production, their synergistic effect may be insufficient to prevent oxidative damage (Figure 6.1). Furthermore, it is important to state that each person has a different capacity to defend against ROS and OS, which depends on the function of endogenous and exogenous antioxidant systems, their exposure to internal and external
### TABLE 6.1
Examples of Endogenous and Exogenous (Dietary) Antioxidants

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Endogenous Antioxidants</th>
<th>Exogenous (Dietary) Antioxidants</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Enzymatic antioxidants</td>
<td>Vitamins</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Superoxide dismutase (SOD)</td>
<td>• C (ascorbic acid)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Glutathione peroxidase (GPx)</td>
<td>• E (tocopherol, tocotrienols)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Glutathione reductase (GRx)</td>
<td>Carotenoids</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Catalase (CAT)</td>
<td>• β-Carotene</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Metabolic antioxidants (nonenzymatic)</td>
<td>Zeaxanthin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Glutathione</td>
<td>• Lutein</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Lipoic acid</td>
<td>• Lycopene</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Uric acid</td>
<td>• β-Cryptoxanthin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Bilirubin</td>
<td>Trace elements</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Melatonin</td>
<td>• Selenium</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• l-Arginine</td>
<td>• Zinc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Coenzyme Q&lt;sub&gt;10&lt;/sub&gt;</td>
<td>Flavonols</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Metal-chelating proteins</td>
<td>• Quercetin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>• Transferrin</td>
<td>• Kaempferol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Myricetin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Phenolic acids</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Chlorogenic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Gallic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Caffeic acid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Flavanols</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Proanthocyanidins</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Catechins</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Antocyanidins</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Cyanidin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Pelargonidin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Isoflavones</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Genistein</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Daidzein</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Glycitein</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Flavanones</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Naringenin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Eriodictyol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Hesperetin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Flavones</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Luteolin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>• Apigenen</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

stimuli (e.g., inflammation and smoking), and finally genetic variation (Comandini et al. 2010). The interaction of these factors may affect an individual’s ability to manage OS and determine antioxidant status.

**Vitamins**

**Vitamin C**

Vitamin C, also known as ascorbic acid or ascorbate, is the primary and one of the most abundant water-soluble dietary antioxidants. Experimental and epidemiological evidence suggests that vitamin C is a powerful antioxidant, both *in vivo* and *in vitro*, in biological systems (Da Costa et al. 2012, Kelly 2003). Its health benefits refer to its anticarcinogenic, immunoregulatory, anti-inflammatory, and neuroprotective effects. It also plays an important physiological role as an electron donor, which explains its ability to neutralize FRs. Furthermore, it is an effective scavenger of the superoxide anion ($O_2^-$), singlet oxygen ($^1O_2$), and hydroxyl radicals (OH⁻), and it protects lipids, proteins, and DNA from oxidative damage. However, vitamin C is
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

not an effective scavenger or neutralizer of hydrogen peroxide ($H_2O_2$) and may play an important role as a prooxidant in combination with redox-active metals such as iron (Romero et al. 2013). Vitamin C reacts with ROS and RNS to synthesize semi-dehydroascorbate (ascorbate FR) and dehydroascorbate, which are reduced back to ascorbate by the actions of glutathione, NADH-dependent reductase enzymes, or thioredoxin. Vitamin C also participates in the regeneration of $\alpha$-tocopherol from the $\alpha$-tocopherol radical. The daily recommended doses of ascorbic acid are 75 mg/day (for women) and 90 mg/day (for men). In the human body, the availability of ascorbic acid is between 1.2 and 2 g (20 mg/kg body weight) and its half-life ranges from 10 to 20 days.

**Vitamin E**

Vitamin E ($\alpha$, $\beta$, $\gamma$, and $\delta$ tocopherols and $\alpha$, $\beta$, $\gamma$, and $\delta$ tocotrienols), particularly $\alpha$-tocopherol, acts as an intra- and extracellular liposoluble antioxidant; since it is a lipid-soluble molecule, its antioxidant functions are important in the protection of membrane lipids against peroxidation. Vitamin E is a chain-breaking antioxidant that interrupts radical chain reactions produced by the lipid peroxy radicals (LOO$^-$), thus preventing the propagation of damage to the biological membranes that give rise to FRs (Da Costa et al. 2012). Additionally, it directly scavenges superoxide radicals and singlet oxygen, which are thought to be initiators of oxidation reactions. Its antioxidant activity is attributed to its chromanol rings, capable of donating hydrogen to ROS. In particular, the tocopherols concentrate on protecting the polyunsaturated fatty acids of cell membrane phospholipids from cellular peroxidation, maintaining the integrity of biological membranes and other reactive compounds (e.g., vitamins A and C) from oxidative damage. It also inhibits the peroxidation of low-density lipoproteins (LDLs), oxidizes the oxygen singlet, neutralizes peroxides, and captures the superoxide anion, converting it into less reactive forms (Kelly 2002a). In addition, tocopherols play an important role in cell respiration and in DNA and coenzyme Q biosynthesis. Regarding the dietary requirements of vitamin E, it is important to state that 1 international unit (IU) vitamin E is equal to 1 mg $\alpha$-tocopherol, and 1 IU vitamin E is equal to 0.67 mg vitamin E. In adults specifically, the minimum daily requirement for vitamin E is 15 mg/day, and the range between 200 and 600 mg/day is safe as it would not cause any disorder (Romero et al. 2013).

**Vitamin A and Non–Provitamin A Carotenoids**

Vitamin A is a family of essential liposoluble compounds, named retinoids, including retinol, retinal, retinoic acid, and retinyl esters, which have a structural relationship and share their biological activity (Da Costa et al. 2012). In the human diet, the two different forms of vitamin A that are available are the preformed vitamin A (retinol and its esterified form, retinyl ester) and provitamin A carotenoids ($\beta$-carotene [the most important form], $\alpha$-carotene, and $\beta$-cryptoxanthin) (National Institutes of Health 2013). The most well-studied function of carotenoids is their role as precursors for vitamin A. This characterization applies only to the carotenes and cryptoxanthins, as lutein, zeaxanthin, and lycopene cannot be converted to retinol and are known as non–provitamin A carotenoids. Both retinyl esters and provitamin
A carotenoids are metabolized intracellularly to retinol, which is oxidized to retinal and then to retinoic acid, the active forms of vitamin A, to exert the vitamin’s important biological functions.

Many roles have been proposed for carotenoids, including inhibition of tumor growth, protection against genotoxicity, and modulation of the immune system (Kelly 2002b). Vitamin A and carotenoids are characterized as antioxidant vitamins and are effective FR scavengers, inhibiting the activity of FR, protecting the DNA from their mutagenic action, and thus preventing cellular aging. Their oxygen sensitivity is due to the large amount of double loops present in their structure.

As carotenoids are lipid soluble, their antioxidant properties may be particularly important for protection of lipids and may work synergistically with vitamin E to prevent lipid peroxidation. Their bioavailability increases with the presence of vitamin E and other antioxidants. Carotenoids may also play an important role in the protection of DNA damage from ROS attack while additionally modulating DNA repair mechanisms. Particularly for lycopene, which is a non–provitamin A carotenoid (not converted into vitamin A in the human body), evidence supports their very high antioxidant properties. High consumption of lycopene has been related with the prevention of some cancer types, specifically that of the prostate (Romero et al. 2013).

Flavonoids

Flavonoids belong to an aromatic group, with heterocyclic pigments that contain oxygen, which can be found among plants and especially the majority of yellow, red, and blue fruits (Da Costa et al. 2012). Several properties have been attributed to flavonoids, such as anti-inflammatory, antimicrobial, antithrombotic, antiallergic, antitumor, anticarcinogenic, and antioxidant properties. The following are examples of flavonoids:

1. Elegiac acid
2. Anthocyanidines
3. Catechins
4. Citroflavonoids
5. Isoflavonoids, such as genestein and daidzein
6. Kaempferol
7. Proanthocyanidines

Flavonoids are easily oxidized substances; for this reason, a fundamental characteristic of these substances responsible for many of their beneficial effects is their antioxidant capacity (Braun et al. 2011). Quercetin protects primary human osteoblasts exposed to cigarette smoke. Quercetins are characterized by their low toxicity, and they exert a protector effect of the vascular wall. They can also inhibit lipid peroxidation, have antimutagenic effects, and possess the capacity to inhibit diverse enzymes. The antioxidant function of flavonoids relies mainly on their capacity to sequester FRs; chelate transition metals such as Fe$^{2+}$, Cu$^{2+}$, or Zn$^{2+}$; impede the catalytic actions of FR; and they also act by inhibiting the enzyme systems related with vascular functionality (Braun et al. 2011, Romero et al. 2013). Furthermore, it has
been suggested that they also indirectly inhibit oxidative pathways, such as phospho-
lipase A2, while stimulating others with recognized antioxidant properties, such as
catalase and SOD.
Among the >4000 varieties of flavonoids, quercetin is the natural flavonoid widely
distributed in a healthy human diet that exerts an effective antioxidant function. It is
present in five times higher amounts than vitamins A and C, and additionally is also
hydrophilic like vitamin C. Flavonoids have been shown to exert antioxidant capacity
by reducing OS-dependent damage and ROS formation, not only in vitro (e.g., ethanol-
treated primary human hepatocytes) but also in vivo in rats exposed to methyl-mercury.
Furthermore, recent studies have shown that various flavonoids may positively influence
the negative effects of cigarette-associated tissue damage in humans (Braun et al. 2011).
Specifically, rutin (quercetin-3-β-d-rutinoside) has a synergic effect with all of the vita-
mins to which we have alluded. Ascorbic acid also reduces the oxidation of quercetin,
allowing the flavonoids to maintain their functions for a longer time. Quercetin also pro-
tects vitamin E from oxidation. The flavonoids remove reactive oxygen, especially in
the form of SOD, hydroxyl radicals, hydroperoxides, and lipid peroxides, inhibiting the
harmful effects of these compounds on cells.
Some flavonoids, such as the anthocyanidines, cause low oxidation potentials (EP/2),
which allow them to reduce Fe^{3+} and Cu^{2+}, and thus they undergo autooxidation or
become involved in the redox recycling pathway; acting in this manner, they work as
pro-oxidant agents (Da Costa et al. 2012). Another potential mechanism is the autooxida-
tion of the aroxyl radical and generation of the superoxide anion (O_2^-) that becomes the
harmful hydroxyl radical (HO). The determinant of the antioxidant or prooxidant charac-
ter is the redox stability/lability of the radical compound that forms a part of the original
flavonoid. The prooxidant actions are exerted when the flavonoid doses are very high.

Minerals and Trace Elements
Minerals and trace elements such as copper, manganese, selenium, zinc, and iron
may exert antioxidant properties. These substances act as potent antioxidant in a
variety of metabolic processes and pathways in the human body (Da Costa et al.
2012).

Zinc
Zinc is a trace element that takes part in >200 enzymatic reactions. In case of defi-
cency, there is an increase in the production of oxidant species and OS (Romero et
al. 2013).

Copper
Copper is a mineral that acts as an antioxidant through its participation in functions
of the enzyme SOD, which eliminates the superoxide anion. Its antioxidant effect is
exerted through the protection of cells from the toxic effects of FR and the facilita-
tion of calcium and phosphorous fixation (Da Costa et al. 2012).

Selenium
Selenium is a trace element that is involved in the process of the synthesis of enzymes
related with oxidative function, including glutathione peroxidase. This enzyme
eliminates peroxide groups such as oxygen peroxide. Selenium is attached to proteins, forming the denominated selenoproteins. With this action, it contributes to the prevention of cell damage (Da Costa et al. 2012).

**Iron**

Iron takes part in the organism’s antioxidant defense processes, as it intervenes in the elimination of the peroxide groups. Furthermore, its ability to change valence with ease (2+/3+) means that it can also be involved in the formation of FRs (Da Costa et al. 2012).

**Interaction of Smoking and Dietary Antioxidants**

The reviewed literature proposes that smokers have lower circulating concentrations of many micronutrients, including ascorbic acid, β-carotene, α-carotene, and crypto-xanthin (Vardavas et al. 2008). There is a complex relationship between smoking and the circulating concentrations of micronutrients, and scientific evidence is conflicting concerning the antioxidant capacity of certain micronutrients, e.g., β-carotene. Taking into consideration that antioxidants may act as potential prooxidants, possible lower concentrations of antioxidants in smokers compared with nonsmokers may be a defensive adaptation to the pro-inflammatory environment in smokers’ tissues. Furthermore, another explanation for these disparities may be the differences in dietary intakes.

**Case of Natural Antioxidants**

**Vitamin C**

A great number of studies have shown that smoking reduces the plasma vitamin C level (Alberg 2002, Kelly 2003, Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007). Specifically, one study that investigated the relationship between smoking status and serum and dietary micronutrient concentrations revealed that current smoking status affected the dietary nutrient intake (lower dietary intake) of vitamin C, but not of vitamin A and E (Vardavas et al. 2008). Epidemiological evidence also supports the idea that low-plasma vitamin C is a risk factor for coronary heart disease (May 2000, Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007). The early and more recent research has suggested that adverse changes in the intake, absorption, transport, utilization, turnover, and excretion of vitamin C are associated with exposure to cigarette smoke. Vitamin C status may also play a role in modulating the action and metabolism of components of smoke and will be discussed in the following sections (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007).

Regarding the dietary intake of vitamin C and its interrelation with blood concentrations, some studies propose that the low concentrations of circulating vitamin C in smokers could be explained from alterations in the metabolism of this vitamin. Other studies suggest that this is due to low dietary intake of the nutrient. Most of the studies have shown that plasma and leukocyte concentrations of vitamin C are lower in smokers than in nonsmokers. Furthermore, it is stated that smokers have a nicotine-induced decrease in the efficiency of intestinal absorption, a decreased urinary excretion rate, and a higher metabolic turnover of vitamin C. Although
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

Evidence suggests that administration of vitamin C can result in decreases in markers of OS, a recommended dietary allowance derived from a direct antioxidant function of vitamin C could not be calculated and proposed. This is due to the lack of a quantitative relationship between any antioxidant function and a health-related endpoint (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007). Concerning the turnover of vitamin C, a great number of studies support the idea that there is increased turnover in response to the high and sustained oxidant load from smoking.

**Vitamin E**

In regard to vitamin E status, \( \alpha \)-tocopherol concentrations usually do not differ in the serum of smokers and nonsmokers, in contrast to \( \beta \)-carotene and vitamin C, which are lower in cigarette smokers (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007). Older smokers may also have lower blood vitamin E concentrations than younger smokers (Alberg 2002). In a cohort analysis study, it was found that higher \( \alpha \)-tocopherol concentrations may be protective against pancreatic carcinogenesis in male smokers (Stolzenberg et al. 2009). Furthermore, in one study, \( \alpha \)-tocopherol concentration was negatively correlated with a smoking index (cigarettes/day \( \times \) years of smoking). Pharmacokinetic data from different studies suggest that \( \alpha \)-tocopherol metabolism might differ between smokers and nonsmokers (Bruno and Maret 2005).

With respect to the dietary intake of vitamin E, it is not clear whether the increase in vitamin E turnover is due to smoking-induced inflammatory changes or OS. It is also proposed that if the turnover of vitamin E is faster in smokers than in nonsmokers and, if plasma concentrations are not adversely affected in smokers, the intake of vitamin E for smokers in industrialized countries should be adequate enough to enable them to deal with the added oxidative smoking-induced stress. Nicotine in cigarettes could cause the difference in vitamin E intake, which has an influence on taste and appetite (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007). However, the effects of smoking on appetite do not affect the intake of vitamin E–containing foods in the way and extent that smoking influences the intake of carotene and vitamin C.

**Vitamin A and Non–Provitamin A Carotenoids**

The serum retinol concentrations in smokers are usually similar to those of nonsmokers. This suggests that the inflammation associated with smoking is not sufficient to disturb the normal homeostatic control of retinol in plasma. Also, the evidence on total dietary intake of vitamin A of smokers appears to be inconsistent, suggesting the need for further study (Alberg 2002, Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007).

With respect to the \( \beta \)-carotene status of cigarette smokers and comparison of plasma/serum concentrations of \( \beta \)-carotene between heavy smokers (\( \geq 20 \) cigarettes/day or \( \geq 10 \) years of smoking) and nonsmokers, the data revealed lower plasma \( \beta \)-carotene concentrations in smokers than in nonsmokers. The data also revealed that in heavy smokers, the increase in plasma \( \beta \)-carotene concentrations associated with higher intakes was smaller than in nonsmokers or light smokers (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007).

Regarding the dietary intake of \( \beta \)-carotene and its relationship with blood concentrations and disease, scientific evidence has shown that the concentration of plasma
β-carotene is mainly determined by dietary intake. Epidemiological evidence also proposes that cigarette smokers consume less fruit and vegetables than nonsmokers. Low plasma β-carotene concentrations commonly found in smokers suggest that higher intakes of dietary carotenoids are probably needed to achieve optimal concentrations of plasma carotenoids in this population (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007). In the case of carotenoids other than β-carotene, there are only small amounts in the diet and blood, and differences in intakes of vegetables and fruits may obscure the effects of smoking on both diet and blood concentrations.

Concerning lycopene, the major carotenoid present in tomato, its consumption may prevent smoke-induced cell damage; however, the mechanisms are still unclear. Beneficial effects of tomato lycopene on the risk of smoke-related diseases, including cancer and cardiovascular injury, have been stated in epidemiological studies. However, the experimental basis for such health benefits is not fully understood (Alberg 2002).

**Flavonoids**

Results of meta-analyses of various studies revealed that total dietary flavonoids and several flavonoid subclasses were associated with reduced risks of smoking-related cancers (Hae and Jeongseon 2013). In only the case–control studies, flavones, flavanones, isoflavones, and flavonol quercetin (a natural flavonoid widely distributed in a healthy human diet) were inversely associated with the risk of smoking-related cancers. The beneficial effects of flavonoids on cancer risk were more prominent among smokers than nonsmokers. Although the protective effects of dietary flavonoids may differ by cancer site among the smoking-related cancers, the results of each flavonoid subclasses were similar. Total flavonols and flavonol quercetin may be the most powerful agents for smoking-induced carcinogenesis. Generally, it is proposed that smokers might benefit from a flavonoid-rich diet. Another study also found that quercetin might be used not only in supporting bone regeneration in smokers but also in strengthening the bone metabolism in different pathogenesis (Braun et al. 2011).

**Zinc**

The reported differences in serum zinc concentrations between smokers and nonsmokers can reflect the duration and amount of smoking exposure. In one study, it was found that plasma zinc concentrations were unaffected by smoking; however, CuZn–SOD activity was higher in smokers. In another study, it was found that mean serum zinc was significantly lower in the smoking group than in the nonsmokers. In this study, it was suggested that lower serum zinc concentrations could reduce the zinc available for incorporation into CuZn–SOD and increase the risk of oxidative damage (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007).

**Copper**

Serum ceruloplasmin concentrations and erythrocyte CuZn–SOD activity are the two main indices of copper status that can be influenced by smoking. Scientific evidence has revealed that CuZn–SOD activity is consistently higher in smokers than nonsmokers, and the increases may have been part of the body’s anti-inflammatory response to smoking. One explanation is that it has been shown to act as an acute-phase
protein with antioxidant and anti-inflammatory properties; however, it is not clear yet (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007).

**Selenium**

The relationship between smoking and selenium status has not been studied extensively, and generally, it was found that lower plasma concentrations are associated with increased cigarette use. Specifically, it has been suggested that the lower activity of erythrocyte GSHPx in smokers may occur due to the lower concentrations of plasma selenium. These low concentrations may be influenced by several other factors, such as the negative impact of cadmium, a toxic heavy metal found in tobacco, on the bioavailability of dietary selenium and the increased expression of inflammatory mediators such as interleukin-1 (IL-1), IL-2, IL-6, and IL-8 in response to smoking, which can have an effect on the concentrations of plasma selenium (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007). There is some evidence to suggest that the lower serum selenium concentrations are associated with inflammation.

**Iron**

There is scientific interest in the direction that high iron status may have an etiological role in cardiovascular disease (CVD) and various cancers, since iron can promote the formation of FRs. Smoking appears to affect iron homeostasis mainly by causing changes in blood hemoglobin concentration. Serum iron, transferrin receptor (TfR), and ferritin concentrations are unaffected by smoking except in pregnancy, where there is evidence of increased erythropoiesis. Increased erythropoiesis causes lower iron saturation of plasma transferrin and probably results in lowering of iron stores (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007).

**Case of Antioxidants in Supplementation Studies**

Although observational studies have provided support for the potential health benefits of antioxidants to smokers, we still have relatively little direct experimental evidence from randomized trials. In this section, we present data from supplementation studies with antioxidants, alone or in combination.

**Vitamin C Supplementation Studies**

Several studies have demonstrated that a moderately large dose of vitamin C prevents cigarette smoke–induced oxidative damage, inflammation, and apoptosis by reducing and thereby inactivating p-benzoquinone (p-BQ) (Archita et al. 2012). Other studies in humans have looked at the effect of vitamin C supplementation on the ability of oxidation of LDLs, which is a risk factor for CVD. However, the supplementation is often in combination with supplements of vitamin E or β-carotene. The study group in these studies includes smokers and nonsmokers, and a significant reduction in the ability of oxidation of LDLs has been revealed. However, because of the use of multiple nutrients in the supplements, it is difficult to clarify and quantify the contribution of vitamin C. Where vitamin C was the only given nutrient in supplement dose, some studies found no effect while others found a significant reduction
in the ability of oxidation of LDLs. The conclusion is that supplementing smokers with vitamin C might provide some protection against atherosclerosis; however, no biomarker can be related to any health endpoint.

**Vitamin E Supplementation Studies**

According to the results from the ATBC (Alpha-Tocopherol Beta-Carotene Cancer Prevention) study, no reduction in lung cancer or major coronary events was found in male smokers receiving \( \alpha \)-tocopherol. In another study, the HOPE (Heart Outcomes Prevention Evaluation) study, the subgroup analysis of data showed that vitamin E alone had no apparent effect on cardiovascular or myocardial infarction outcomes or deaths from coronary heart disease or stroke among smokers. In a meta-analysis studying the effects of vitamin E on myocardial infarction, stroke, or death from cardiovascular causes in smokers from four large trials: ATBC, CHAOS (Cambridge Heart Antioxidant Study), GISSI (Gruppo Italiano per lo Studio della Sopravvivenza nell’Infarto Miocardico), and HOPE, it was found that the overall relative risk (RR) was 0.97 (95% CI, 0.9–1.02) during a 4–6-year period of supplementation, and thus, there was little effect on the outcomes measured (Mondul et al. 2011). However, in another study, \( \gamma \)-tocopherol-rich supplementation in combination with smoking cessation improved vascular endothelial function (Mah et al. 2013).

**Non–Provitamin A Carotenoid Supplementation Studies**

Scientific evidence suggests that lycopene may be protective against smoke-induced cell damage and has an important role in inflammatory processes. The results of one study with 2 μM lycopene indicated that this non–provitamin A carotenoid prevented cigarette smoke extract–induced IL-8 production through the inactivation of nuclear factor-\( \kappa \)B (Rossella et al. 2014).

**Combined Antioxidant Supplementation Studies**

It has been stated that pharmacological interventions with nonselective antioxidants usually fail to be an effective strategy for the prevention and treatment of CVD caused by smoking; thus, a combined application of antioxidants may be needed (Bernhard and Wang 2007). Data from a study with combined \( \alpha \)-tocopherol and ascorbic acid supplementation showed protective effects against smoking-induced lung lesions in ferrets (Kim et al. 2012). Another study showed that oral supplementation (with commonly available antioxidants, vitamins, and omega-3 fatty acids) induced metabolomic changes in cigarette smokers, and these effects were different between smokers and nonsmokers (Spitale et al. 2012).

**Selenium Supplementation Studies**

Data from the Nutritional Prevention of Cancer Trial, a randomized clinical trial designed to evaluate the efficacy of selenium in preventing nonmelanoma skin cancer in the United States, stated that supplementation with 200 μg selenium daily was associated with a significantly lower risk of both total and prostate cancer incidence in former smokers; nonsignificantly lower risks were found in current and nonsmokers who were supplemented (Northrop-Clewes and Thurnham 2007).
CONCLUSION

It is increasingly evident that a good diet influences the development and treatment of diseases. Furthermore, epidemiological studies have shown the association between moderate consumption of certain foods and reduced incidence of various diseases. These observations have attracted considerable interest in studying the properties of substances inherent in the chemical composition of food. Among the characteristics of these substances is their antioxidant activity, associated with the elimination of FRs and therefore with the prevention of the early stages that can trigger degenerative diseases. In this regard, it is important to continue the study of dietary antioxidants concerning the activity they may have in human diseases, paying attention to the substances, primarily natural antioxidants of food, and the synthetic way to assess their protective effect on the body. Finally, a novel strategy for the prevention and treatment of diseases caused by smoking, relying on a combined application of antioxidants, substitution of important factors for human oxidant defense, and metal-detoxifying agents, may be proposed.

REFERENCES


Physical Exercise

Mustafa Atalay, Jani Lappalainen, Ayhan Korkmaz, and Chandan K. Sen

CONTENTS

Introduction ................................................................................................................. 103
Antioxidants and General Health .................................................................................. 104
Need for Antioxidant Supplementation for Physically Active Individuals ........... 104
Endogenous Antioxidants ............................................................................................... 106
   Glutathione ........................................................................................................ 106
   Lipoic Acid .......................................................................................................... 107
Exogenous Antioxidants ................................................................................................. 109
   Vitamins C and E .................................................................................................. 109
   Flavonoids ........................................................................................................... 110
Conclusions ..................................................................................................................... 111
References ...................................................................................................................... 111

INTRODUCTION

Physical exercise is a cornerstone of good health, and it also plays a key role in the primary prevention of lifestyle-related diseases. Generation of reactive oxygen species (ROS) is a constant process of normal cellular function. Oxidative stress, an imbalance of the generation of ROS and antioxidant defense capacity, and perturbation of redox control of cellular events, is closely related to physiological aging and the pathophysiology of a wide range of diseases (Radak et al. 2013; Sen and Packer 2000). During heavy physical exercise, the oxygen flux to active skeletal muscles is remarkably increased. Such acceleration in the oxidative metabolism is associated with increased production of ROS that are hazardous to living organisms. Oxidative insult is not only mediated by macromolecular oxidative damage but also through the disruption of the cellular redox homeostasis. At moderate concentrations, however, ROS and other related reactive molecules play an important role in the regulation of cellular signaling. ROS act as secondary messengers to control a variety of vital processes. Therefore, many of the ROS-mediated responses protect against oxidative and metabolic stress and constitute a “redox homeostasis” (Sen 2001).

In biological systems, a variety of endogenous antioxidants have evolved to cope with oxidative stress, acting in concert to quench ROS and to maintain redox homoeostasis and tissue protection. This synergism between several endogenous and dietary antioxidants is essential for an effective protection. Although no solid scientific evidence exists on the benefits of antioxidant supplementations to exercise
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

performance, multivitamins are widely used among athletes in hope that these agents may be effective (Atalay et al. 2006). The aim of this chapter is to briefly discuss the role of endogenous and exogenous antioxidants on physical exercise and human performance. Specifically, we will focus on the need, advantages, and disadvantages of antioxidant supplements for the physically active population and give a special emphasis on thiol antioxidants, which play a key role in cellular redox regulation.

ANTIOXIDANTS AND GENERAL HEALTH

There is a general consensus in the mechanistic and epidemiologic studies that an adequate and balanced intake of dietary antioxidants prevents the formation of ROS and contributes to lowering the risk of several common diseases. The frequent use of natural sources of antioxidant nutrients in the Mediterranean diet, together with unsaturated fats, low proportion of simple sugars, and high content of dietary fibers, appear to account for a lower risk of certain types of cancer as well as chronic heart disease (Castro-Quezada et al. 2014). Epidemiological evidence suggests protection of cardiovascular disease by dietary intake of flavonoids (Basu et al. 2010). Although several epidemiological studies have pointed out an inverse association between dietary intake of vitamin C, vitamin E, and β-carotene and cardiovascular disease (Whayne and Maulik 2012), the overall results of published trials of vitamin E and β-carotene supplementation have failed to confirm any protective effect on mortality. In agreement with previous reports, a meta-analysis of 68 randomized antioxidant supplement trials (a total of 232,606 human participants) concluded that dietary supplementation with β-carotene, vitamin A, and vitamin E above the recommended daily allowance (RDA) does not improve health outcomes and may increase mortality (Bjelakovic et al. 2007). In contrast, a recent meta-analysis of 15 trials reporting data on 188,209 participants indicated that antioxidant vitamin supplementation as compared with placebo did not provide any overall protection against major cardiovascular events (Ye et al. 2013). Therefore, in contrast to the benefits of adequate antioxidant intake through a balanced and healthy diet, the use of antioxidant supplements may even exert a negative impact on general health.

NEED FOR ANTIOXIDANT SUPPLEMENTATION FOR PHYSICALLY ACTIVE INDIVIDUALS

It is a common practice for athletes to use antioxidant supplements with the notion that they prevent the deleterious effects of exercise-induced oxidative stress, hasten the recovery of muscle function, and improve performance (Atalay et al. 2006; Peternelj and Coombes 2011). Athletes may have ambiguous perceptions and receive misinformation about antioxidant supplementation in the public press: most of the physically active persons believe that they may have higher requirements of antioxidants than those who are sedentary. Therefore, physically active persons are more likely to use diverse antioxidant supplements compared with the overall prevalence in the general population (Rock 2007). In a recent study, 30% of athletes were reported to use more than two supplements (Tscholl et al. 2010). Most surprisingly, among elite
athletes aged 12 to 21 years, the average supplement use was even higher than what was observed in adult athletes with, on an average, 2.96 products used (Dascombe et al. 2010). Although a supplement may contain a dosage close to the RDA, the use of multiple supplements may result in cumulative, and sometimes an excess, intake of one or more nutrients. Despite the frequent use of antioxidant supplements among the physically active population, until now there has been no convincing scientific evidence to prove the presumption that antioxidant supplementations enhance sport performance, increase the health benefits of exercise, or decrease sports injuries. Furthermore, the obtained results are conflicting, and because of the diverse structure and biological effects of the antioxidant compounds, generalizing any individual supplementation result to all antioxidant supplements may be problematic. The reasons behind the null findings or inconsistent results among the studies employing simultaneous exercise and supplementation interventions could be explained by several factors: differences in exercise protocols; characteristics of the subject population, including sex, age, prior training, and physical activity status; dosage, form, duration, and timing of the supplementation; and the method used to assess the outcomes of the intervention.

Up until now, there has been no solid evidence in the literature demonstrating a higher need for antioxidants in athletes. Most of the nutrition surveys in the United States indicate that athletes have adequate intake of vitamin C. The vitamin C consumption for male athletes ranges from 95 to 520 mg/day, whereas the consumption range for females is from 55 to 230 mg/day (Lukaski 2004), while the current dietary reference intakes (DRIs) of vitamin C are 90 mg/day for males and 75 mg/dL for females of different adult age groups (U.S. Department of Health and Human Services and the U.S. Department of Agriculture 2010). However, inadequate intake of vitamin C in certain athlete groups involved with heavy training load and exposed to physiologic stressors, including infection, cigarette smoke, high altitude, and extreme environmental temperatures, increase requirements for vitamin C (Lukaski 2004). Nonetheless, there has not been any solid evidence to support the idea that regular exercise increases the requirement for vitamin C in athletes (Peake 2003), and plasma vitamin C levels of athletes are usually within the normal ranges. Only a small fraction of athletes have plasma vitamin C values less than the lower limits or at the lower end of the range of normal values (Lukaski 2004). Regarding the vitamin E levels according to the National Health and Nutrition Examination Survey III (NHANES III) (Ford and Sowell 1999), mean intakes of α-tocopherol of the U.S. population meet and probably exceed the RDA of 15 mg/day when corrections are applied for underreporting of food intake. Although physically active people generally consume vitamin E within the limits of DRI or higher (Economos et al. 1993), an early study showed that vitamin E intake was greater among athletes than sedentary people (Guilland et al. 1989). Nevertheless, a certain group of athletes having limitation of their food intake for esthetical purposes or competitive limitations may have inadequate intake of vitamin E (Guilland et al. 1989; Lukaski 2004). Although physical activity and increased intake of polyunsaturated fatty acids may induce oxidative stress and increase the need for vitamin E, its deficiency is rare among the physically active population and athletes consuming balanced diets.
ENDOGENOUS ANTIOXIDANTS

Glutathione

The endogenous thiols, specifically glutathione (GSH), play a central role in the antioxidant defenses that control cellular events and regulate protection against oxidative stress (Radak et al. 2013), a condition that alters normal redox control of cellular signaling, more specifically by disruption of thiol redox circuits (Jones 2006). In addition to its central role in supporting a large network of antioxidant defense, GSH has various biological functions, including regulation of receptors, enzyme activity, short-term storage of cysteine, protein structure, cell growth, proliferation, apoptosis, transcription factors, and ultimately redox-sensitive signal transduction (Sen 2000).

Glutathione (L-γ-glutamyl-L-cysteinylglycine) is the predominant intracellular thiol. GSH plays an essential role in antioxidant protection and provides an appropriate reducing milieu inside the cell directly, and also by regenerating crucial exogenous antioxidants such as vitamins E and C from their respective oxidized forms (Radak et al. 2013). During strenuous physical exercise where the oxygen consumption is increased many fold, when ROS is detoxified, GSH is oxidized, and, as a consequence, the disulfide glutathione (GSSG) accumulates. The balance of oxidized to reduced glutathione (GSSG/GSH) acts as a “redox control node” to regulate “sulfur switches” for responses to acute exercise-induced oxidative stress, and also to develop adaptations of various defense mechanisms during regular physical training.

GSH can either directly scavenge ROS, or enzymatically via GSH peroxidases (GSHPx) and GSH transhydrogenases, while GSH itself is oxidized to GSSG. Intracellular GSSG, thus formed, may be reduced back to GSH by GSSG reductase, or released to the extracellular compartment (Sen 2000). Most of the GSHPx, but not all, are selenium dependent. Because selenium is a cofactor of most of the subtypes of GSHPx, it has gained considerable attention as a key antioxidant. Nevertheless, one has to keep in mind that selenium itself is not a potent antioxidant but only a component of GSH-dependent antioxidant defense. Supplementation of selenium and other trace minerals is not generally necessary in well-nourished populations; however, possible deficiencies of selenium should be avoided.

GSH is synthesized in the liver and also in skeletal muscle; however, intact GSH is usually not transportable to intracellular compartments, and therefore, strategies to increase tissue GSH levels through various administration protocols have ended in failures. Furthermore, data on the role of endogenous glutathione on exercise performance, especially for the endurance capacity, are limited. In an early work of our group, we investigated the relative role of exogenous GSH and N-acetylcysteine (NAC), as well as endogenous GSH, on exercise-induced oxidative stress and exercise performance in rats. Intraperitoneal administration of GSH neither affected tissue GSH levels nor reduced oxidative stress. Furthermore, GSH and NAC administration did not influence exercise performance measured as time to exhaustion during treadmill running. In contrast, GSH depletion in rats decreased endurance time to exhaustion by half with concomitant increase of oxidative stress in all the tissues examined (Sen et al. 1994). Although there is a controversial report in the literature regarding the impact of GSH deficiency on prolonged swimming performance in
mice (Leeuwenburgh and Ji 1995), one may still postulate that endogenous GSH not only plays a critical role in the tissue protection against exercise-induced oxidative stress but also determines exercise performance.

ROS act as important mediators of the signal transduction pathways for several physiological functions, including immune response and inflammation. In several studies, cytokine response was represented with the commonly studied cytokine interleukin-6 (IL-6). In addition to inflammatory and immune modulatory functions, IL-6 is also a skeletal muscle secreted myokine and tightly related with the skeletal muscle energy availability during strenuous exercise (Pedersen 2012). In an early study, antioxidant supplementation with vitamins E, A, and C, allopurinol, and NAC attenuated plasma IL-6 and other cytokine responses to exercise in humans (Vassilakopoulos et al. 2003). In agreement with these findings, we have observed that α-lipoic acid decreased hydrogen peroxide-induced IL-6 secretion from L6 myoblasts (Atalay et al. unpublished observations). Hence, the blunting effect of antioxidants on IL-6 levels may not only be interpreted as an anti-inflammatory effect; instead, antioxidants can decrease energy availability to working muscle and may potentially decrease exercise performance. Similarly, excess availability of antioxidants may suppress other adaptive responses of physical training, such as stress protein expression. Heat shock proteins (HSPs), a group of stress-regulated proteins that contribute to cellular protection and promote cell survival, are induced by various stresses, including exhaustive physical exercise (Fehrenbach and Northoff 2001). A large number of studies showed that both acute exercise and endurance training induce HSP expression and enhance tissue protection (Atalay et al. 2004). Previous studies of our group and others showed that antioxidant supplementations blunt exercise-induced increases of HSPs (Khassaf et al. 2003; Oksala et al. 2006). Vitamin C supplementation increased baseline expression but attenuated acute exercise-induced HSP expression in humans (Khassaf et al. 2003). Co-supplementation of vitamins C and E attenuated moderately exercise-induced HSP72 expression in the elderly population (Simar et al. 2012).

**Lipoic Acid**

α-Lipoic acid is a natural thiol antioxidant and redox modulator that has been widely used as a therapeutic agent in many oxidative stress-associated diseases, including diabetes and diabetic complications. α-Lipoic acid plays an important role in antioxidant defense; in addition to its potent antioxidant properties as a direct scavenger of various ROS, it also increases GSH synthesis and act together with vitamin C to contribute to the regeneration of vitamin E. As an essential coenzyme for pyruvate dehydrogenase and α-ketoglutarate dehydrogenase, α-lipoic acid plays a critical role in mitochondrial energy metabolism, ultimately resulting in the production of adenosine triphosphate, ATP (Petersen Shay et al. 2008). The effects of α-lipoic acid on stress protein response were diverse in our studies using different animal models and different dosages of α-lipoic acid. In rats, high dosages of α-lipoic acid (150 mg/kg intragastrically) decreased the levels of skeletal muscle, liver, and kidney HSP72 and of the antioxidant stress protein heme oxygenase-1 (HSP32, HO-1) in healthy as
well in diabetic rats (our unpublished observations); however, α-lipoic acid supplementation increased hepatic HSP60 levels (Oksala et al. 2006). On the other hand, in regularly trained horses, 5-week supplementation of low-dose α-lipoic acid (25 mg/kg body weight/day) enhanced the skeletal muscle HSP response (Kinnunen et al. 2009a). One can postulate that high doses of antioxidant supplementations may result in a decline in HSP response to exercise, which may impair tissue protection and increase tissue damage that ultimately reduces the health benefits of exercise.

Despite the reported unfavorable effects of antioxidant supplementations to decrease health benefits and adaptations of exercise training, we observed beneficial effects of low-dose α-lipoic acid supplementation (25 mg/kg body weight/day) on performance and exercise-induced muscle damage in horse (Kinnunen et al. 2009b). As a result of 5-week α-lipoic acid supplementation, we found a decreased rate of lactate formation during exercise and simultaneously increased skeletal muscle citrate synthase activity, a key indicator of muscle oxidative metabolism. These observations may be explained by the impact of α-lipoic acid on the enzymes of oxidative metabolism in mitochondria: by improving their cofactor availability, which, in turn, may increase oxidative capacity of the skeletal muscle and lead to improved performance in endurance events (Sen and Packer 2000). However, our group has previously reported that intragastrically supplemented high doses of α-lipoic acid (150 mg/kg) did not increase the levels of lipoyllysine in rat skeletal muscle (Khanna et al. 1998). Lipoyllysine is the bound form of α-lipoic acid and a cofactor of pyruvate dehydrogenase and α-ketoglutarate dehydrogenase in skeletal muscle (Khanna et al. 1998). On the other hand, α-lipoic acid enhances glucose uptake by the muscle cells by increasing glucose transporters in the plasma membrane (Sen and Packer 2000). Enhanced glucose metabolism, in turn, may increase pyruvate availability for the tricarboxylic acid cycle and result in increased oxidative capacity of the muscles (Savitha et al. 2005). In addition, low-dose α-lipoic acid supplementation attenuated plasma creatine kinase levels after exercise and during recovery, which indicates a less exercise-induced muscle damage (Kinnunen et al. 2009b). In addition, α-lipoic acid supplementation attenuated exercise-induced oxidative stress as evident by directly measured lower free radical signals and also by lower lipid peroxidation by-products in horses (Kinnunen et al. 2009b) and in humans (Zembron-Lacny et al. 2007).

On the other hand, in another study (Matsumoto et al. 2012), the effects of 14 weeks of cosupplementation of α-lipoic acid with α-tocopherol and treadmill exercise on myocardial and vascular endothelium gene expression were investigated in rats. Antioxidant supplementation upregulated and exercise downregulated the expression of the RAS homolog gene family member A (RhoA), a gene involved in cardiovascular disease progression. The combination of supplementation and exercise abolished the exercise-mediated downregulation of RhoA expression. These findings pointed out an unfavorable effect of antioxidant supplementation on exercise-induced cardiovascular protection. Consistent with these findings, antioxidant supplementation of vitamins C and E and α-lipoic acid reversed the beneficial effect of 6 weeks of knee-extensor exercise training that had reduced systolic blood pressure and also blunted training-induced improvements in vascular function, measured as flow-mediated vasodilation (Wray et al. 2009).
Furthermore, in a recent study, the therapeutic role of α-lipoic acid supplementation in combination with moderate-intensity aerobic exercise on metabolic disturbances was examined in obese subjects with impaired glucose tolerance (McNeilly et al. 2011). Surprisingly, a 12-week supplementation period with a relatively high dose of α-lipoic acid (1 g/day) increased low-density lipoprotein (LDL) oxidation, which indicates increased atherogenesis. Nevertheless, exercise training and α-lipoic acid in combination attenuated LDL oxidation. Therefore, apart from the general trend of results that antioxidants diminish the health benefits of exercise, in this study, exercise training offset the adverse effect of antioxidant supplementation on LDL atherogenicity. However, because there was no exercise training group independent of antioxidant supplementation, one cannot make any conclusion whether α-lipoic acid supplementation blunted or potentiated the health benefits of exercise training (McNeilly et al. 2011). In addition, the same study found no impact of α-lipoic acid alone or in combination with exercise training on glycemic control, which is in total disagreement with previous studies that have pointed out the beneficial role of α-lipoic acid on glucose transport and consequently on glycemic regulation (Estrada et al. 1996).

In early animal studies, allopurinol has been found to attenuate the exercise-induced increase of XO activity and ROS formation, which was associated with a decreased activation of mitogen-activated protein kinases (MAPKs) and blunted DNA-binding of nuclear factor kappa B (NF-κB) (Gomez-Cabrera et al. 2006). MAPKs regulate cell development and survival in response to extracellular stimuli, including oxidative stress. The transcription factor NF-κB is not only implicated in the regulation of inflammatory responses and innate immune response, but also control the enzymes such as Mn-superoxide dismutase (Mn-SOD) and nitric oxide synthases (eNOS and iNOS). Therefore, impairing the effects of exercise training by antioxidant supplementation on MAPKs and NF-κB would affect these positive benefits. Consistent with these assumptions, administration of allopurinol before a marathon race suppressed the exercise-induced increase of antioxidant enzyme expression in humans (Gomez-Cabrera et al. 2006).

EXOGENOUS ANTIOXIDANTS

VITAMINS C AND E

The antioxidants vitamins C and E are among the most commonly consumed supplements (Kennedy et al. 2013), and often taken in large doses by athletes in belief of their potential protective effect against muscle damage. In the body, vitamins C and E act synergistically, with vitamin E acting as the primary antioxidant; the resulting vitamin E radical is regenerated back to vitamin E at the expense of vitamin C. Although vitamin C can decrease indices of oxidative stress taken at doses of 200 to 1000 mg/day (Braakhuis 2012), there is no convincing supporting evidence for a role of vitamin C and/or vitamin E in protecting against muscle damage (McGinley et al. 2009).

It could be speculated that higher intakes of vitamin C for short periods, such as onset of illness or during training camps, may provide health benefit for improved immunity. Indeed, a recent meta-analysis supports the notion that to reduce the
incidence of colds, at least 200 mg of vitamin C per day may be useful for people exposed to brief periods of severe physical exercise (Hemila and Chalker 2013).

Antioxidant supplementation with vitamins C and E has shown to prevent the induction of molecular regulators of insulin sensitivity and endogenous antioxidant defense by physical exercise (Ristow et al. 2009). At large doses, e.g., ≥1000 mg/day, vitamin C appears to reduce training-induced adaptations by reducing mitochondrial biogenesis (Ristow et al. 2009), indicating that the exercise-induced increase in ROS is necessary for physiological adaptations. In a recent study by Paulsen et al. (2014), a combination of vitamin C and E supplementation ingested shortly before and after exercise training hampered cellular adaptions in the exercised muscles. Although this did not translate to changes in the physical performance outcomes, the authors advocate caution when considering antioxidant supplementation combined with endurance exercise. Although high doses of vitamin C have not been shown to result in impaired exercise performance outcomes (Roberts et al. 2011), there is growing evidence of the negative effects of antioxidant supplementation on exercise performance (Nikolaidis et al. 2012). It is likely that a smaller dose of about 200 to 500 mg/day vitamin C may be sufficient to reduce oxidative stress without hampering mitochondrial training adaptations (Braakhuis 2012; Yfanti et al. 2010).

As discussed by Nikolaidis et al. (2012), the inherent complexity of redox biochemistry signifies the difficulty in providing unidirectional predictions after antioxidant supplementation; thus, a permanent intake of supraphysiological dosages of vitamin C and/or E cannot be recommended to healthy, exercising individuals.

**Flavonoids**

Flavonoids (plant polyphenols) are well-established antioxidants, with direct ROS-scavenging and chain-breaking properties. Current evidence indicates that the protective actions of polyphenols are mainly through the modulation of cellular signaling cascades by binding to specific target proteins and less via their potent antioxidant properties (Quideau et al. 2011). Among a large number of flavonoids, quercetin has been recognized with its several purported physiological benefits to health. Quercetin is not only a cardioprotective, anticarcinogenic, antioxidant, and antiapoptotic agent, but has also been proposed to exhibit ergogenic properties. On the other hand, human studies examining the effects of quercetin on exercise performance do not indicate a high level of efficacy. A recent meta-analysis indicated that quercetin supplementation in human subjects actually exerts a favorable effect on endurance capacity (calculated as combining VO$_{2\text{max}}$ and endurance exercise performance). However, the ergogenic effect was small and corresponded to an approximately 3% improvement over placebo. In subgroup meta-analysis, no significant difference was found for the effects of quercetin on endurance exercise performance and VO$_{2\text{max}}$. Furthermore, meta-regression analyses showed that variation in the study effect size was not significantly associated with subjects’ fitness level or plasma quercetin concentration (Kressler et al. 2011).

Sirtuins comprise a family of NAD$^+$-dependent deacylases that promote longevity and mediate many of the beneficial effects of calorie restriction. Recently, sirtuins have been postulated as redox-dependent metabolic sensors (Radak et al. 2013).
Among the polyphenolic compounds, resveratrol has been identified as the most potent inducer of sirtuin-1 (SIRT1) and AMP-activated protein kinase (AMPK), and reported to increase the lifespan of organisms via a wide range of processes, including suppression of apoptosis and inflammation or enhancing DNA repair (Hubbard and Sinclair 2014). Animal studies provided evidence that resveratrol has effects similar to those observed with exercise training: increases mitochondrial mass, increases endurance capacity, and induces muscle fiber shift to red type with greater aerobic capacity (Price et al. 2012). In human studies, the effect of resveratrol is controversial; in a recent study with healthy aged subjects, resveratrol did not elicit metabolic improvements but, in contrast, impaired the observed exercise training–induced improvements in the markers of inflammation and oxidative stress in skeletal muscle (Olesen et al. 2014).

CONCLUSIONS

Compelling evidence indicates that exercise-induced ROS production is crucial to develop training response and adaptations by promoting the expression of numerous skeletal muscle proteins, including antioxidant and HSP defenses, and regulating glucose homeostasis and mitochondrial function. Although epidemiological evidence suggests that adequate intakes of antioxidant micronutrients may help protect against life-threatening diseases, the general trend of published studies does not support the notion that antioxidant supplementation over a balanced diet rich in fruits and vegetables is beneficial to human health.

Despite a perceived need of antioxidant supplements to attenuate exercise-induced oxidative damage, a number of studies pointed out that excess antioxidant intake through antioxidant supplementation generally does not improve physical performance or potentiate health outcomes of physical exercise. In contrast, supraphysiological dosages of antioxidant supplements may interfere with ROS-mediated cell signaling and blunt the positive effects of exercise. According to current knowledge, a nutritional approach of adequate intake of antioxidant nutrients through a healthy diet remains to be the safest strategy to minimize exercise-induced oxidative insult and sustain high performance.

REFERENCES


Section III

Antioxidants in Various Disease States
INTRODUCTION

Noncommunicable diseases (NCDs) or chronic diseases generally progress slowly and have a long duration (World Health Organization [WHO] 2013a). NCDs account for 64% of all annual deaths (WHO 2013a). The four major types of NCDs are cardiovascular diseases (CVDs), cancer, chronic respiratory diseases, and diabetes. CVD is the number one cause of death globally (WHO 2011a). CVDs are a group of disorders that include coronary heart disease (CHD), cerebrovascular disease, peripheral arterial disease (PAD), rheumatic heart disease, congenital heart disease, deep vein thrombosis, and pulmonary embolism (WHO 2013b).

The majority of CVDs result from complications of atherosclerosis (Singh et al. 2005). Atherosclerosis is a disease in which plaque (fatty deposits) builds up inside the arteries and blood vessels and thus narrowing them, making it more difficult for blood to pass through and therefore limiting oxygen supply to the organs as well as other parts of the body (American Heart Association [AHA] 2013b). Heart attacks and strokes are acute events mainly caused by a blood clot that blocks the blood supply to the heart or brain, respectively (WHO 2013b). Of the 17.3 million people that have died globally due to CVD, 7.3 million died due to CHD and 6.2 million due to...
stroke (WHO 2011a), and it is estimated that by 2030 this number will increase to 23.3 million deaths annually (WHO 2011b).

CHD occurs when plaque builds up in the coronary arteries that supply oxygenated blood to the heart muscle, therefore limiting blood supply (National Institutes of Health 2013). This is called ischemia and can be chronic, caused by narrowing of the coronary artery, or it can be acute as a result of a plaque that suddenly ruptures (AHA 2013a).

The most common type of stroke is ischemic stroke, which occurs when a blood vessel that supplies the brain is blocked and when blood supply to a part of the brain is shut off, leading to the death of brain cells (AHA 2013b). On the other hand, a hemorrhagic stroke occurs when a blood vessel within the brain bursts (AHA 2013b). Stroke remains the second leading cause of death globally and the most common cause of disability in adults in most regions (Chen et al. 2013a). Every year, 795,000 people experience a new or recurrent stroke and, on average, every 40 s, someone in the United States has a stroke and dies of one approximately every 4 min (Go et al. 2013). In Europe, CVD is responsible for nearly half of all deaths each year, and due to its high mortality and morbidity CVD is estimated to cost the European Union €190 billion a year (Allender et al. 2008).

Risk Factors Associated with CHD and Stroke

There is a multitude of risk factors associated with CHD and stroke that can be differentiated into modifiable and nonmodifiable risk factors. The most important modifiable risk factors are the following: unhealthy diet, physical inactivity, smoking, and harmful use of alcohol (WHO 2013b). The effects that risk factors can exert on CVD may be shown via the so-called intermediate risk factors such as hypertension, increased levels of blood glucose and/or lipids, and increased body weight (WHO 2013b). Changes in health behavior associated with those risk factors (e.g., maintaining a healthy body weight, increasing physical activity levels, consumption of fruits and vegetables, and smoking cessation) have been shown to reduce the risk of CVD (WHO 2013b). In addition to modifiable risk factors, there are nonmodifiable risk factors, including family history, ethnicity, and being postmenopausal for women and age older than 45 years for men, that also exert an effect on CVD (AHA 2013b; World Heart Federation [WHF] 2013).

As a risk factor, diet plays an important role in the maintenance of optimal cardiovascular health, and there is consistent evidence from observational cohort studies showing that increased consumption of fruits and vegetables, as well as other plant foods, is associated with lower overall mortality rates and lower death rates from CVD (He et al. 2006, Dauchet et al. 2009, WHO 2013b). Furthermore, according to estimates, if an individual increases fruit and vegetable intake to 600 g/day, the global burden of disease could be reduced by 31% for ischemic heart disease and 19% for ischemic stroke (Lock et al. 2005). In addition, it is estimated that 74% of coronary events among nonsmokers might have been prevented by eating a healthy diet, maintaining a healthy body weight, exercising regularly for ≥30 min/day, and consuming a moderate amount of alcohol (Hu and Willett 2002). However, the difficulty of individuals to reduce and maintain a normal body weight, as well as make healthier food choices in the long term, made the hypothesis of counteracting this with antioxidants, among other nutrients, attractive (Traber 2007).
Antioxidant Hypothesis

Evidence for the association between CVD and fruit and vegetable consumption has led to the hypothesis that specific components of fruits and vegetables are responsible for the health benefits observed, although it is not yet known which molecules found in fruits and vegetables contribute more to their cardioprotective effect (Chong-Han 2010). One very popular hypothesis is that antioxidant nutrients prevent atherosclerosis via their beneficial effect against reactive oxygen species (ROS) (Stanner et al. 2004). ROS include free radicals, oxygen ions, and peroxides, both organic and inorganic (Taverne et al. 2013). They are produced as a by-product of oxidative phosphorylation but can also be produced through physiological biochemical reactions (Taverne et al. 2013).

Physiologically, ROS are found in low levels and this enables them to function as messengers in signal transduction for vascular homeostasis and cell signaling (Taverne et al. 2013). When ROS are excessively produced, when they are not controlled, or when antioxidants are depleted, they can damage lipids, proteins, and DNA (Taverne et al. 2013). This imbalance between oxidation and reduction is called oxidative stress and can contribute to the development as well as progression of CVD (Taverne et al. 2013). In addition, common characteristics of CVD risk factors, such as obesity, dyslipidemia, insulin resistance, and hypertension are the elevated levels of oxidative stress (Griendling and FitzGerald 2003a,b). Therefore, as the majority of CVDs are a result of atherosclerosis (Taverne et al. 2013), and oxidative damage contributes to atherosclerosis (Ozkanlar and Akcay 2012), antioxidant supplementation could be an important step toward the prevention and treatment of CVD. It has been shown that antioxidants can protect against atherosclerosis by blocking low-density lipoprotein (LDL) oxidation, positively influencing plaque stability, vasomotor function, and tendency for thrombosis, among other possible protective mechanisms (Bin et al. 2011). The oxidative modification hypothesis (Figure 8.1) supports the idea that the oxidation of LDL is a crucial step in atherogenesis (Maiolino et al. 2013). In fact, a series of biological properties of oxidized LDLs that are thought to promote atherosclerosis are the following: recruitment/activation and proliferation of monocytes/macrophages in the arterial wall, increased production of growth factors, stimulation of collagen production, cytotoxic activity in vascular cells, promotion of apoptosis, and stimulation of platelet adhesion and aggregation (Maiolino et al. 2013). However, although the oxidized LDL hypothesis of atherogenesis seems plausible, human observational studies have shown conflicting results (Maiolino et al. 2013). Furthermore, researchers believe that LDL oxidation alone does not explain the complex mechanism of atherosclerosis and other mechanisms have also been proposed, like, for example, a mechanism involving oxidized LDL and nitric oxide (Ozkanlar and Akcay 2012).

It has also been shown that plasma vitamin E is inversely correlated with mortality from ischemic heart disease (Gey et al. 1991), and therefore supplemental intake of antioxidants might be a treatment option for CVD (Taverne et al. 2013).

In contrast to the available evidence from animal studies and data from prospective human studies for fruits and vegetables, data from randomized controlled trials (RCTs) have not reported consistent benefit from the use of antioxidant supplements on CVD risk (Bhupathiraju and Tucker 2011), and some trials have reported harm
with high doses of antioxidant supplements. In addition, the effects of different antioxidants to CVD are further perplexed, as there is lack of knowledge with regard to the optimal dose. For example, oral supplementation of some antioxidants like vitamin C can decrease its bioavailability, and lack of clinical improvement in RCTs might be a result of the characteristics of the population being studied (Taverne et al. 2013). In addition, in many RCTs, participants have been diagnosed with CVD, and this might be the reason why a beneficial effect is not observed with supplementation.

**ANTIOXIDANTS**

Antioxidants are molecules that interact with and protect the body from free radicals, the molecules that induce oxidative stress, thus preventing them from causing damage (National Cancer Institute 2013). The major dietary antioxidants include the following: vitamin E, vitamin C, carotenoids, flavonoids, selenium, polyphenols, resveratrol, and lycopene.

**VITAMIN E**

Vitamin E is a lipid-soluble vitamin with the ability to inhibit lipid peroxidation by acting as a scavenger for ROS and preserving cell membranes (Schurks et al. 2010).
In vitro studies have proposed that antioxidants, including vitamin E, reduce lipid peroxidation and the damage by free radicals, therefore postponing the development of atherosclerosis (Bleys et al. 2006).

In addition, some observational epidemiological evidence suggests that increased consumption of dietary or supplementary vitamin E has a protective effect against CHD (Rimm et al. 1993, Stampfer and Rimm 1995). This might partly explain the fact that before the availability of evidence from RCTs, about 25% of adults were taking vitamin E supplements in the United States (Eidelman et al. 2004). However, findings from observational studies are inconsistent (Knekt et al. 2004, Ye and Song 2008). This might have occurred owing to the few CHD cases reported in some of the studies detecting associations, not controlling for confounding factors, inability to investigate subpopulations, and misclassification of antioxidants taken (Knekt et al. 2004). Given these limitations, meta-analyses of prospective cohort studies were conducted to examine the effects of vitamin E on CVD.

A meta-analysis of nine prospective cohort studies suggests that dietary intake of antioxidant vitamins was only weakly related to reduced CHD risk and that supplemental vitamin E intake is not significantly related to CHD (Knekt et al. 2004). Another meta-analysis of 15 prospective cohort studies, of >7000 incident CHD cases and 370,000 participants, reported that increased vitamin E is significantly associated with reduced CHD risk irrespective of study size, sex, duration of follow-up, and type of vitamins taken (dietary or supplemental) (Ye and Song 2008). It also suggests that each 30 IU/day increase in vitamin E could decrease CHD risk by 4% (Ye and Song 2008). However, due to limitations in the included prospective cohort studies (e.g., inability to adjust for some confounding factors) as well as the limitations associated with observational studies in general, it is suggested that the observed relationship still needs careful consideration (Ye and Song 2008). To illustrate this last point, further participants taking supplements might also have other healthy habits that have an effect on CVD risk factors, therefore confounding the relationship (Ye and Song 2008).

Apart from laboratory and observational studies, several RCTs (Table 8.1) and meta-analyses of RCTs (Eidelman et al. 2004, Shekelle et al. 2004, Bleys et al. 2006, Schurks et al. 2010, Bin et al. 2011, Myung et al. 2013, Ye et al. 2013) have been conducted to examine the effect of vitamin E intake on CVD outcomes.

A recent meta-analysis, of 13 RCTs that included 166,282 participants, was conducted by Bin et al. (2011) to evaluate the role of vitamin E supplementation in the prevention of stroke. The pooled results showed no significant benefit in the vitamin E group with respect to any type of stroke—hemorrhagic stroke, ischemic stroke, fatal stroke, and nonfatal stroke (Bin et al. 2011).

This discrepancy between studies evaluating the association of increased fruit and vegetable consumption vs. studies evaluating supplemental intake with regard to risk of stroke might be explained by the fact that supplemental intake and diet are different types of intake of antioxidants, and their effects on CVD might be different (Bin et al. 2011). In addition, although observational studies usually involve healthy participants whereas RCTs mostly study participants at high risk of macrovascular disease or who are diseased, in a subanalysis of healthy participants in three RCTs, performed by Bin et al. (2011), the pooled result showed similar effects.
### TABLE 8.1
Randomized Controlled Trials of Supplemental Antioxidant Intake and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Health Status</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Vitamin</th>
<th>Daily Dosage</th>
<th>CVD Outcomes</th>
<th>CVD Outcome, RR (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CHAOS, UK 1996 (Stephens et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>2002</td>
<td>61.8 (Mean)</td>
<td>Angiography-proven coronary atherosclerosis</td>
<td>1.5 (Median)</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>400 or 800 IU</td>
<td>CVD death and nonfatal MI, nonfatal MI alone</td>
<td>CVD death and nonfatal MI, 0.53 (0.34–0.83), 0.005</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 1997 (Rapola et al. 1997)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>1862</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>Smokers with previous MI</td>
<td>5.3 (Median)</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>50 mg</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, fatal CHD</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, 0.62 (0.41–0.96), S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 1998 (Virtamo et al. 1998)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>27,271</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>Smokers, no history of MI</td>
<td>6.1 (Median)</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>50 mg</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, fatal CHD</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>GISSI, Italy 1999 (GISSI 1999)</td>
<td>Open label</td>
<td>11,324</td>
<td>59.4</td>
<td>Patients with recent MI</td>
<td>3.5 (Median)</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>300 mg</td>
<td>Death, nonfatal MI, stroke</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SPACE, Israel 2000 (Boaz et al. 2000)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>196</td>
<td>40–75</td>
<td>Hemodialysis patients</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>800 IU</td>
<td>MI, ischemic stroke, PVD, unstable angina</td>
<td>Total CVD, 0.46 (0.27–0.78), 0.014</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 2000 (Leppala et al. 2000)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>28,519</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>Smokers</td>
<td>6 (Median)</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>50 mg</td>
<td>Stroke (SH, IH, CI), incidence and mortality</td>
<td>CI incidence, 0.86 (0.75–0.99), 0.03; SH mortality, 2.81 (1.37–5.79), 0.005</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
**TABLE 8.1 (CONTINUED)**

Randomized Controlled Trials of Supplemental Antioxidant Intake and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Health Status</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Vitamin</th>
<th>Daily Dosage</th>
<th>CVD Outcomes</th>
<th>CVD Outcome, RR (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PPP, 2001 (de Gaetano 2001)</td>
<td>Open label</td>
<td>4495</td>
<td>64.6 (Mean)</td>
<td>With at least one major CVD risk factor</td>
<td>3.6 (Mean)</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>300 mg</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, nonfatal stroke, angina pectoris, TIA, PAD, revascularization procedures</td>
<td>PAD, 0.54 (0.30–0.99), 0.043</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HATS, USA, and Canada 2001 (Brown et al. 2001)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>&lt;63 (M), &lt;70 (F)</td>
<td>With coronary disease</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>D-α-Tocopherol, Vitamin C, β-Carotene, Selenium, Vitamin E, β-Carotene, Selenium, Ascorbic acid, Vitamin E, β-Carotene, Selenium, Zinc</td>
<td>800 IU</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, nonfatal stroke, CVD death</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUVIMAX, France 2004 (Hercberg et al. 2004)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>13,017</td>
<td>46.6 (F), 51.3 (M)</td>
<td>Adults</td>
<td>7.5 (Median)</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, nonfatal ischemic CVD events</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WHS, USA 2005 (Lee et al. 2005)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>39,876</td>
<td>54.6 (Mean)</td>
<td>Healthy women</td>
<td>10.1 (Mean)</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, nonfatal stroke, CVD death</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.76 (0.59–0.98), 0.03</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*(Continued)*
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Health Status</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Vitamin</th>
<th>Daily Dosage</th>
<th>CVD Outcomes</th>
<th>CVD Outcome, RR (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>HOPE and HOPE-TOO, Canada 2005 (Lonn et al. 2005)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>9541</td>
<td>66 (Mean)</td>
<td>With vascular disease or diabetes</td>
<td>7 (Median)</td>
<td>RRR-α-tocopheryl-acetate</td>
<td>400 IU</td>
<td>MI, stroke, death from CVD</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WACS, USA 2007 (Cook et al. 2007)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>8171</td>
<td>60.6 (Mean)</td>
<td>CVD history or at high risk</td>
<td>9.4 (Mean)</td>
<td>d-α-Tocopherol-acetate</td>
<td>600 IU (every other day)</td>
<td>MI, stroke, CABG, PTCA, CVD mortality</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PHS II, USA 2008 (Sesso et al. 2008)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>14,641</td>
<td>64.3 (Mean)</td>
<td>Physicians with prevalent CVD</td>
<td>8 (Mean)</td>
<td>α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>400 IU (every other day)</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, nonfatal stroke, CVD death</td>
<td>Hemorrhagic stroke, 1.74 (1.04–2.91), 0.036</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milman et al. 2008, Israel (Milman et al. 2008)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>1434</td>
<td>≥55</td>
<td>Diabetes mellitus, Hp 2-2 genotype</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>d-α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>400 IU (every other day)</td>
<td>Composite endpoint (CVD mortality, MI, stroke)</td>
<td>Composite endpoint, 0.30 (0.16–0.70), 0.003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HATS, USA, and Canada 2001 (Brown et al. 2001)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>&lt;63 (M), &lt;70 (F)</td>
<td>With coronary disease</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>d-α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>800 IU</td>
<td>CVD mortality, MI, stroke, revascularization</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vitamin C</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>d-α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>800 IU</td>
<td>CVD mortality, MI, stroke, revascularization</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Vitamin C</td>
<td>1000 mg</td>
<td>CVD mortality, MI, stroke, revascularization</td>
<td>NS</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>25 mg</td>
<td>CVD mortality, MI, stroke, revascularization</td>
<td>NS</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>100 mg</td>
<td>CVD mortality, MI, stroke, revascularization</td>
<td>NS</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
### TABLE 8.1 (CONTINUED)
Randomized Controlled Trials of Supplemental Antioxidant Intake and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Health Status</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Vitamin</th>
<th>Daily Dosage</th>
<th>CVD Outcomes</th>
<th>CVD Outcome, RR (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SUVIMAX, France 2004 (Hercberg et al. 2004)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>13,017</td>
<td>46.6 (F), 51.3 (M)</td>
<td>Adults</td>
<td>7.5 (Median)</td>
<td>Ascorbic acid Vitamin E β-Carotene Selenium Zinc</td>
<td>120 mg 30 mg 6 mg 100 μg 20 mg</td>
<td>Fatal and nonfatal ischemic CVD events</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WACS, USA 2007 (Cook et al. 2007)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>8171</td>
<td>60.6</td>
<td>CVD history or at high risk</td>
<td>9.4 (Mean)</td>
<td>Synthetic ascorbic acid</td>
<td>500 mg</td>
<td>MI, stroke, CABG, PTCA, CVD mortality</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PHS II, USA 2008 (Sesso et al. 2008)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>14,641</td>
<td>64.3</td>
<td>Physicians with prevalent CVD</td>
<td>8 (Mean)</td>
<td>Synthetic ascorbic acid</td>
<td>500 mg</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, nonfatal stroke, CVD death</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PHS, USA 1996 (Hennekens et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>22,071</td>
<td>40–84</td>
<td>Physicians with no history of cancer, MI, stroke, or transient ischemia</td>
<td>12 (Mean)</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>50 mg (every other day)</td>
<td>MI, stroke, CVD mortality</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CARET, USA 1996 (Omenn et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>18,314</td>
<td>45–74</td>
<td>Smokers, former workers, and workers exposed to asbestos</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>β-Carotene Retinol</td>
<td>30 mg 25,000 IU</td>
<td>CVD mortality</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE 8.1 (CONTINUED)
Randomized Controlled Trials of Supplemental Antioxidant Intake and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Health Status</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Vitamin</th>
<th>Daily Dosage</th>
<th>CVD Outcomes</th>
<th>CVD Outcome, RR (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 1997 (Rapola et al. 1997)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>1862</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>Smokers with previous MI</td>
<td>5.3 (Median)</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>20 mg</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, fatal CHD</td>
<td>Fatal CHD, 1.75 (1.16–2.64), 0.012</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 1998 (Virtamo et al. 1998)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>27,271</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>Smokers with no history of MI</td>
<td>6.1 (Median)</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>20 mg</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, fatal CHD</td>
<td>Major coronary events, 0.69 (0.50–0.94), 0.03; fatal CHD, 0.64 (0.41–1.00), 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WHS, USA 1999 (Lee et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>39,876</td>
<td>≥45</td>
<td>Healthy women</td>
<td>4.1 (Median)</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>50 mg (every other day)</td>
<td>MI, stroke, or CVD mortality</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 2000 (Leppala et al. 2000)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>28,519</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>Smokers without a history of MI</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>20 mg</td>
<td>Stroke (SH, IH, CI)</td>
<td>IH, 1.62 (1.10–2.36), 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HATS, USA and Canada 2001 (Brown et al. 2001)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>&lt;63 (M), &lt;70 (F)</td>
<td>With coronary disease</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>d-α-Tocopherol Vitamin C β-Carotene Selenium</td>
<td>800 IU 1000 mg 25 mg 100 mg</td>
<td>CVD mortality, MI, stroke, revascularization</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
### TABLE 8.1 (CONTINUED)
Randomized Controlled Trials of Supplemental Antioxidant Intake and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Health Status</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Vitamin</th>
<th>Daily Dosage</th>
<th>CVD Outcomes</th>
<th>CVD Outcome, RR (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>SUVIMAX, France 2004</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>13,017</td>
<td>46.6 (F), 51.3 (M)</td>
<td>Adults</td>
<td>7.5 (Median)</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>Ascorbic acid</td>
<td>120 mg</td>
<td>Fatal and nonfatal ischemic CVD events</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Hercberg et al. 2004)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Vitamin E</td>
<td>30 mg</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
<td>50 mg</td>
<td>(every other day)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>120 mg</td>
<td>30 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Zinc</td>
<td>20 mg</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WACS, USA 2007 (Cook et al. 2007)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>8171</td>
<td>60.6</td>
<td>CVD history or at high risk</td>
<td>9.4 (Mean)</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>50 mg</td>
<td>MI, stroke, CABG, CVD mortality</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>120 mg</td>
<td>30 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Zinc</td>
<td>20 mg</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HATS, USA, and Canada 2001 (Brown et al. 2001)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>&lt;63 (M), &lt;70 (F)</td>
<td>With coronary disease</td>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>d-α-Tocopherol</td>
<td>800 IU</td>
<td>CVD mortality, MI, stroke, revascularization</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Vitamin C</td>
<td>1000 mg</td>
<td>25 mg</td>
<td>100 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>25 mg</td>
<td>120 mg</td>
<td>30 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>120 mg</td>
<td>30 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Zinc</td>
<td>20 mg</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUVIMAX, France 2004</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>13,017</td>
<td>46.6 (F), 51.3 (M)</td>
<td>Adults</td>
<td>7.5 (Median)</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>Ascorbic acid</td>
<td>120 mg</td>
<td>Fatal and nonfatal ischemic CVD events</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(Hercberg et al. 2004)</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Vitamin E</td>
<td>30 mg</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
<td>50 mg</td>
<td>(every other day)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>120 mg</td>
<td>30 mg</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Zinc</td>
<td>20 mg</td>
<td>100 μg</td>
<td>6 mg</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*(Continued)*
### TABLE 8.1 (CONTINUED)
Randomized Controlled Trials of Supplemental Antioxidant Intake and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Study Design</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Health Status</th>
<th>Follow-Up</th>
<th>Vitamin</th>
<th>Daily Dosage</th>
<th>CVD Outcomes</th>
<th>CVD Outcome, RR (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>NPC, USA 2006 (Stranges et al. 2006)</td>
<td>Double blind</td>
<td>1312</td>
<td>62 (Mean)</td>
<td>Confirmed history of nonmelanoma skin cancer</td>
<td>7.6</td>
<td>Selenium</td>
<td>200 μg</td>
<td>Fatal and nonfatal MI, CABG, PTCA, stroke, CVD mortality</td>
<td>NS</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Note:* ATBC, Alpha-Tocopherol Beta-Carotene Cancer Prevention Study; BHF, British Heart Foundation; CABG, coronary artery bypass grafting; CARET, Beta-Carotene and Retinol Efficacy Trial; CD, coronary disease; CHAOS, Cambridge Heart Antioxidant Study; CHD, coronary heart disease; CI, cerebral infarction; CVD, cardiovascular disease; F, female; GISSI, Gruppo Italiano per lo Studio della Sopravivenza nell’Infarto Miocardico; HATS, HDL Atherosclerosis Treatment Study; HOPE, Heart Outcomes Prevention Evaluation; HOPE-TOO, HOPE The Ongoing Outcomes; IH, intracerebral hemorrhage; M, male; MI, myocardial infarction; MRC, Medical Research Council; NPC, Nutrition Prevention Cancer; NS, nonsignificant; PAD, peripheral arterial disease; PHS, Physician’s Health Study; PPP, primary prevention project; PTCA, percutaneous transluminal coronary angioplasty; S, significant; SH, subarachnoid hemorrhage; SPACE, Secondary Prevention with Antioxidants of Cardiovascular Disease in Endstage Renal Disease; SUVIMAX, Supplementation en Vitamines et Mineraux Antioxydants; WACS, Women’s Antioxidant Cardiovascular Study; WHS, Women’s Health Study.
An earlier meta-analysis on the effects of vitamin E on stroke subtypes concluded that vitamin E increases the risk of hemorrhagic stroke by 22% and reduces the risk of ischemic stroke by 10%, results that are obscured when examining total stroke (Schurks et al. 2010). Owing to the small risk reduction of ischemic stroke and the increased risk of hemorrhagic stroke, as noted in the meta-analysis by Schurks et al. (2010), widespread use of vitamin E is not suggested. Furthermore, apart from vitamin E supplementation, there are other strategies that can effectively and substantially reduce the risk of stroke, such as antihypertensive or lipid-lowering medication, as well as cessation of smoking, maintaining a healthy weight, having a healthy diet, and regularly exercising (Schurks et al. 2010).

A very recent meta-analysis that included 50 RCTs concluded that there was no evidence to support the use of vitamin and antioxidant supplements for the prevention of CVD irrespective of the type of prevention, type of vitamins and antioxidants, type of CVD outcomes, study design, methodological quality, duration of treatment, funding source, provider of supplements, type of control, number of participants in each trial, and supplements given singly or in combination with other supplements (Myung et al. 2013). In addition, another meta-analysis of RCTs has shown that there is no effect of vitamin–mineral supplementation on the progression of atherosclerosis (Bleys et al. 2006). This is in agreement with previous meta-analyses that also report that there is good evidence that vitamin E supplementation does not have an effect on CVD (Vivekananthan et al. 2003, Shekelle et al. 2004).

Overall, the evidence does not support the long-term use of vitamin E for CVD prevention or progression of atherosclerosis.

**Vitamin C**

Vitamin C, also known as ascorbic acid, is a hydrophilic vitamin and acts as an antioxidant in hydrophilic media (Wang et al. 2012). Vitamin C regenerates tocopherol from its oxidized form (Wang et al. 2012). As described previously, vitamin C may have a beneficial effect on atherogenesis as it is a strong antioxidant and has been shown to decrease the oxidation of LDL, inhibit proliferation of smooth muscle cells, and protect membranes from peroxidation (Chen et al. 2000, 2013a).

Similar to vitamin E, vitamin C has also been extensively investigated with regard to its effect on CVD outcomes (Ye and Song 2008); however, results are inconsistent. Meta-analysis of nine prospective cohort studies suggested a reduced incidence of major CHD events at high supplementation of vitamin C in men and women, whereas dietary vitamin C intake was not related to CHD incidence (Knek et al. 2004). In more detail, participants in the highest quintile of vitamin C intake had 24% lower risk compared with those in the lowest quintile, and a dose–response association was observed. Adjustment for confounding factors did not affect the association. Although the results of this meta-analysis suggest the use of vitamin C supplementation to reduce CHD incidence, as the effects of high antioxidant vitamin intake are not fully understood, there is no adequate support for recommending high doses of vitamin C supplementation.

In contrast, a later meta-analysis of 15 prospective cohort studies suggests that dietary vitamin C has an inverse association with CHD risk, whereas supplement use
of vitamin C is not significantly associated with the risk of CHD (Ye and Song 2008). Given the inconsistencies observed in prospective cohort studies and the limitations associated with their study design, RCTs have been conducted to evaluate the effect of vitamin C on CVD outcomes.

A meta-analysis of RCTs concluded that antioxidant vitamin supplementation (including vitamin C) does not affect major CVD events such as myocardial infarction, stroke, CVD mortality, CHD, angina, congestive heart failure, and revascularization (Ye et al. 2013). Furthermore, the authors found that subgroup analysis also supported the same conclusions. These results have also been replicated in other meta-analyses of RCTs (Chen et al. 2013a, Myung et al. 2013). Another meta-analysis has also shown that there is no evidence of a protective effect of antioxidant vitamin supplementation, including vitamin C, on the progression of atherosclerosis (Bleys et al. 2006). In contrast, dietary vitamin C is significantly and inversely associated with the risk of stroke in a dose–response manner (Chen et al. 2013a).

Apart from the examined effect of vitamin C on CVD outcomes, RCTs have also been conducted to examine the effect of vitamin C on intermediate risk factors such as blood pressure. A recent meta-analysis of RCTs about the effects of vitamin C supplementation on blood pressure showed that in short-term trials, vitamin C significantly reduced systolic and diastolic blood pressure (Juraschek et al. 2012) by −3.84 mm Hg and −1.48 mm Hg, respectively; however, there is lack of long-term clinical trial evidence. The authors of this meta-analysis also note that the included trials were small, and there was significant heterogeneity of effects across studies, which leads to the conclusion that additional trials are needed, with larger sample sizes and with attention to the quality of blood pressure assessment.

In summary, vitamin C supplementation is not recommended for the prevention or treatment of CVD.

**Carotenoids**

There are 600 naturally occurring carotenoids; however, six carotenoids (lutein, lycopene, zeaxanthin, β-cryptoxanthin, β-carotene, and α-carotene) represent >95% of carotenoids in plasma and are associated with health benefits (Wang et al. 2013). Table 8.2 provides an overview of observational studies of dietary and supplemental intake of carotenoids and their association with major CVD outcomes.

Most of the observational studies of dietary carotenoid intake have examined the effect of β-carotene on CVD outcomes. In the Nurses’ Health Study, dietary α- and β-carotene were inversely associated with coronary artery disease; the same was not observed for intake of other carotenoids (Osganian et al. 2003). In addition, in the Health Professionals’ Follow-up Study, current and former smokers had significantly lower CHD risk; however, the same was not observed for nonsmokers (Rimm et al. 1993). In the same cohort study, only lutein was shown to be inversely associated with the risk of stroke (Ascherio et al. 1999).

A meta-analysis of nine prospective cohort studies suggested that the risk reduction of carotenoids was only weakly associated with major CHD events (Knekt et al. 2004). In more detail, significant inverse associations were observed between dietary α-carotene, β-carotene, lutein, and β-cryptoxanthin with the incidence of all major
## TABLE 8.2  
Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Vitamin E</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Rotterdam study, Netherlands 1999 (Klipstein-Grobusch et al. 1999)</strong></td>
<td>Free of MI at baseline</td>
<td>4802</td>
<td>55–95</td>
<td>4 (Mean)</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin E</td>
<td>Risk of MI, 1.21 (0.75–1.98), 0.528</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Kushi et al. 1996, USA (Kushi et al. 1996)</strong></td>
<td>Postmenopausal women with no CVD</td>
<td>34,486</td>
<td>55–69</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>Total vitamin E intake</td>
<td>CHD mortality, 0.96 (0.62–1.51), 0.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>HPFS, USA 1993 (Rimm et al. 1993)</strong></td>
<td>Male health professionals</td>
<td>39,910</td>
<td>40–75</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin E</td>
<td>CHD mortality, 0.96 (0.75–1.51), 0.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>NHS, USA 1993 (Stampfer et al. 1993)</strong></td>
<td>Female nurses</td>
<td>87,245</td>
<td>34–59</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Total vitamin E intake</td>
<td>CHD mortality, 0.96 (0.75–1.51), 0.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Knekt et al. 1994, Finland (Knekt et al. 1994)</strong></td>
<td>Men and women</td>
<td>5133</td>
<td>30–69</td>
<td>14 (Mean)</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin E</td>
<td>CHD mortality, 0.96 (0.75–1.51), 0.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>EPESE, USA 1996 (Losonczy et al. 1996)</strong></td>
<td>Men and women</td>
<td>11,178</td>
<td>67–105</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Supplemental vitamin E</td>
<td>CHD mortality, 0.96 (0.75–1.51), 0.27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Sahyoun et al. 1996, USA (Sahyoun et al. 1996)</strong></td>
<td>Noninstitutionalized Massachusetts residents, men and women</td>
<td>725</td>
<td>≥60</td>
<td>9–12</td>
<td>Vitamin E intake</td>
<td>Mortality from HD, 0.75 (0.41–1.39), 0.40</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
### TABLE 8.2 (CONTINUED)

Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Vitamin E</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ascherio et al. 1999, USA (Ascherio et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Male health professionals who did not have CVD or diabetes</td>
<td>43,748</td>
<td>40–75</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Total vitamin E intake</td>
<td>Stroke, 1.25 (0.88–1.78), &gt;0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Supplemental vitamin E</td>
<td>Stroke, 1.13 (0.84–1.52), &gt;0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 2000 (Hirvonen et al. 2000)</td>
<td>Male smokers</td>
<td>26,593</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin E</td>
<td>CI, 0.86 (0.70–1.06), 0.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>SH, 0.81 (0.44–1.50), 0.55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>IH, 0.64 (0.36–1.15), 0.15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muntwyler et al. 2002, USA (Muntwyler et al. 2002)</td>
<td>Male physicians</td>
<td>83,639</td>
<td>40–84</td>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>Supplemental vitamin E</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.92 (0.70–1.21), 0.52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>CHD mortality, 0.88 (0.61–1.27), 0.47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muntwyler et al. 2004, USA (Genkinger et al. 2004)</td>
<td>Men and women</td>
<td>6151</td>
<td>30–93</td>
<td>1989–2002</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin E</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 1.07 (0.79–1.46), 0.69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLUE, Europe 2008 (Buijsse et al. 2008)</td>
<td>Men free of chronic diseases</td>
<td>559</td>
<td>65–84</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>Dietary α-tocopherol</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.96 (0.82–1.12), NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary γ-tocopherol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Vitamin C</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HPFS, USA 1993 (Rimm et al. 1993)</td>
<td>Male health professionals</td>
<td>39,910</td>
<td>40–75</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Total vitamin C intake</td>
<td>CHD, 1.25 (0.91–1.71), 0.98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knekt et al. 1994, Finland (Knekt et al. 1994)</td>
<td>Men and women</td>
<td>5133</td>
<td>30–69</td>
<td>14 (Mean)</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin C</td>
<td>M: CHD mortality, 1.00 (0.68–1.45), 0.94; F: CHD mortality, 0.49 (0.24–0.98), 0.06</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
### TABLE 8.2 (CONTINUED)
**Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sahyoun et al. 1996, USA (Sahyoun et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Noninstitutionalized Massachusetts residents, men and women</td>
<td>725</td>
<td>≥60</td>
<td>9–12</td>
<td>Vitamin C intake</td>
<td>Mortality from HD, 0.38 (0.19–0.75), 0.22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kushi et al. 1996, USA (Kushi et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Postmenopausal women with no CVD</td>
<td>34,486</td>
<td>55–69</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>Total vitamin E intake Dietary vitamin E Supplemental vitamin E</td>
<td>CHD mortality, 1.49 (0.96–2.30), 0.02 CHD mortality, 1.43 (0.75–2.70), 0.47 CHD mortality, 0.74 (0.30–1.83), 0.60 Stroke, 0.71 (0.47–1.05), 0.17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daviğlus et al. 1997, USA (Daviğlus et al. 1997)</td>
<td>Middle-aged men</td>
<td>1843</td>
<td>30</td>
<td></td>
<td>Vitamin C intake</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rotterdam study, Netherlands 1999 (Klipstein-Grobusch et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Free of MI at baseline</td>
<td>4802</td>
<td>55–95</td>
<td>4 (Mean)</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin C</td>
<td>Risk of MI, 1.05 (0.65–1.67), 0.856</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HPFS, USA 1999 (Ascherio et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Male health professionals who did not have CVD or diabetes</td>
<td>43,748</td>
<td>40–75</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Total vitamin C intake Supplemental vitamin C</td>
<td>Stroke, 0.95 (0.66–1.35), &gt;0.2 Stroke, 0.85 (0.59–1.24), &gt;0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 2000 (Hirvonen et al. 2000)</td>
<td>Male smokers</td>
<td>26,593</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>Dietary vitamin C</td>
<td>CI, 0.89 (0.72–1.09), 0.20 SH, 1.16 (0.62–2.18), 0.61 IH, 0.39 (0.21–0.74), 0.02</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Muntwyler et al. 2002, USA (Muntwyler et al. 2002)</td>
<td>Male physicians</td>
<td>83,639</td>
<td>40–84</td>
<td>5.5</td>
<td>Supplemental vitamin C</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.88 (0.70–1.12), 0.29 CHD mortality, 0.86 (0.63–1.18), 0.34</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
### TABLE 8.2 (CONTINUED)

**Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| NHS, USA 2003 (Osganian et al. 2003) | Female nurses | 85,118 | 30–55 | 16 | Total vitamin C intake | CHD, 0.73 (0.57–0.94), 0.005  
Dietary vitamin C | CHD, 0.86 (0.59–1.26), 0.52  
Supplemental vitamin C | CHD, 0.72 (0.61–0.86), 0.13 |
| CLUE, Europe 2008 (Buijsse et al. 2008) | Men free of chronic diseases | 559 | 65–84 | 15 | Dietary vitamin C | CVD mortality, 1.02 (0.85–1.23), NS  
Supplemental vitamin C | Dietary vitamin C |
| HPFS, USA 1993 (Rimm et al. 1993) | Men | 39,910 | 40–75 | 4 | Dietary carotene | CHD (former smokers), 0.60 (0.38–0.94), <0.05  
CHD (current smokers), 0.30 (0.11–0.82), <0.05 |
| Morris et al. 1994, USA (Morris et al. 1994) | Men | 1883 | 40–59 | 13 | Total carotenoids | CHD, 0.64 (0.44–0.92), 0.01 |
| Knekt et al. 1994, Finland (Knekt et al. 1994) | Men and women | 5133 | 30–69 (Mean) | 14 (Mean) | Dietary carotenoids | M: CHD mortality, 1.02 (0.70–1.48), 0.36  
F: CHD mortality, 0.62 (0.30–1.29), 0.60 |
| Kushi et al. 1996, USA (Kushi et al. 1996) | Postmenopausal women with no CVD | 34,486 | 55–69 | 7 | Total carotenoids intake | CHD mortality, 1.03 (0.63–1.70), 0.71  
Total vitamin A | CHD mortality, 1.22 (0.76–1.96), 0.89  
Dietary carotenoids | CHD mortality, 1.19 (0.67–2.12), 0.89  
Dietary vitamin A | CHD mortality, 1.25 (0.57–2.31), 0.83  
Supplemental vitamin A | CHD mortality, 1.29 (0.70–2.39), 0.22 |

*(Continued)*
TABLE 8.2 (CONTINUED)
Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sayoun et al. 1996, USA (Sahyoun et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Noninstitutionalized Massachusetts residents, men and women</td>
<td>725</td>
<td>≥60</td>
<td>9–12</td>
<td>Carotenoid intake</td>
<td>Mortality from HD, 0.64 (0.33–1.27), 0.14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Daviglus et al. 1997, USA (Daviglus et al. 1997)</td>
<td>Middle-aged men</td>
<td>1843</td>
<td></td>
<td>30</td>
<td>β-Carotene</td>
<td>Stroke, 0.84 (0.57–1.24), 0.59</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HPFS, USA 1999 (Ascherio et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Male health professionals who did not have CVD or diabetes</td>
<td>43,748</td>
<td>40–75</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>Total β-carotene intake</td>
<td>Stroke, 0.77 (0.54–1.08), &gt;0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Supplemental β-carotene</td>
<td>Stroke, 1.18 (0.68–2.07), &gt;0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Total α-carotene</td>
<td>Stroke, 0.94 (0.66–1.34), &gt;0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Total lutein</td>
<td>Stroke, 0.70 (0.49–1.01), &gt;0.06</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Total lycopene</td>
<td>Stroke, 0.96 (0.68–1.36), &gt;0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary β-carotene</td>
<td>Risk of MI, 0.55 (0.34–0.83), 0.013</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rotterdam study, Netherlands 1999 (Klipstein-Grobusch et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Free of MI at baseline</td>
<td>4802</td>
<td>55–95</td>
<td>4 (Mean)</td>
<td>Dietary β-carotene</td>
<td>CI, 0.74 (0.60–0.91), 0.0009; SH, 0.67 (0.35–1.28), 0.77; IH, 0.66 (0.36–1.19), 0.19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 2000 (Hirvonen et al. 2000)</td>
<td>Male smokers</td>
<td>26,593</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>Dietary β-carotene</td>
<td>CI, 0.81 (0.66–1.00), 0.10; SH, 0.47 (0.24–0.93), 0.03; IH, 0.81 (0.46–1.43), 0.86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary lutein and zeaxanthin</td>
<td>CI, 0.74 (0.59–0.92), 0.02; SH, 0.63 (0.33–1.20), 0.13; IH, 0.45 (0.24–0.86), 0.01</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
## TABLE 8.2 (CONTINUED)
Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Carotenoids</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NHS, USA 2003 (Osganian et al. 2003)</td>
<td>Female nurses</td>
<td>73,286</td>
<td>30–55</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>Dietary α-carotene</td>
<td>CAD, 0.80 (0.65–0.99), 0.04</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary β-carotene</td>
<td>CAD, 0.74 (0.59–0.93), 0.05</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary lutein and zeaxanthin</td>
<td>CAD, 0.90 (0.72–1.12), 0.42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary lycopene</td>
<td>CAD, 0.93 (0.77–1.14), 0.74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary β-cryptoxanthin</td>
<td>CAD, 1.17 (0.94–1.44), 0.21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary total carotenoids</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.82 (0.69–0.98)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary α-carotene</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.81 (0.66–0.99), S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary β-carotene</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.80 (0.66–0.97), S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary lutein</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.95 (0.81–1.12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary lycopene</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.91 (0.76–1.08)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary β-cryptoxanthin</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.86 (0.72–1.03)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary zeaxanthin</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.88 (0.70–1.10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLUE, Europe 2008 (Buijsse et al. 2008)</td>
<td>Men free of chronic diseases</td>
<td>559</td>
<td>65–84</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>Dietary total carotenoids</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.82 (0.69–0.98)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary α-carotene</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.81 (0.66–0.99), S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary β-carotene</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.80 (0.66–0.97), S</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary lutein</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.95 (0.81–1.12)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary lycopene</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.91 (0.76–1.08)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary β-cryptoxanthin</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.86 (0.72–1.03)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Dietary zeaxanthin</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.88 (0.70–1.10)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Polyphenols</strong></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>CAD, 0.32 (0.15–0.71), 0.003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Zutphen Elderly Study, 1993, Netherlands (Hertog et al. 1993)</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>805</td>
<td>65–84</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>CAD, 0.32 (0.15–0.71), 0.003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knekt et al. 1996, Finland (Knekt et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Men and women free of known heart disease</td>
<td>5133</td>
<td>30–69</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>CAD (F), 0.73 (0.41–1.32), 0.21; CAD (M), 0.67 (0.44–1.00), 0.12</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
**TABLE 8.2 (CONTINUED)**
Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>HPFS, USA, 1996 (Rimm et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Male health professionals</td>
<td>34,789</td>
<td>40–75</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, 1.08 (0.81–1.43), NS; CAD, 0.77 (0.45–1.35), NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZEN, Netherlands 1996 (Keli et al. 1996)</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>552</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>Dietary flavonoids</td>
<td>Incident stroke, 0.27 (0.11–0.70), 0.004</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hertog et al. 1997, Netherlands (Hertog et al. 1997a)</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>804</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>CAD, 0.47 (0.27, 0.82), 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hertog et al. 1997, UK (Hertog et al. 1997b)</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>1900</td>
<td>45–59</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>Dietary flavanol</td>
<td>IHD, 1.6 (0.9, 2.9), 0.11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yochum et al. 1999, USA (Yochum et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Postmenopausal women</td>
<td>34,492</td>
<td>55–69</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>Dietary flavonoids</td>
<td>Death from CHD, 0.62 (0.44, 0.87), 0.11; stroke, 1.18 (0.70–2.00), 0.83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vanharanta et al. 1999, Finland (Vanharanta et al. 1999)</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>2005</td>
<td>10</td>
<td></td>
<td>Enterolactone</td>
<td>Incident CAD, 0.35 (0.14–0.88), 0.01</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 2000 (Hirvonen et al. 2000)</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>26,593</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>Incident stroke, 0.98 (0.8–1.21), 0.81</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Arts et al. 2001, USA (Arts et al. 2001)</td>
<td>Postmenopausal women</td>
<td>32,857</td>
<td>13</td>
<td></td>
<td>Catechins</td>
<td>CAD, 0.85 (0.67, 1.07), NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ZEN, Netherlands 2001</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>806</td>
<td>65–84</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>Dietary catechin intake</td>
<td>IHD, 0.49 (0.27, 0.88), 0.02; MI, 0.70 (0.39, 1.26), 0.23; incident stroke, 0.92 (0.51, 1.68), 0.75</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*(Continued)*
### TABLE 8.2 (CONTINUED)
Observational Studies on Intake of Antioxidants and Risk of Major CVD Outcomes

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Trial/Author, Country</th>
<th>Population/Sex</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>Age (years)</th>
<th>Follow-Up (years)</th>
<th>Exposure (Plasma/Dietary/Supplements)</th>
<th>Outcomes, RR (Highest vs. Lowest) and (95% CI), p-Value</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ATBC, Finland 2001</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>25,372</td>
<td>50–69</td>
<td>6.1</td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, 0.77 (0.64, 0.93), NS; CAD, 0.89 (0.71, 1.11), NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rotterdam study, Netherlands 2002</td>
<td>Men and women, independently living</td>
<td>4807</td>
<td>≥55</td>
<td>5.6</td>
<td>Dietary flavonoids</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, 0.93 (0.57, 1.52), NS; fatal MI, 0.35 (0.13, 0.98), NS</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Finland 2002 (Knekt et al. 2002)</td>
<td>Men and women</td>
<td>9131</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Dietary flavonoids</td>
<td>Ischemic HD, 0.93 (0.74, 1.17), 0.30</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WHS, USA 2003 ( Sesso et al. 2003)</td>
<td>Female health professionals free of CVD and cancer</td>
<td>38,445</td>
<td>≥45</td>
<td>6.9 (Mean)</td>
<td>Dietary flavonoids</td>
<td>Total CVD, 0.80 (0.59, 1.09), 0.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vanharanta et al. 2003, Finland (Vanharanta et al. 2003)</td>
<td>Men</td>
<td>1889</td>
<td>42–60</td>
<td>12.2</td>
<td>Enterolactone</td>
<td>CVD, 0.55 (0.29–1.01), 0.04; CAD, 0.44 (0.20–0.96), 0.03</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NHS, USA 2007 (Lin et al. 2007)</td>
<td>Female nurses</td>
<td>66,360</td>
<td>30–55</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>Flavonols, flavones</td>
<td>Nonfatal MI, 1.05 (0.85–1.29), 0.55; fatal CHD, 0.81 (0.57–1.16), 0.29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IWHS, USA 2007 (Mink et al. 2007)</td>
<td>Postmenopausal women free of CVD</td>
<td>34,492</td>
<td>55–69</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>Total flavonoids</td>
<td>Total mortality, 0.94 (0.69–1.29), 0.796; CHD mortality, 0.94 (0.78–1.13), 0.980; CVD mortality, 0.93 (0.81–1.07), 0.628</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>KIHD, Finland 2008 (Mursu et al. 2008)</td>
<td>Men free of CHD or stroke</td>
<td>1950</td>
<td>42–60</td>
<td>15.2</td>
<td>Flavonoid intake</td>
<td>Ischemic stroke, 0.71 (0.37–1.37), 0.137; CVD mortality, 1.25 (0.74–2.11), 0.730</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CPS-II, USA, 2012 (McCullough et al. 2012)</td>
<td>Men and women</td>
<td>38,180 (M), 60,289 (F)</td>
<td>70 (M), 69 (F)</td>
<td>Total flavonoids</td>
<td>CVD mortality, 0.82 (0.73–0.92), 0.01</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Note:** ATBC, Alpha-Tocopherol Beta-Carotene Cancer Prevention Study; CAD, coronary artery disease; CHD, coronary heart disease; CI, cerebral infarction; CPS-II, Cancer Prevention Study II; CVD, cardiovascular disease; EPESE, Established Populations for Epidemiologic Studies of the Elderly; F, female; HD, heart disease; HPFS, Health Professionals’ Follow-up Study; IH, intracerebral hemorrhage; M, male; MI, myocardial infarction; NHS, Nurses’ Health Study; SH, subarachnoid hemorrhage.
CHD events in the pooled population not taking vitamin supplements; after adjustment for confounding factors, only lutein was significantly and inversely associated with CHD incidence. However, because the associations observed with lutein disappeared after further exclusion of cases during the first 2 years of follow-up, the authors concluded that none of the carotenoids, when consumed in usual dietary quantities, can predict reduced incidence of CHD. These conclusions are further replicated in a more recent meta-analysis of 15 prospective cohort studies that examined the effect of β-carotene on CHD (Ye and Song 2008), whereas an earlier meta-analysis of RCTs suggested that β-carotene supplementation should be actively discouraged as it was found to be associated with a small but significant excess of all-cause and CVD mortality (Vivekananthan et al. 2003).

Table 8.1 presents the available randomized controlled trials that examine the effect of β-carotene, either alone or in combination with other antioxidants, on major CVD outcomes. The vast majority of studies produced nonsignificant results. The study that showed a significant association was the ATBC (Alpha-Tocopherol Beta-Carotene) trial in which a population of male smokers was examined (Rapola et al. 1997, Virtamo et al. 1998, Leppala et al. 2000). In fact, a meta-analysis of RCTs concluded that there is no evidence to support antioxidant vitamin supplements (including β-carotene supplements) for the primary or secondary prevention of various diseases (Bjelakovic et al. 2012), and this finding has also been replicated in more recent meta-analyses of RCTs (Myung et al. 2013, Ye et al. 2013). In addition, a meta-analysis of RCTs concluded that there was no evidence of a protective effect of β-carotene on the progression of atherosclerosis (Bleys et al. 2006).

In conclusion, there is no evidence to support a role of carotenoid supplementation for the prevention or treatment of CVD.

**Selenium**

Selenium is an essential trace element that is involved in the protection against oxidative damage (Rayman 2000). The main sources of selenium include plant foods, meat, and seafood; however, the selenium content of foods varies according to the soil, water concentrations, and selenium-containing fertilizers (Flores-Mateo et al. 2006), and this is the reason why dietary assessment methods are irrelevant in the study of selenium status; instead, toenail, blood, erythrocyte, or serum and plasma selenium concentrations are used (Longnecker et al. 1996, Satia et al. 2006). Observational studies investigating the association between low selenium concentration with CVD outcomes and RCTs investigating supplemental selenium and CHD have been inconclusive.

Flores-Mateo et al. (2006) appraised the evidence with regard to the association of selenium and CHD, and the meta-analysis suggests that there is a statistically significant inverse association between selenium concentration in several tissues and CHD outcomes in observational studies; a 50% increase was associated with 24% reduced risk of coronary events. However, given the experience from observational studies of other antioxidants, this validity is uncertain, as RCTs might show a different result. RCTs examining selenium supplementation are few, and selenium has been administered in combination with other antioxidants (Table 8.1). Another
meta-analysis of RCTs that examined vitamin–mineral supplementation and the progression of atherosclerosis reached a similar conclusion (Bleys et al. 2006).

In addition, a Cochrane collaboration review by Rees et al. (2013), which included 19,715 participants, found no statistically significant effects of selenium supplementation on all-cause mortality, CVD mortality, nonfatal CVD events, and all CVD events, and therefore suggests that selenium supplements do not prevent the occurrence of major CVDs. They also suggest that taking selenium supplements is neither beneficial nor harmful for CVD, but is probably unnecessary for those who are already well nourished and who take their selenium from natural foods.

**Polyphenols**

A vast number of molecules has a polyphenol structure; thousands have been identified in higher plants and several hundred in edible plants, and they can be classified according to the number of phenol rings that they contain as well as the structural rings that bind these rings together (Manach et al. 2004). Polyphenols can be found in a wide range of fruits and vegetables, as well as in other foods/beverages (e.g., tea, wine, and soy milk), and include phenolic acids, flavonoids, stilbenes and lignans, and flavonoids, which may be further subdivided to six subclasses: flavonols, flavones, isoflavones, flavanones, anthocyanidins, and flavanols (Manach et al. 2004). Polyphenols in plants act as a defense system against infection and protect against ultraviolet radiation, pathogens, and physical damage (Davidson and Duchen 2007).

During the last few decades, researchers became interested in polyphenols, and the main reason for this was the recognition of the antioxidant properties of polyphenols (Manach et al. 2004). Apart from their antioxidant properties, polyphenols also have several other specific biological actions that are yet poorly understood (Manach et al. 2004). With regard to in vivo studies, one can find many experimental studies in the literature that show that polyphenols have many effects in animal models; they act as free radical scavengers, regulate nitric oxide, decrease leukocyte immobilization, induce apoptosis, inhibit cell proliferation and angiogenesis, and exhibit phytoestrogenic activity (Arts and Hollman 2005). However, results from animal studies cannot be extrapolated to humans as the bioavailability and metabolism of polyphenols vary between animals; consequently, human studies are needed before moving on to making recommendations (Chong et al. 2010).

As noted earlier, for other antioxidants, increased fruit and vegetable consumption has been associated with beneficial effects on CVD. However, fruits and vegetables contain an array of antioxidant substances, such as vitamins and nonnutrient phytochemicals like carotenoids and polyphenols, and the contribution of each of these substances in cardioprotection is not very clear (Chong et al. 2010). Although no information on causality can be obtained, researchers have suggested that polyphenols may explain part of the beneficial effect of fruit and vegetable consumption on CVD (Arts and Hollman 2005).

Up to date, most studies in humans have explored the associations of polyphenolic-rich beverages like tea, cocoa, and red wine, and intervention studies examining fruits are few (Chong-Han 2010). In addition, there is lack of studies examining hard outcomes. In a review by Chong-Han (2010) where fruit polyphenols were examined
in relation to CVD risk (platelet function, hypertension, lipid metabolism, and vascular function), it was concluded that there is some supportive evidence for the beneficial effects of fruit polyphenols on CVD risk; however, the literature is limited and the study design often varies.

Table 8.2 provides an overview of observational studies that have examined the effects of polyphenols on CVD risk. As Wang et al. (2013) noted, accurate estimation of polyphenol intake is critical for the investigation of their association with CVD outcomes, and it was only after 2003 that the U.S. Department of Agriculture released the first flavonoids databases, which included 26 flavonoids. This database was also updated in 2013. In addition, another database of polyphenol content of foods was recently published (Neveu et al. 2010). Owing to the limitation mentioned with regard to the availability of nutrition data on polyphenol content of foods, studies conducted after the release of the databases have shown a significant inverse association with CVD outcomes (Wang et al. 2013).

A meta-analysis of six prospective cohort studies that examined the association between flavonol intake and stroke risk concluded that a high intake of dietary flavonols compared with a low intake is associated with 20% lower stroke incidence (Hollman et al. 2010). However, the authors also note that owing to the small number of studies and an indication for publication bias, results should be interpreted with caution. Similar findings have also been reported in a meta-analysis that examined the relationship between flavonol intake and CHD mortality (Huxley and Neil 2003).

Currently, there is no clinical trial available examining the effects of polyphenols on major CVD outcomes; however, observational studies suggest a beneficial association. Some researchers have even suggested that polyphenols could be expected to have a “pleiotropic effect” similar to that of statins in the prevention of atherosclerosis (Kishimoto et al. 2013).

**Resveratrol**

Resveratrol is a polyphenol found in grape skin/seed, a variety of berries, peanuts, red wine, and the root of *Polygonum cuspidatum*, a traditional Chinese and Japanese medicinal material (Smoliga et al. 2011, Wang et al. 2012). Owing to red wine’s rich resveratrol content, it has been hypothesized to be an important factor in the French paradox (Liu et al. 2007). Cross-sectional evidence shows that 69.8% of women and 64.1% of men that are long-term consumers of multiple dietary supplements take supplemental resveratrol (Block et al. 2007).

A number of studies have proposed that it has many properties that can confer, among others, CVD benefit (Wang et al. 2012). *In vivo* evidence suggests that resveratrol has some beneficial effects in rodent models of stress and disease (Baur and Sinclair 2006). Moreover, the effects of resveratrol on isolated tissues or organs, many of which are associated with oxidative stress, are well documented (Opie and Lecour 2007).

Resveratrol can act as a radical-scavenging antioxidant and an anti-inflammatory agent, has been shown to induce platelet apoptosis, activate antiaging genes and facilitate extending lifespan in organisms like yeasts and worms, prevent the proliferation and differentiation of preadipocytes, promote fat mobilization in white
adipocytes, trigger lipolysis, and protect mice against diet-induced obesity (Wang et al. 2012). *In vivo* studies also suggest that dietary resveratrol is hypolipidemic, with a tendency for antitumor growth and antimetastasis effects observed in hepatoma-bearing rats (Miura et al. 2003). In addition, resveratrol has some beneficial antioxidant activity related to LDL oxidation (Fremont et al. 1999). Other metabolic roles of resveratrol include statin-like effects; furthermore, resveratrol treatment has been observed to elevate high-density lipoprotein (HDL) levels as well as promote the capacity of HDL to mediate cholesterol efflux (Wang et al. 2012). Moreover, it has been suggested that resveratrol has beneficial effects on glucose metabolism and insulin sensitivity, endothelial function, and cardiovascular remodeling (Wang et al. 2012). It also seems that resveratrol directly improves the function of a failing heart (Wang et al. 2012).

In contrast to the above, the complexity of resveratrol’s effects *in vivo* presents a major challenge in human studies (Smoliga et al. 2011). Although resveratrol seems to have many potential beneficial effects on CVD, its effects *in vivo* as well as its effective dose in animals cannot be generalized to humans (Reagan-Shaw et al. 2008). Many clinical trials that aim to decipher the safety, effective dose, and the effects of resveratrol are currently ongoing (Wang et al. 2012). Some skepticism exists with regard to resveratrol’s very low bioavailability (Smoliga et al. 2011), as effects seen *in vivo* may not be replicated in humans because of its rapid metabolism (Goldberg et al. 2003). In addition, resveratrol’s bioavailability from supplements is highly variable (Smoliga et al. 2011).

**LYCOPENE**

Lycopene is a carotenoid and is the pigment that gives tomatoes their distinctive red color (Ried and Fakler 2011). In addition, owing to its chemical structure, lycopene is a powerful antioxidant and free radical scavenger; however, it has also been hypothesized to reduce cholesterol levels and increase LDL degradation (Ried and Fakler 2011). *In vitro* evidence suggests that lycopene protects against oxidation, and it is considered to be the most effective quencher of LDL and human lymphoid cells; however, evidence in humans is limited (Chen et al. 2013b).

Observational studies have suggested that increased consumption of foods rich in lycopene has an inverse relationship with CVD and cancer (Rao and Agarwal 2000). However, lycopene metabolism is not yet fully understood, and, as with other antioxidants, its effects *in vitro* might differ from its effects *in vivo* (Chen et al. 2013b).

There is a lack of RCTs examining the relationship between long-term lycopene intake/supplementation and major CVD outcomes. However, a meta-analysis by Chen et al. (2013b) that pooled results from 13 RCTs revealed no statistically significant difference in the LDL lag time between the lycopene treatment group and the control group. In contrast, a meta-analysis of another three trials within the same publication suggests that lycopene significantly increases DNA tail length. The authors conclude that the effect of lycopene supplementation remains unconfirmed and its efficiency as an antioxidant *in vivo* needs further investigation. They also report that consumption of natural carotenoid-rich fruits and vegetables is preferable to lycopene supplementation. Another recent meta-analysis suggests that lycopene
taken in doses of ≥25 mg daily is effective in reducing LDL cholesterol by approximately 10% in patients with slightly elevated cholesterol levels.

A meta-analysis by Ried and Fakler (2011) suggests that lycopene is effective in reducing LDL and total serum cholesterol if taken in doses of ≥25 mg daily, and in reducing systolic blood pressure in individuals with hypertension.

CONCLUSION

In contrast to the observational evidence showing that increased consumption of fruits and vegetables is inversely associated with reduced CVD risk, prospective studies and RCTs of antioxidants have failed to show a consistent effect on CVD outcomes. Therefore, antioxidant supplement administration is not advisable for reducing the risk of developing CHD or stroke. In addition, there are no guidelines with regard to which fruits and vegetables contribute most to the risk reduction and, therefore, consuming a variety would be advisable. Further studies that examine which fruits and vegetables contribute more to the CVD risk reduction, as well as other chronic diseases, seen in observational studies are needed to make more specific recommendations.

REFERENCES

AHA (2013a). Coronary Artery Disease—Coronary Heart Disease. Available at: http://www.heart.org/HEARTORG/Conditions/More/MyHeartandStrokeNews/Coronary-Artery-Disease—Coronary-Heart-Disease_UCM_436416_Article.jsp.

AHA (2013b). What Is Cardiovascular Disease (Heart Disease)? Available at: http://www.heart.org/HEARTORG/Caregiver/Resources/WhatisCardiovascularDisease/What-is-Cardiovascular-Disease_UCM_301852_Article.jsp.


Coronary Heart Disease and Stroke


Coronary Heart Disease and Stroke


Diabetes mellitus—a noncommunicable disease that has reached the dimensions of an epidemic—affects more than 370 million people nowadays, mainly due to a worldwide explosion of obesity [1].

For many years, the pathophysiology of type 2 diabetes remained obscure, and insulin resistance was thought to be the leading cause of metabolic dysregulation. However, in recent years, a feedback loop that operates to ensure integration of glucose homeostasis and maintenance of glucose concentration in a narrow range has been recognized [2]. This feedback loop relies on a crosstalk between β-cells and peripheral tissues. Insulin released following β-cell stimulation mediates uptake of substrates—glucose, amino acids, and fatty acids—by insulin-sensitive tissues. In turn, peripheral tissues signal to islet cells according to their insulin needs. The whole process probably includes interaction between the brain and the humoral system. When insulin resistance is present, as in people with obesity and a sedentary lifestyle, β-cells increase insulin secretion to maintain euglycemia. However, if β-cells are defective, dysglycemia develops [3].

The combination of genes and environmental factors mediates insulin resistance and β-cell dysfunction. Even the in utero environment could result in epigenetic and gene expression changes that increase the risk of development of obesity and type 2 diabetes for the offspring later in life [4]. Diabetes mellitus is a complex
and multifactorial disease presenting with dysregulation in glucose homeostasis, and lipid and protein metabolism.

The metabolic derangement associated with diabetes causes secondary pathophysiologic changes in multiple organ systems that impose a heavy burden of morbidity and mortality from macrovascular and microvascular complications [5]. Moreover, metabolic syndrome and type 2 diabetes are related to chronic systemic inflammation and increased oxidative stress. Prolonged hyperglycemia alters intracellular metabolism and induces cumulative long-term changes in the structure and function of macromolecules like lipids, carbohydrates, proteins, and nucleic acids [6]. Oxidative stress also plays an important role in chronic diabetic complications and is considered to be associated with increased lipid peroxidation [7].

Under normal physiological conditions, there is a critical balance in the generation of oxygen free radicals and antioxidant defense systems used by organisms to deactivate the former and protect themselves against free radical toxicity [8]. Impairment in this equilibrium increases oxidative stress. Formation of lipid peroxides by the action of free radicals on unsaturated fatty acids has been implicated in the pathogenesis of atherosclerosis [9]. Other mechanisms that contribute to increased oxidative stress in diabetes may include increased advanced glycation and autoxidative glycosylation, metabolic stress resulting from changes in energy metabolism, alterations in the sorbitol pathway, increased inflammatory mediators, disturbed status of antioxidant defense systems, and localized tissue damage as a result of hypoxia and ischemic reperfusion injury. Advanced oxidation protein products accelerate atherosclerosis through promoting oxidative stress and inflammation [7,10,11].

Antioxidants are reducing agents that, by being oxidized themselves, stop the oxidation reaction that can lead to the creation of free radicals, and provoke oxidative stress and the damage and even the death of cells [12]. Hyperglycemia causes the generation of reactive oxygen species (ROS), which, in case endogenous antioxidants such as vitamins C and E, catalase, glutathione, and superoxide dismutase are missing, can lead to the generation of DNA alterations whose gene products can damage cells and tissues [13,14]. Oxidative stress, in turn, elevates the level of glycosylated hemoglobin (HbA1c) [15], increases insulin resistance, and decreases β-cell secretory capacity [16,17]. As a result, the idea that antioxidants can contribute to glycemic control in diabetes mellitus type 2 is reasonable but under question.

**ANTIOXIDANTS AND DIABETES**

Antioxidants can be provided through food or may be synthesized within the body [18] and are divided into two categories: hydrophilic antioxidants such as ascorbic acid (vitamin C), glutathione, lipoic acid, uric acid, and bilirubin, and lipophilic ones such as carotenes, oxy-carotenoid (vitamin A), tocopherol (vitamin E), and ubiquinol (coenzyme Q) [12].

Antioxidants act in three ways to prevent oxidant-induced cell damages. They can limit the generation of ROS, scavenge them, or eliminate and correct the damage that they can induce [19].
**Vitamin E**

Tocopherol (vitamin E) is a lipophilic reducing agent that scavenges ROS and thus prevents oxidant-induced cell damage [20]. The intake of vitamin E, which can be through fruits, vegetable oils, green vegetables, and nuts [21], is inversely related to the risk of type 2 diabetes, according to a 23-year population-based study involving 4304 middle-aged individuals from Finland [22]. Approximately 12.7% of the adult population in the United States take vitamin E as a dietary supplement [23]. Many studies have tried to describe exactly the way vitamin E acts to control the levels of plasma glucose and decrease oxidative stress [24]. Vitamin E inhibits the formation of advanced glycosylation end products, and interrupts glycosylation at an early step in the Maillard reaction [25], thus decreasing the glucosylation of hemoglobin [26]. On the other hand, it limits the apoptosis of pancreatic β-cells [27,28] and decreases, as the majority of antioxidants do, the creation of ROS and their disposal on β-cells [14]. It is also found that vitamin E is beneficial for nonalcoholic steatohepatitis, although in particularly high doses [29]. According to observational cohorts, high serum vitamin E level corresponds to a lower risk of diabetes. Case–control trials demonstrated that vitamin E supplementation improves glycemic control and reduces fasting glucose [30] and fasting insulin [31] in diabetic subjects. However, some RCTs [32] and other studies [33] showed no association between the risk of type 2 diabetes and vitamin E supplementation. Future large-scale, randomized trials are needed to demonstrate the actual effect of vitamin E supplementation on glycemic control [34], as the findings are controversial thus far.

**Vitamin C**

Ascorbic acid (vitamin C) is a hydrophilic antioxidant that resets tocopherol in the phase it was in before being oxidized [35]. It is a cofactor in several enzymatic reactions whose deficiency causes symptoms of scurvy. In healthy people, ascorbate blood levels range from 61 to 80 μmol/L; however, in people who have increased oxidative stress, these levels are lower than 45 μmol/L [36]. The levels of vitamin C are related in a larger extent to the consumption of fruits and vegetables than do vitamin E or carotenoids [37]. According to previous findings, people with diabetes have lower levels of vitamin C in their blood [38]. Thus, in persons with diabetes, this deficiency may lead to an increased risk of oxidative tissue damage. This may be explained by the fact that in diabetic individuals, (i) hyperglycemia may reduce renal reabsorption of vitamin C, (ii) blood glucose may compete with vitamin C for uptake into several cells and tissues, and (iii) increased oxidative stress may result in consumption antioxidant vitamin C. However, other studies sustain that although higher intake of antioxidants such as vitamin E, α-tocopherol, γ-tocopherol, δ-tocopherol, β-tocotrienol, and β-cryptoxanthin was inversely related to the risk for type 2 diabetes, intake of vitamin C as a supplement indicated no association to that risk [22].
**Carotenoids**

Carotenoids are lipophilic antioxidants that exist in chloroplasts and chromoplasts of plants and some photosynthetic bacteria and fungi. They exist in fruits and vegetables [39–41] and are responsible for their color (orange, red, and yellow). In nature, more than 600 carotenoids exist, 40 of which can be provided through diet; 90% of these are represented by $\alpha$-carotene, $\beta$-carotene, lycopene, lutein, and cryptoxanthin [42]. Particularly, $\alpha$-carotene and $\beta$-carotene exist in fruits; yellow–orange vegetables provide $\alpha$-cryptoxanthin, tomatoes provide lycopene [39,43], whereas lutein can be found in egg yolks [40]. Despite the general belief that serum retinol and carotenoids may battle chronic disease pathogenesis through their antioxidative properties [41,42], randomized controlled trials have not indicated any relation between $\beta$-carotene supplements and the risk of type 2 diabetes [43–46]. In addition, observational studies have shown ambiguous results [47–56].

**Serum Retinol**

Levels of serum retinol may positively relate to impaired glucose metabolism [57–59]. In two National Health and Nutrition Examination Surveys (NHANES) analyses—NHANES III (1988–1994) [56] and NHANES 2001–2006 [47]—hyperglycemia and insulin resistance did not relate to serum retinol, despite its association to the metabolic syndrome. The BioCycle Study (2005–2007), a prospective cohort of 259 healthy premenopausal women, indicated that retinol was positively associated with HOMA-IR (homeostasis model assessment of insulin resistance), and that this relationship was driven by insulin. Retinol was inversely associated with sex hormone–binding globulin (SHBG); the relation between serum carotenoids and HOMA-IR was not significant; whereas $\beta$-carotene was positively related to SHBG and $\beta$-cryptoxanthin was inversely associated with fasting glucose [60]. This is also in agreement with recent findings indicating a positive association of retinol-binding protein-4 with the presence and severity of coronary artery disease in people with or without overt diabetes [61].

**Lycopene**

Lycopene is the most efficient biological carotenoid singlet in oxygen quenching [62]. With reference to its relation to the risk of type 2 diabetes, the results remain controversial. In the first phase of NHANES, Ford et al. [47] found that type 2 diabetic subjects and people with glucose intolerance had lower serum lycopene than the healthy population and a negative relation to fasting plasma insulin. Coyne et al. [52] described a reduction of serum lycopene as age or physical inactivity increased.

According to a cohort of the women’s health study conducted by Wang et al. [63], no relation between type 2 diabetes and lycopene intake was found. The CARDIA cohort study showed that people who had several risk factors for diabetes had higher concentration of lycopene in their blood [64]. Case–control studies also found decreased lycopene levels in persons with diabetes [65].
**Selenium**

In 1957, selenium was recognized as an essential nutrient for animals and 15 years later cellular glutathione peroxidase (GPX1) was identified to be the first selenium-dependent enzyme [66]. Although GPX1 was shown to induce type 2 diabetes in mice, human studies have shown that low selenium intake increases the risk of type 2 diabetes, and there seems to be an association between low whole-blood GPx activity and higher measures of general and central adiposity [67,68].

A number of correlative epidemiological studies showed that in serious chronic diseases such as diabetes, there is a deficiency in serum levels of selenium [69]. On the contrary, in randomized, blinded, controlled prospective trials in humans, and a meta-analysis, the supplementation of selenium has not indicated a reduction in the incidence of diabetes and did not decrease mortality [70].

Gao et al. [71], through a recently published cohort study of 1925 Swedish men who were 50 years old and did not have diabetes, showed that dietary selenium does not play a role in glucose values, metabolism, or diabetes risk. On the other hand, Sarmento et al. [72], in a systematic review, indicated that although in patients with diabetes type 2, selenium levels lower than 14.1 μmol/L were associated with an increased risk for cardiovascular disease (RR 1.70; 95% CI 1.21–2.38), further prospective studies are needed to prove the proliferative role of selenium supplementation in cardiovascular disease in patients with diabetes.

**Polyphenols**

Polyphenols are the most abundant antioxidants in the diet. Their dietary intake is 1 g/day, which is much higher than intake of other dietary antioxidants [73,74]. Polyphenols can be found in fruits and vegetables, green tea, coffee, red wine, chocolate, olives, herbs, spices, nuts, and extra olive virgin oil [75]. They include two main classes: hydroxybenzoic acid derivatives (gallic acid, p-hydroxybenzoic acid, and protocatechuic acid) and hydroxycinnamic acid derivatives (chlorogenic acid, coumaric acid, caffeic acid, ferulic acid, and sinapic acid) [75]. Flavonoids are the most abundant polyphenols in the human diet. There exist six subclasses of flavonoids: anthocyanins (in red wine, black grape, strawberry), flavonols (in onions, blueberries, and broccoli), flavanols, flavanonones, flavones, and isoflavones (in soybeans, soy products). Dietary polyphenols are found to have antiallergic, anticarcinogenic, anti-inflammatory, free radical scavenging, antiviral, and antimicrobial properties, through their modulation of important signaling cell pathways, such as the activator protein-1 DNA binding, phosphoinositide 3 kinase/protein kinase B, nuclear factor-κB, mitogen-activated protein kinases, nuclear factor erythroid 2 related factor 2, and extracellular signal-regulated protein kinase [76].

Studies *in vitro*, animal models, and clinical trials have been conducted to determine the impact of polyphenols on glucose metabolism and homeostasis [77]. Polyphenols inhibit α-glucosidase and α-amylase, which are responsible for the transformation of dietary carbohydrates to glucose [78–80]. Some polyphenols, such as ferulic, chlorogenic, caffeic, and tannic acids, can inhibit glucose absorption by interacting with sodium-dependent glucose cotransporters, SGLT1 and SGLT2, in the gut [81,82].
Some studies have shown that polyphenols reduce insulin resistance and induce the production of glucose-dependent insulino tropic polypeptide GIP and glucagon-like polypeptide-1 (GLP-1), both known for their beneficial role on glucose metabolism [83,84]. Studies in mice also indicated that ferulic acid induces glucokinase activity and hepatic production of glycogen and increased insulin sensitivity [85]. They also showed that hesperidin and naringin, except for inducing gluconeogenesis in the liver, also decrease the activity of glucose-6-phosphatase and phosphoenolpyruvate carboxykinase, and in that way improve glycemic control [86,87]. In vitro studies showed that polyphenolic compounds such as resveratrol or quercetin promote glucose translocation in adipose and muscle cells through GLUT4 transporters, and through inducing the AMP-activated protein kinase pathway [88,89]. They may also induce phosphatidylinositide 3-kinase, which can lead to increase in glucose uptake [90].

Some polyphenolic compounds protect β-cells from glucotoxicity and oxidative stress (Figure 9.1) [91]. Resveratrol is also found to improve glucose tolerance, reduce oxidative stress in β-cells, and inhibit their apoptosis [92,93]. As a conclusion, polyphenols have a good impact on carbohydrate metabolism, insulin secretion, insulin resistance, and glucose homeostasis [94].

![Diagram showing the effects of dietary polyphenols on various aspects of glucose metabolism.](image)

**FIGURE 9.1** Dietary polyphenols as potential nutraceuticals in management of diabetes: a review. (From Bahadoran Z et al., *J Diabetes Metab Disord*, 12, 43, 2013.)
Numerous studies have assessed the dilemma of whether the supplementation of antioxidants is noninferior to the ingestion of natural antioxidants through diet. The market share of supplements is tremendous, and the actual effectiveness or safety of a long-term supranutritional supplementation of antioxidants remains obscure. For instance, a number of studies suggest a neutral or a negative effect of supplements on metabolism. Wang et al. [95] recently demonstrated that selenium supplementation to a mouse model of type 2 diabetes exhibited conflicting actions on glucose regulation. On the one hand, it increased β-cell mass and insulin secretion, thus lowering blood glucose; on the other hand, subsequent hyperinsulinemia reduced antioxidant defense capacity and exacerbated fatty liver degeneration, inducing insulin resistance.

A systematic review and meta-analysis of randomized control trials showed that vitamin E and/or C supplementation improved endothelial function in nonobese diabetic patients but had no impact in obese or overweight ones [96]. Another systematic review assessing the effect of supplement consumption of vitamin E, vitamin C, coenzyme Q10, α-lipoic acid, L-carnitine, ruboxistaurin, and diabetes management concluded there is no established benefit for antioxidant use in the management of diabetic complications [97].

More specifically, in biological systems, vitamin C may exert antioxidant, anti-inflammatory, enzyme cofactor, or prooxidant activity, depending on the specific tissue context. Commonly in clinical trials, vitamin C is assumed to act as an antioxidant or an anti-inflammatory factor without actual measurements of antioxidant capacity or oxidative stress to prove the latter [98].

Suksomboon et al. [99], in another systematic review for vitamin E supplementation, suggests no actual benefit for glycemic control in diabetic subjects in general, but implies a positive effect in a subgroup with low serum levels of the antioxidant component. The latter again points out the need for an individual approach.

De Leeuw et al. [100] has shown that intensive supplementation of magnesium in Mg-depleted patients with type 1 diabetes did not improve antioxidant capacity or the rate of LDL oxidation, although it increased magnesium concentration within erythrocytes.

Study designs and potential residual confounding with diet and lifestyle patterns may account for the conflicting results. For example, individuals who use nutrient supplements are also more likely to eat sophisticated or healthier diets, exercise more, and smoke fewer cigarettes. Although nutritional supplements are at the peak of dietetic therapies, the consumption of several specific foods (fatty fish, vegetables and fruits, nuts, etc.) with bioactive components within a balanced diet is a promising approach to manage dysmetabolic manifestations.

**CONCLUSION**

It is now well established that the risk of the development of diabetes and its complications, as well as the management of the metabolic disorder itself, are highly ameliorated when the ingestion of antioxidants through a diet rich in fruits and vegetables is...
increased. The same has not been proven concerning the consumption of supplements. The results in the literature are highly controversial, indicating that even serum levels of antioxidants might represent a marker of the derangement and not a direct causative effect. On the other hand, supplementation of antioxidants present with either beneficial or detrimental effects on metabolism, which in turn might have controversial effects on target tissues and clinical implications. Antioxidant supplements should be considered as medicinal products and undergo sufficient evaluation before marketing. Until there is enough evidence for their safety and efficacy, it is advisable that people with diabetes and related disorders should follow the European Association for the Study of Diabetes/American Diabetes Association and American Association of Clinical Endocrinologists nutritional guidelines and consume a diet rich in a variety of natural antioxidants in combination with an overall healthy lifestyle.

REFERENCES


95. Wang C, Yang S, Zhang N et al. Long-term supranutritional supplementation with sele- 
nate decreases hyperglycemia and promotes fatty liver degeneration by inducing hyper- 

antioxidant vitamin supplementation on endothelial function in type 2 diabetes mel- 
litus: A systematic review and meta-analysis of randomized controlled trials. *Obes Rev*, 


98. Michels AJ, Frei B. Myths, artifacts, and fatal flaws: Identifying limitations and oppor-

99. Suksomboon N, Poolsup N, Sinprasert S. Effects of vitamin E supplementation on gly-
caemic control in type 2 diabetes: Systematic review of randomized controlled trials. 

100. De Leeuw I, Engelen W, Aerts P, Schrans S. Effect of intensive magnesium supple-
tation on the in vitro oxidizability of LDL and VLDL in Mg-depleted type 1 diabetic 
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

INTRODUCTION

Antioxidants are chemicals that obstruct the action of other chemicals known as free radicals. Free radicals are highly reactive and have the potential to cause damage to cells, including damage that may lead to cancer. Free radicals are produced naturally in the body. Additionally, some environmental toxins may contain high levels of free radicals or encourage the body’s cells to produce more free radicals (Higdon, 2007).

Although some antioxidants are made naturally by the body, others can only be obtained by external (exogenous) sources, including the diet and dietary supplements. Laboratory and animal research has shown that exogenous antioxidants can help prevent the free radical damage associated with the development of cancer (Higdon and Drake, 2011).

FREE RADICALS AND THEIR CONTRIBUTION TO CANCER DEVELOPMENT

Free radicals are produced when an atom or a molecule either gains or losses an electron. Free radicals are formed naturally in the body and play an important role in many normal cellular processes. Nevertheless, at high concentrations, free radicals can be harmful to the body and hurt all major components of cells, including DNA, proteins, and cell membranes. The damage to cells caused by free radicals may cause the progression of cancer and other health conditions (Diplock et al., 1998; Valko et al., 2007).

Unusually high concentrations of free radicals in the body can be caused by exposure to ionizing radiation and other environmental toxins. When ionizing radiation hits an atom or a molecule in a cell, an electron may be misplaced, resulting to the formation of a free radical. The fabrication of oddly high levels of free radicals is the mechanism by which ionizing radiation kills cells. Furthermore, some environmental toxins (i.e., cigarette) may include large amounts of free radicals or encourage the cells to produce more free radicals.

Free radicals that contain the element oxygen are the most common type of free radicals produced in living tissue, also called reactive oxygen species (ROS) (Diplock et al., 1998; Valko et al., 2007).

ANTIOXIDANTS

Antioxidants (“free radical scavengers”) are chemicals that work together with and neutralize free radicals, hence preventing them from causing damage.
The body makes some of the antioxidants it uses to neutralize free radicals, known as endogenous antioxidants. Nevertheless, the body relies on external (exogenous) sources, primarily the diet, to obtain the rest of the antioxidants it needs, known as dietary antioxidants. Fruits, vegetables, and grains are rich sources of dietary antioxidants (Bouayed and Bohn, 2010). Examples of dietary antioxidants include folic acid, β-carotene, lycopene, and vitamins A, C, and E (α-tocopherol). The mineral element selenium is often thought to be a dietary antioxidant, the antioxidant effects of selenium are most likely due to the antioxidant activity of proteins in which it is an essential component, and not to selenium itself (Davis et al., 2012).

Cancer and Folic Acid

Cancer is thought to arise from DNA damage in excess of ongoing DNA repair and/or the inappropriate expression of critical genes. Because of the important roles played by folate in DNA and RNA synthesis and methylation, it is possible for folate intake to affect both DNA repair and gene expression with the consumption of at least five servings of fruits and vegetables per day, which it is associated with a diminished incidence of cancer. Fruits and vegetables are excellent sources of folate and contribute positively to the anticarcinogenic effect. Observational studies have found that a decreased folate status in human nutrition is associated with cancers of the cervix, colon and rectum, lung, esophagus, brain, pancreas, and breast. Intervention trials in humans have been conducted mainly with respect to cervical and colorectal cancer. The results in cervical cancer have been inconsistent (Choi and Mason, 2000), but with more relevant randomized intervention trials regarding colorectal cancer there is a different point of view (Gravo et al., 1998; Kim et al., 2001).

- Colorectal cancer: The role of folate in preventing colorectal cancer provides an example of the complexity of the interactions between genetics and the nutritional environment. In general, observational studies have found relatively low folate intake and high alcohol intake to be associated with increased incidence of colorectal cancer (Food and Nutrition Board, Institute of Medicine, 1998; Su and Arab, 2001; Terry et al., 2002). Alcohol interferes with the absorption and metabolism of folate (Herbert, 1999). In a prospective study of more than 45,000 male health professionals, an intake of more than two alcoholic drinks per day doubled the risk of colon cancer. The combination of high alcohol and low folate intake yielded an even greater risk of colon cancer. However, increased alcohol intake in individuals who consumed 650 μg or more of folate per day was not associated with an increased risk of colon cancer (Giovannucci et al., 1995). In some studies, individuals who are homozygous for the C677T MTHFR polymorphism (T/T) have been found to be at decreased risk for colon cancer when folate intake is adequate. However, when folate intake is low and/or alcohol intake is high, individuals with the (T/T) genotype have been found to be at an increased risk of colorectal cancer (Ma et al., 1997; Slattery et al., 1999).
• **Breast cancer:** A number of prospective studies have found that even moderate alcohol intake is associated with an increased risk of breast cancer in women. Recently, the results of three prospective studies suggested that increased folate intake may reduce the risk of breast cancer in women who regularly consume alcohol (Zhang et al., 1999b; Rohan et al., 2000; Sellers et al., 2001). A prospective study of more than 88,000 nurses found no relationship between folic acid intake and breast cancer in women who consumed less than one alcoholic drink per day. However, in those women consuming at least one alcoholic drink per day, folic acid intake of at least 600 μg daily resulted in about half the risk of breast cancer compared with women who consumed less than 300 μg of folic acid daily (Zhang et al., 1999b).

Table 10.1 presents the current recommended dietary allowance (RDA) for folate as micrograms (μg) of dietary folate equivalents (DFEs). The Food and Nutrition Board (FNB) developed DFEs to reflect the higher bioavailability of folic acid than that of food folate. At least 85% of folic acid is estimated to be bioavailable when taken with food, whereas only about 50% of folate naturally present in food is bioavailable. On the basis of these values, the FNB defined DFE as follows:

- 1 μg DFE = 1 μg food folate
- 1 μg DFE = 0.6 μg folic acid from fortified foods or dietary supplements consumed with foods
- 1 μg DFE = 0.5 μg folic acid from dietary supplements taken on an empty stomach

According to the Dietary Guidelines for Americans, moderate alcohol consumption is defined as having up to one drink per day for women and up to two drinks per day for men. This definition is referring to the amount consumed on any single day and is not intended as an average over several days. The Dietary Guidelines also state that it is not recommended that anyone begin drinking or drink more frequently on the basis of potential health benefits because moderate alcohol intake is also associated with increased risk of breast cancer, violence, drowning, and injuries from falls and motor vehicle crashes. For men, heavy drinking is typically defined as consuming 15 drinks or more per week; significant alcohol intake is considered >140 g/week in men and >70 g/week in women. For women, heavy drinking is typically defined as consuming eight drinks or more per week (U.S. Department of Agriculture [USDA] and U.S. Department of Health and Human Services, 2010). A standard drink in the United States is equal to 14.0 g (0.6 oz) of pure alcohol. Generally, this amount of pure alcohol is found in

- 12 oz of beer (5% alcohol content)
- 8 oz of malt liquor (7% alcohol content)
- 5 oz of wine (12% alcohol content)
- 1.5 oz or a “shot” of 80-proof (40% alcohol content) distilled spirits or liquor (e.g., gin, rum, vodka, and whiskey)
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Food</th>
<th>μg DFE per Serving</th>
<th>% DV(^a)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Beef liver, braised, 3 oz</td>
<td>215</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spinach, boiled, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>131</td>
<td>33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black-eyed peas (cowpeas), boiled, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breakfast cereals, fortified with 25% of the DV(^b)</td>
<td>100</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rice, white, medium-grain, cooked, 1/2 cup(^b)</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asparagus, boiled, 4 spears</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spaghetti, cooked, enriched, 1/2 cup(^b)</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brussels sprouts, frozen, boiled, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lettuce, romaine, shredded, 1 cup</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Avocado, raw, sliced, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spinach, raw, 1 cup</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Broccoli, chopped, frozen, cooked, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mustard greens, chopped, frozen, boiled, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green peas, frozen, boiled, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kidney beans, canned, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>46</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bread, white, 1 slice(^b)</td>
<td>43</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peanuts, dry roasted, 1 oz</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wheat germ, 2 tablespoons</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tomato juice, canned, 3/4 cup</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Crab, Dungeness, 3 oz</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orange juice, 3/4 cup</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Turnip greens, frozen, boiled, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orange, fresh, 1 small</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Papaya, raw, cubed, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banana, 1 medium</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yeast, baker’s, 1/4 teaspoon</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egg, whole, hard-boiled, 1 large</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vegetarian baked beans, canned, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cantaloupe, raw, 1 wedge</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fish, halibut, cooked, 3 oz</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milk, 1% fat, 1 cup</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ground beef, 85% lean, cooked, 3 oz</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chicken breast, roasted, 1/2 breast</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


\(^a\) DV = daily value. The Food and Drug Administration (FDA) developed DVs to help consumers compare the nutrient contents of products within the context of a total diet. The DV for folate is 400 μg for adults and children aged 4 years and older. However, the FDA does not require food labels to list folate content unless a food has been fortified with this nutrient. Foods providing 20% or more of the DV are considered to be high sources of a nutrient.

\(^b\) Fortified with folic acid as part of the folate fortification program.
Cancer and Selenium

There is a lot of evidence that selenium supplementation at high levels reduces the incidence of cancer in animals. In fact, in animal models of spontaneous, viral, and chemically induced cancers, selenium supplementation greatly reduced tumor incidence (Rayman and Clark, 2000). The evidence indicated that the methylated forms of selenium were the active species against tumors, and these methylated selenium compounds were produced at the greatest amounts with excess selenium intakes. Selenium deficiency did not appear to make animals more susceptible to developing cancerous tumors (Combs and Gray, 1998).

Various studies have shown a tendency for population that reside in areas with low soil selenium and have relatively low selenium intakes to have higher cancer mortality rates. Food sources of selenium depends from the soil content of selenium (Table 10.2). Results of epidemiologic studies of cancer incidence in groups with less variable selenium intakes have been less consistent, but also show a trend for individuals with lower selenium levels (blood and nails) to have a higher incidence of several different types of cancer. This trend is less pronounced in women. Chronic infection with viral hepatitis B or C significantly increases the risk of liver cancer. In a study of Taiwanese men with chronic viral hepatitis B or C, decreased plasma selenium concentrations were associated with an even greater risk of liver cancer (Yu et al., 1999). A case–control study within a prospective study of more than 9000 Finnish men and women examined serum selenium levels in 95 individuals consequently found to have lung cancer and 190 matched controls (Knekt et al., 1998). Lower serum selenium levels were related with an enlarged risk of lung cancer, and the association was more prominent in smokers. Additionally, a case–control study within a prospective study of more than 50,000 male health professionals in the United States found a significant inverse relationship between toenail selenium content and risk of prostate cancer in 181 men with advanced prostate cancer and 181 matched controls (Yoshizawa et al., 1998).

Toenail selenium concentration has been proposed as a long-term (6–12 months) indicator of human selenium status. In the analysis of covariance, the best predictors of toenail selenium concentration were selenium intake from supplements and food, and among supplement users also dietary β-carotene (Ovaskainen et al., 1993). In persons whose toenail selenium substance was consistent with an average intake of 159 μg/day, the possibility of progressive prostate cancer was only 35% of those whose toenail selenium content was consistent with an intake of 86 μg/day. In a prospective study of more than 9000 Japanese–American men, a case–control study that examined 249 established cases of prostate cancer and 249 matched controls found the risk of developing prostate cancer to be 50% lower in men with serum selenium levels in the highest quartile paralleled with those in the lowest quartile (Nomura et al., 2000). Moreover, another case–control study found that men with prediagnostic plasma selenium levels in the lowest quartile were four to five times more prone to progress to prostate cancer than those in the highest quartile (Brooks et al., 2001). On the other hand, a case–control study indicated an important inverse association between toenail selenium and the risk of colon cancer, but found no
# TABLE 10.2
## Food Sources of Selenium

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Food</th>
<th>Micrograms (μg) per Serving</th>
<th>Percent DV&lt;sup&gt;a&lt;/sup&gt;</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Brazil nuts, 1 oz (6–8 nuts)</td>
<td>544</td>
<td>777</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tuna, yellowfin, cooked, dry heat, 3 oz</td>
<td>92</td>
<td>131</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Halibut, cooked, dry heat, 3 oz</td>
<td>47</td>
<td>67</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sardines, canned in oil, drained solids with bone, 3 oz</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ham, roasted, 3 oz</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Shrimp, canned, 3 oz</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Macaroni, enriched, cooked, 1 cup</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beef steak, bottom round, roasted, 3 oz</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Turkey, boneless, roasted, 3 oz</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beef liver, pan fried, 3 oz</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chicken, light meat, roasted, 3 oz</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cottage cheese, 1% milk fat, 1 cup</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rice, brown, long-grain, cooked, 1 cup</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Beef, ground, 25% fat, broiled, 3 oz</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egg, hard-boiled, 1 large</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Puffed wheat ready-to-eat cereal, fortified, 1 cup</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bread, whole-wheat, 1 slice</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Baked beans, canned, plain or vegetarian, 1 cup</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oatmeal, regular and quick, unenriched, cooked with water, 1 cup</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spinach, frozen, boiled, 1 cup</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Milk, 1% fat, 1 cup</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Yogurt, plain, low fat, 1 cup</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lentils, boiled, 1 cup</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bread, white, 1 slice</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spaghetti sauce, marinara, 1 cup</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cashew nuts, dry roasted, 1 oz</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Corn flakes, 1 cup</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green peas, frozen, boiled, 1 cup</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bananas, sliced, 1 cup</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Potato, baked, flesh and skin, 1 potato</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peaches, canned in water, solids and liquids, 1 cup</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carrots, raw, 1 cup</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lettuce, iceberg, raw, 1 cup</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


<sup>a</sup> DV = daily value. DVs were developed by the FDA to help consumers compare the nutrient contents of products within the context of a total diet. The DV for selenium is 70 μg for adults and children aged 4 years and older. Foods providing 20% or more of the DV are considered to be high sources of a nutrient. 1 oz = 28.350 g.
associations between toenail selenium and the risk of breast cancer or prostate cancer (Ghadirian et al., 2000).

An intervention trial commenced among a general population of more than 130,000 individuals in five townships of Qidong, China, a high-risk area for viral hepatitis B infection and liver cancer, which provided table salt enriched with sodium selenite to the population of one township (almost 21,000 people), with the other four areas designated as controls. Throughout an 8-year follow-up period, the average frequency of liver cancer was condensed by 35% in the selenium-enhanced population, while no decline was uncovered in the control populations. In a clinical trial in the identical area, 226 persons with sign of chronic hepatitis B infection were supplemented with either 200 μg of selenium in the form of selenium-enhanced yeast tablet or a placebo yeast tablet daily. Throughout the 4-year follow-up period, 7 of 113 individuals receiving placebo advanced to primary liver cancer, while none of the 113 subjects supplemented with selenium presented liver cancer (Yu et al., 1997).

Furthermore, a double-blind, placebo-controlled study in the United States of 1250 older people with a history of skin cancer discovered that 200 μg/day of selenium-enhanced yeast for an average of 7.4 years did not influence the reappearance of skin cancers (Clark et al., 1996). Nevertheless, selenium supplementation was related to a 52% reduction in prostate cancer frequency and a 33% reduction in total cancer in men. The protective outcome of selenium supplementation was highest in those with lesser pretreatment plasma selenium levels. Selenium supplementation did not decrease the probability of cancer in women, who were 25% of the participants (Rayman and Clark, 2000).

The mechanisms for the protective effect of selenium are the maximized activity of antioxidant selenoenzymes and improved antioxidant status, improved immune system function, distressed metabolism of carcinogens, and increased levels of selenium metabolites that prevent tumor cell growth. The nutritional quantity of 40–100 μg/day selenium in adults maximizes antioxidant selenoenzyme activity and probably enhances immune system function and carcinogen metabolism. At supranutritional levels of 200–300 μg/day selenium in adults, the formation of selenium metabolites, especially methylated forms of selenium, may also exert anticarcinogenic effects (Combs and Gray, 1998).

**Cancer and Vitamin C**

A large number of studies have shown that increased consumption of fresh fruits and vegetables is associated with a reduced risk for most types of cancer (Steinmetz and Potter, 1996) (Table 10.3). These studies are the core for dietary guidelines recognized by the USDA and the National Cancer Institute, which endorse at least five servings of fruits and vegetables per day. A number of case–control studies have investigated the role of vitamin C in cancer prevention. Most have shown that higher intakes of vitamin C are associated with decreased incidence of cancers of the mouth, throat and vocal chords, esophagus, stomach, colon–rectum, and lung (Carr and Frei, 1999). Because the possibility of bias is greater in case–control studies, prospective studies are generally given more weight in the evaluation of the effect of nutrient intake on disease. In general, prospective studies in which the lowest intake
Cancer group consumed more than 86 mg of vitamin C daily have not found differences in cancer risk, while studies finding significant cancer risk reductions found them in people consuming at least 80–110 mg of vitamin C daily (Carr and Frei, 1999).

A prospective study of 870 men for a period of 25 years established that those who had an intake of more than 83 mg of vitamin C daily had a 64% reduction in lung cancer compared with those who received less than 63 mg/day (Kromhout, 1987). Although most large prospective studies found no association between breast cancer and vitamin C intake, two studies found dietary vitamin C intake to be inversely associated with breast cancer risk in certain subgroups. In the Nurses’ Health Study, premenopausal women with a family history of breast cancer who consumed an average of 205 mg/day of vitamin C from foods had a 63% lower risk of breast cancer than those who consumed an average of 70 mg/day (Zhang et al., 1999a). In the Swedish Mammography Cohort, women who were overweight and consumed an average of 110 mg/day of vitamin C had a 39% lower risk of breast

**TABLE 10.3**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Food</th>
<th>Milligrams (mg) per Serving</th>
<th>Percent (%) DVa</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Red pepper, sweet, raw, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>158</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orange juice, 3/4 cup</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>155</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Orange, 1 medium</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grapefruit juice, 3/4 cup</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kiwifruit, 1 medium</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green pepper, sweet, raw, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Broccoli, cooked, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>85</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strawberries, fresh, sliced, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Brussels sprouts, cooked, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>80</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grapefruit, 1/2 medium</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Broccoli, raw, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>65</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tomato juice, 3/4 cup</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cantaloupe, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cabbage, cooked, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cauliflower, raw, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Potato, baked, 1 medium</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tomato, raw, 1 medium</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spinach, cooked, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green peas, frozen, cooked, 1/2 cup</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>13</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


a DV = daily value. DVs were developed by the FDA to help consumers compare the nutrient contents of products within the context of a total diet. The DV for vitamin C is 60 mg for adults and children aged 4 years and older. The FDA requires all food labels to list the percent DV for vitamin C. Foods providing 20% or more of the DV are considered to be high sources of a nutrient.
cancer compared with overweight women who consumed an average of 31 mg/day (Michels et al., 2001). A number of observational studies have found increased dietary vitamin C intake to be associated with decreased risk of stomach cancer, and laboratory experiments indicate that vitamin C inhibits the formation of carcinogenic compounds in the stomach. Infection with the bacterium *Helicobacter pylori* is known to increase the risk of stomach cancer and also appears to lower the vitamin C content of stomach secretions. Although two intervention studies did not find a decrease in the occurrence of stomach cancer with vitamin C supplementation, more recent research suggests that vitamin C supplementation may be a useful addition to standard *H. pylori* eradication therapy in reducing the risk of gastric cancer (Feiz and Mobarhan, 2002).

**Antioxidant Supplementation and Prevention of Cancer**

In laboratory and animal studies, the presence of increased levels of exogenous antioxidants has been shown to prevent the types of free radical damage that have been associated with cancer development. Therefore, researchers have investigated whether taking dietary antioxidant supplements can help lower the risk of developing or dying from cancer in humans.

Many observational studies, including case–control studies and cohort studies, have been conducted to investigate whether the use of dietary antioxidant supplements is associated with reduced risks of cancer in humans. Overall, these studies have yielded mixed results (Patterson et al., 1997). Because observational studies cannot adequately control for biases that might influence study outcomes, the results of any individual observational study must be viewed with caution.

Randomized controlled clinical trials, on the other hand, lack most of the biases that limit the reliability of observational studies. As a result, randomized trials are deemed to present the most powerful and reliable evidence of the benefit and/or harm of a health-related intervention. To date, nine randomized controlled trials of dietary antioxidant supplements for cancer prevention have been conducted worldwide. Many of the trials were sponsored by the National Cancer Institute, and some of them are presented below.

- **α-Tocopherol/β-Carotene Cancer Prevention Study (ATBC):** This trial investigated whether the use of α-tocopherol and/or β-carotene supplements for 5–8 years could help reduce the incidence of lung and other cancers in middle-aged male smokers in Finland. Initial results of the trial, reported in 1994, showed an increase in the incidence of lung cancer among the participants who took β-carotene supplements (20 mg/day); in contrast, α-tocopherol supplementation (50 mg/day) had no effect on lung cancer incidence (The Alpha-Tocopherol, Beta Carotene Cancer Prevention Study Group, 1994). Later results showed no effect of β-carotene or α-tocopherol supplementation on the incidence of urothelial (bladder, ureter, or renal pelvis), pancreatic, colorectal, renal cell (kidney), or upper aerodigestive tract (oral/pharyngeal, esophageal, or laryngeal) cancers (Rautalahti et al., 1999; Albanes et al., 2000; Virtamo et al., 2000; Wright et al., 2007).
• **Carotene and Retinol Efficacy Trial (CARET):** This U.S. trial examined the effects of daily supplementation with β-carotene and retinol (vitamin A) on the incidence of lung cancer, other cancers, and death among people who were at high risk of lung cancer because of a history of smoking or exposure to asbestos. The trial began in 1983 and ended in late 1995, 2 years earlier than originally planned. Results reported in 1996 showed that daily supplementation with both 15 mg β-carotene and 25,000 international units (IU) retinol was associated with increased lung cancer and increased death from all causes (all-cause mortality) (Omenn et al., 1996). A 2004 report showed that these adverse effects persisted up to 6 years after supplementation ended, although the elevated risks of lung cancer and all-cause mortality were no longer statistically significant (Goodman et al., 2004). Additional results, reported in 2009, showed that β-carotene and retinol supplementation had no effect on the incidence of prostate cancer (Neuhouser et al., 2009).

• **Women's Health Study (WHS):** This trial investigated the effects of β-carotene supplementation (50 mg every other day), vitamin E supplementation (600 IU every other day), and aspirin (100 mg every other day) on the incidence of cancer and cardiovascular disease in U.S. women ages 45 years and older. The results, reported in 1999, showed no benefit or harm associated with 2 years of β-carotene supplementation (Lee et al., 1999). In 2005, similar results were reported for vitamin E supplementation (Lee et al., 2005).

• **Heart Outcomes Prevention Evaluation—The Ongoing Outcomes (HOPE-TOO) Study:** This international trial examined the effects of α-tocopherol supplementation on cancer incidence, death from cancer, and the incidence of major cardiovascular events (heart attack, stroke, or death from heart disease) in people with cardiovascular disease or diabetes. The results, reported in 2005, showed no effect of daily supplementation with α-tocopherol (400 IU) for a median of 7 years on any of the outcomes (Lonn et al., 2005).

• **Selenium and Vitamin E Cancer Prevention Trial (SELECT):** This U.S. trial investigated whether daily supplementation with selenium (200 μg), vitamin E (400 IU), or both would reduce the incidence of prostate cancer in men ages 50 years and older. The study began in 2001 and was stopped in 2008, approximately 5 years earlier than originally planned. Results reported in late 2008 showed that the use of these supplements for a median duration of 5.5 years did not reduce the incidence of prostate or other cancers (Lippman et al., 2009). Updated findings from the study, reported in 2011, showed that, after an average of 7 years (5.5 years on supplements and 1.5 years off supplements), there were 17% more cases of prostate cancer among men taking vitamin E alone than among men taking a placebo (Klein et al., 2011). No increase in prostate risk was observed for men assigned to take selenium alone or vitamin E plus selenium compared with men assigned to take a placebo (Lippman et al., 2009).

• **Physicians’ Health Study II (PHS II):** This trial examined whether supplementation with vitamin E, vitamin C, or both would reduce the incidence of cancer in male U.S. physicians ages 50 years and older. The results, reported in 2009, showed that the use of these supplements (400 IU vitamin
Every other day, 500 mg vitamin C every day, or a combination of the two) for a median of 7.6 years did not reduce the incidence of prostate cancer or other cancers, including lymphoma, leukemia, melanoma, and cancers of the lung, bladder, pancreas, and colon and rectum (Gaziano et al., 2009).

Overall, the nine randomized controlled clinical trials did not provide evidence that dietary antioxidant supplements are beneficial in primary cancer prevention. In addition, a systematic review of the available evidence regarding the use of vitamin and mineral supplements for the prevention of chronic diseases, including cancer, conducted for the U.S. Preventive Services Task Force likewise found no clear evidence of a benefit in preventing cancer (Fortmann et al., 2013). A review of almost 80 randomized clinical studies on antioxidant use (vitamins A, C, E; β-carotene; and selenium) for preventing disease-related death provides evidence that further challenges the widely claimed benefits of antioxidants. Collectively, the studies included a total of almost 300,000 men and women (described as both “healthy” and with diseases in a “stable phase”). Significantly more deaths were observed in men and women taking vitamin E, β-carotene, or doses of vitamin A that exceed the RDA, which are 700 μg for women and 900 μg for men. These findings led the authors to caution against the use of antioxidant supplements for both the general population and in those with various diseases (Bjelakovic et al., 2012).

The lack of benefit in clinical studies can be explained by differences in the effects of the tested antioxidants when they are consumed as purified chemicals as opposed to when they are consumed in foods, which contain complex mixtures of antioxidants, vitamins, and minerals (Bouayed and Bohn, 2010). Therefore, obtaining a more inclusive information of the antioxidant content of individual foods, how the various antioxidants and other substances in foods interact with one another, and factors that influence the uptake and distribution of food-derived antioxidants in the body are active areas of ongoing cancer prevention research.

The measure of antioxidant capacity (AC) considers the cumulative action of all the antioxidants present in plasma and body fluids, thus providing an integrated parameter rather than the simple sum of measurable antioxidants. The capacity of known and unknown antioxidants and their synergistic interaction is therefore assessed, giving an insight into the delicate balance in vivo between oxidants and antioxidants. Measuring plasma AC may help in the evaluation of physiological, environmental, and nutritional factors of the redox status in humans. Determining plasma AC may help identify conditions affecting oxidative status in vivo (e.g., exposure to reactive oxygen species and antioxidant supplementation) (Ghiselli, 2000). The term “antioxidant” refers mainly to nonnutrient compounds in foods, such as polyphenols, which have AC in vitro and so provide an artificial index of antioxidant strength—the ORAC measurement. Oxygen radical absorbance capacity (ORAC) is a method of measuring antioxidant capacities in biological samples in vitro. Values are expressed as the sum of the lipid-soluble (e.g., carotenoid) and water-soluble (e.g., phenolic) antioxidant fractions (i.e., “total ORAC”) reported as in micromoles Trolox equivalents per 100 g sample, and are compared with assessments of total polyphenol content in the samples. These values are considered biologically irrelevant by the European Food Safety Authority (EFSA) and USDA (EFSA Panel on Dietetic Products, Nutrition and Allergies, 2010).
Many common foods are good sources of antioxidants. In the list of foods given below, “rich in antioxidants” usually means at least an ORAC rating of 1000 per 100 g. A typical apple or pear weighs around 200 g, and hence 200 g can be considered as the serving size.

Spices, herbs, and essential oils are rich in antioxidant properties in the plant itself and in vitro; however, the serving size is too small to supply antioxidants via the diet. Typical spices high in antioxidants (confirmed in vitro) are clove, cinnamon, oregano, turmeric, cumin, parsley, basil, curry powder, mustard seed, ginger, pepper, chili powder, paprika, garlic, coriander, onion, and cardamom. Typical herbs are sage, thyme, marjoram, tarragon, peppermint, oregano, savory, basil, and dill weed.

Dried fruits are a good source of antioxidants by weight/serving size as the water has been removed, making the ratio of antioxidants higher. Typical dried fruits are pears, apples, plums, peaches, raisins, figs, and dates. Dried raisins are high in polyphenol. Red wine is high in total polyphenol, which supplies antioxidant quality that is unlikely to be conserved following digestion (see the next section).

Deeply pigmented fruits like cranberries, blueberries, plums, blackberries, raspberries, strawberries, blackcurrants, figs, cherries, guava, oranges, mango, grape juice, and pomegranate juice also have significant ORAC scores (Table 10.4) (USDA, 2012).

With nearly all vegetables, conventional boiling can reduce the ORAC value by up to 90%, while steaming retains more of the antioxidants.

**Dilemma of Taking Antioxidant Supplements while Having Cancer**

Several randomized controlled trials, some including only small numbers of patients, have investigated whether taking antioxidant supplements during cancer treatment alters the effectiveness or reduces the toxicity of specific therapies (Lawenda et al., 2008). Although these trials had mixed results, some found that people who took antioxidant supplements during cancer therapy had worse outcomes, especially if they were smokers.

Additional large randomized controlled trials are needed to provide clear scientific evidence about the potential benefits or harms of taking antioxidant supplements during cancer treatment. Until more is known about the effects of antioxidant supplements in cancer patients, these supplements should be used with caution.

Antioxidants prevent the chemical process of oxidation. However, oxidation helps the body kill off bad cells like cancer cells, as well as healthy cells. Different parts of the body have their own unique ways of developing cancer. Similarly, one organ responds differently to nutrients than another; thus, the supplement that helps lower your risk for one cancer could raise your risk of another.

Studies also suggest that taking antioxidant supplements such as vitamin C during chemotherapy may not be a good idea. In one study, large doses of vitamin C supplements reduced the effectiveness of several anticancer drugs including methotrexate, doxorubicin, and imatinib, resulting in 30–70% fewer cancer cells killed. The authors concluded that vitamin C may actually be helping cancer cells survive by protecting the cells’ power source (Heaney et al., 2008). In another study, the antioxidants vitamin C and N-acetylcysteine (often sold under the name “NAC”) significantly reduced the effectiveness of anticancer drugs vinblastine and cisplatin (Fukumura et al., 2012).
Antioxidant supplements have not been found to diminish the risk of cancer in most studies. In effect, for people with a higher than normal risk of cancer (smokers and people who have already survived one cancer) and those being treated for cancer with chemotherapy, antioxidant supplements were found to be destructive. Dietary supplements are intended to be used when the body is not receiving certain nutrients in the right amounts; however, like drugs, they can have unplanned adverse effects and therefore should only be taken as recommended.

Consequently, some established strategies that can help reduce the risk of cancer are as follows:

- Maintain a healthy weight by limiting the high-calorie foods you eat and getting regular physical activity.
- Eat foods rich in antioxidants (rather than use supplements).
- Eat plenty of fruits and vegetables every day (fruits and vegetables should cover half of the plate).

### TABLE 10.4

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rank</th>
<th>Food Item</th>
<th>Serving Size</th>
<th>Total Antioxidant Capacity per Serving Size</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Small red bean (dried)</td>
<td>Half cup</td>
<td>13,727</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Wild blueberry</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>13,427</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Red kidney bean (dried)</td>
<td>Half cup</td>
<td>13,259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Pinto bean</td>
<td>Half cup</td>
<td>11,864</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Blueberry (cultivated)</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>9019</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Cranberry</td>
<td>1 cup (whole)</td>
<td>8983</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Artichoke (cooked)</td>
<td>1 cup (hearts)</td>
<td>7904</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Blackberry</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>7701</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Prune</td>
<td>Half cup</td>
<td>7291</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Raspberry</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>6058</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Strawberry</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>5938</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Red delicious apple</td>
<td>1 whole</td>
<td>5900</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Granny Smith apple</td>
<td>1 whole</td>
<td>5381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Pecan</td>
<td>1 oz</td>
<td>5095</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Sweet cherry</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>4873</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Black plum</td>
<td>1 whole</td>
<td>4844</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Russet potato (cooked)</td>
<td>1 whole</td>
<td>4649</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>Black bean (dried)</td>
<td>Half cup</td>
<td>4181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>Plum</td>
<td>1 whole</td>
<td>4118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Gala apple</td>
<td>1 whole</td>
<td>3903</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

• Limit the amount of red meat and processed meat (hot dogs, sausages, bologna, etc.) eaten.
• Eat foods made of whole grains.

**FOODS RICH IN ANTIOXIDANTS**

Antioxidants are plentiful in fruits and vegetables, nuts, grains, and some meats, poultry, and fish. The list below describes food sources of common antioxidants.

- **β-Carotene** is found in many foods that are orange in color, including sweet potatoes, carrots, cantaloupe, squash, apricots, pumpkin, and mangoes. Some green leafy vegetables, including collard greens, spinach, and kale, are also rich in β-carotene.
- **Lutein**, best known for its association with healthy eyes, is abundant in green, leafy vegetables such as collard greens, spinach, and kale.
- **Lycopene** is a potent antioxidant found in tomatoes, watermelon, guava, papaya, apricots, pink grapefruit, blood oranges, and other foods. Estimates suggest that 85% of the American dietary intake of lycopene comes from tomatoes and tomato products.
- **Selenium** is a mineral, not an antioxidant nutrient. However, it is a component of antioxidant enzymes. Plant foods like rice and wheat are the major dietary sources of selenium in most countries. The amount of selenium in soil, which varies by region, determines the amount of selenium in the foods grown in that soil. Animals that eat grains or plants grown in selenium-rich soil have higher levels of selenium in their muscle. In the United States, meats and bread are common sources of dietary selenium. Brazil nuts also contain large quantities of selenium.
- **Vitamin A** is found in three main forms: retinol (vitamin A1), 3,4-didehydro-retinol (vitamin A2), and 3-hydroxy-retinol (vitamin A3). Foods rich in vitamin A include liver, sweet potatoes, carrots, milk, egg yolks, and mozzarella cheese.
- **Vitamin C** is also called ascorbic acid, and can be found in high abundance in many fruits and vegetables and is also found in cereals, beef, poultry, and fish.
- **Vitamin E**, also known as α-tocopherol, is found in almonds; in many oils including wheat germ, safflower, corn, and soybean oils; and also in mangoes, nuts, broccoli, and other foods.

**PREVENTION**

**CANCER AND FRUITS AND VEGETABLES**

Many studies discovered a physically powerful link between eating fruits and vegetables and protection against cancer. The results of the case–control studies indicate that eating a diet rich in fruits and vegetables decreases the risk of developing several
different types of cancer, particularly cancers of the digestive tract (oropharynx, esophagus, stomach, colon, and rectum) and lung (Block et al., 1992; World Cancer Research Fund, 1997). The balanced combinations of fruits and vegetables decreases the risk of cancer (Ohigashi and Murakami, 2004). The results of these studies are the foundation for the National Cancer Institute’s “five-a-day” program, which is aimed at increasing the fruit and vegetable consumption of the American public to a minimum of five servings daily. In contrast to the results of case–control studies, many prospective cohort studies have found little or no association between total fruit and vegetable intake and the risk of various cancers (Michels et al., 2000; Smith-Warner et al., 2001, 2003; Flood et al., 2002; Michaud et al., 2002; McCullough et al., 2003; Hung et al., 2004; Key et al., 2004; Lin et al., 2005; Sato et al., 2005; Tsubono et al., 2005; Van Gils et al., 2005). There is some reasoning for this. Case–control studies, in which the past diets of people with a particular type of cancer are compared with the diets of those without cancer, are more susceptible to bias in the selection of participants and dietary recall than prospective cohort studies, which collect information on the diets of large cohorts of patients over time. Although prospective cohort studies provide weak support for an association between total fruit and vegetable consumption and cancer risk, they provide some evidence that high intakes of certain classes of fruits or vegetables are associated with a reduced risk of individual cancers. Higher intakes of fruits were associated with modest but significant reductions in lung cancer risk in a pooled analysis of eight prospective cohort studies (Smith-Warner et al., 2003). In men, higher intakes of cruciferous vegetables were associated with significant reductions in the risk of bladder cancer, and higher intakes of tomato products were associated with significant reductions in the risk of prostate cancer (Higdon, 2007).

Cohort studies, which follow large groups of initially healthy individuals for years, generally provide more reliable information than case–control studies because they do not rely on information from the past. Furthermore, data from cohort studies have not consistently shown that a diet rich in fruits and vegetables prevents cancer in general. For example, in the Nurses’ Health Study and the Health Professionals Follow-up Study, during a 14-year period, men and women with the highest intake of fruits and vegetables (8+ servings a day) were just as likely to have developed cancer as those who ate the fewest daily servings (<1.5) (Hung et al., 2004).

A more likely possibility is that some types of fruits and vegetables may protect against certain cancers. A massive report by the World Cancer Research Fund and the American Institute for Cancer Research suggests that nonstarchy vegetables—such as lettuce and other leafy greens, broccoli, bok choy, cabbage, as well as garlic, onions, and the like—and fruits “probably” protect against several types of cancers, including those of the mouth, throat, voice box, esophagus, and stomach; fruits probably also protect against lung cancer (World Cancer Research Fund, 2007).

Specific components of fruits and vegetables may also be protective against cancer. For example, a line of research stemming from a finding from the Health Professionals Follow-up Study suggests that tomatoes may help protect men against prostate cancer, especially aggressive forms of it (Giovannucci et al., 2007). One of the pigments that give tomatoes their red hue, lycopene, could be involved in this protective effect. Although several studies other than the Health Professionals
Study have also demonstrated a link between tomatoes or lycopene and prostate cancer, others have not or have found only a weak connection (Kavanaugh et al., 2007). Taken as a whole, however, these studies suggest that increased consumption of tomato-based products (especially cooked tomato products) and other lycopene-containing foods may reduce the occurrence of prostate cancer (World Cancer Research Fund, 2007). Lycopene is one of several carotenoids (compounds that the body can turn into vitamin A) found in brightly colored fruits and vegetables, and research suggests that foods containing carotenoids may protect against lung, mouth, and throat cancer (World Cancer Research Fund, 2007). However, more research is needed before we know the exact relationship between fruits and vegetables, carotenoids, and cancer.

**Intake Recommendations**

The National Cancer Institute recommends a range of five to nine servings of fruits and vegetables daily. Specifically, adolescent and adult women should aim for seven daily servings, whereas adolescent and adult men should aim for nine daily servings. The 2010 Dietary Guidelines for Americans are similar with respect to fruit and vegetable intake recommendations; however, they are tied to energy (caloric) intake rather than age and sex. Daily consumption of 2 cups (4 servings) of fruit and 2.5 cups (5 servings) of vegetables are recommended for people who consume 8368 kJ/day (2000 kcal/day), whereas 1.5 cups of fruit (3 servings) and 2 cups (4 servings) of vegetables are recommended for people who consume 6693.4 kJ/day (1600 kcal/day). In both cases, consumption of a variety of different fruits and vegetables is recommended, including dark green, red, orange, yellow, blue, and purple fruits and vegetables, as well as legumes (peas and beans), onions, and garlic (Higdon, 2007).

**Cruciferous Vegetables**

Cruciferous or *Brassica* vegetables are plants in the family known as *Cruciferae* (*Brassicaceae*). Many commonly consumed cruciferous vegetables come from the *Brassica* genus, including broccoli, Brussels sprouts, cabbage, cauliflower, collard greens, kale, kohlrabi, mustard, rutabaga, turnips, bok choy, and Chinese cabbage (Kristal and Lampe, 2002). Arugula, horseradish, radish, wasabi, and watercress are also cruciferous vegetables. Cruciferous vegetables are exceptional as they are good sources of glucosinolates, sulfur-containing compounds that are responsible for their pungent aromas and spicy (or bitter) taste. The hydrolysis (breakdown) of glucosinolates by a class of plant enzymes called myrosinase results in the formation of biologically active compounds, such as indoles and isothiocyanates. Myrosinase is physically separated from glucosinolates in intact plant cells. However, when cruciferous vegetables are chopped or chewed, myrosinase comes in contact with glucosinolates and catalyzes their hydrolysis. Scientists are currently investigating the potential for high intakes of cruciferous vegetables and several glucosinolate hydrolysis products to prevent cancer.

Akin to most other vegetables, cruciferous vegetables are good sources of a variety of nutrients and phytochemicals that may work synergistically to help prevent cancer. One challenge in studying the relationships between cruciferous vegetable
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

intakes and cancer risk in humans is sorting out the benefits of diets that are generally rich in vegetables from those that are specifically rich in cruciferous vegetables. One characteristic that sets cruciferous vegetables apart from other vegetables is their high glucosinolate content. Glucosinolate hydrolysis products could help prevent cancer by enhancing the elimination of carcinogens before they can damage DNA or by altering cell signaling pathways in ways that help prevent normal cells from being transformed into cancerous cells. Some glucosinolate hydrolysis products may alter the metabolism or activity of hormones like estrogen in ways that inhibit the development of hormone-sensitive cancers (Higdon, 2007).

**IODINE AND THYROID FUNCTION AND CRUCIFEROUS VEGETABLES**

Very high intakes of cruciferous vegetables, such as cabbage and turnips, have been found to cause hypothyroidism in animals (Fenwick et al., 1983). Two mechanisms have been identified to explain this effect. The hydrolysis of some glucosinolates found in cruciferous vegetables (e.g., progoitrin) may yield a compound known as goitrin, which has been found to interfere with thyroid hormone synthesis. The hydrolysis of another class of glucosinolates, known as indole glucosinolates, results in the release of thiocyanate ions, which can compete with iodine for uptake by the thyroid gland. Increased exposure to thiocyanate ions from cruciferous vegetable consumption or, more commonly, cigarette smoking does not appear to increase the risk of hypothyroidism unless accompanied by iodine deficiency. One study in humans found that the consumption of 150 g/day (5 oz/day) of cooked Brussels sprouts for 4 weeks had no adverse effects on thyroid function (Higdon, 2007).

**Intake Recommendations**

Although many organizations, including the National Cancer Institute, recommend the consumption of five to nine servings (2.5–4.5 cups) of fruits and vegetables daily, separate recommendations for cruciferous vegetables have not been established. Much remains to be learned regarding cruciferous vegetable consumption and cancer prevention; however, the results of some prospective cohort studies suggest that adults should aim for at least five weekly servings of cruciferous vegetables (Michaud et al., 1999).

**CANCER AND LEGUMES**

**Dry Beans, Peas, and Lentils**

Dry beans, peas, and lentils are rich in several compounds that could decrease the risk of certain cancers (Mathers, 2002).

**Prostate Cancer**

There is limited evidence from observational studies that legume intake is inversely related to the risk of prostate cancer. In a 6-year prospective study of more than 14,000 Seventh Day Adventist men living in the United States, those with the highest intakes of legumes (beans, lentils, or split peas) had a significantly lower risk of
prostate cancer (Mills et al., 1989). A prospective study of more than 58,000 men in the Netherlands found that those with the highest intakes of legumes had a risk of prostate cancer that was 29% lower than those with the lowest intakes. Similarly, in a case–control study of 1619 North American men with prostate cancer and 1618 healthy men matched for age and ethnicity, those with the highest legume intakes had a risk of prostate cancer that was 38% lower than those with the lowest intakes (Kolonel et al., 2000). Excluding the intake of soy foods from the analysis did not weaken the inverse association between legume intake and prostate cancer, suggesting that soy was not the only legume that conferred protection against prostate cancer.

**Cancer and Soy**

**Prostate Cancer**

Although there is substantial scientific interest in the possibility for soy products to prevent prostate cancer, evidence that higher intakes of soy foods can reduce the risk of prostate cancer in humans is limited. Only two out of six case–control studies found that higher intakes of soy products were associated with significantly lower prostate cancer risk. In the largest case–control study, North American men who consumed an average of at least 1.4 oz of soy foods daily were 38% less likely to have prostate cancer than men who did not consume soy foods. A much smaller case–control study of Chinese men found that men who consumed at least 4 oz of soy foods daily were only half as likely to have prostate cancer as those who consumed less than 1 oz daily. A 6-year prospective cohort study of more than 12,000 Seventh Day Adventist men in the United States found that those who drank soy milk more than once daily had a risk of prostate cancer that was 70% lower than those who never dark soy milk; however, a 23-year study of more than 5000 Japanese American men found no association between tofu consumption and prostate cancer risk (Nomura et al., 2004).

**Breast Cancer**

At least 15 epidemiological studies have assessed the relationship between soy food intake and the risk of breast cancer. One out of four prospective studies found that higher intakes of soy food were associated with a significant reduction in breast cancer risk. In that 9-year study of more than 21,000 Japanese women, higher intakes of miso soup (no other soy foods) were inversely associated with breast cancer risk. Most case–control studies did not find that women with higher soy intakes were at lower risk of breast cancer, except for women who had higher soy intakes during adolescence (Shannon et al., 2005). Two case–control studies, one of Chinese women and one of Asian American women, found that women with higher soy intakes during adolescence were significantly less likely to develop breast cancer later in life (Higdon, 2007).

**Intake Recommendations**

Substituting beans, peas, and lentils for foods that are high in saturated fat or refined carbohydrates is likely to help lower the risk of type 2 diabetes mellitus (DM) and
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

Cardiovascular disease. Soybeans and foods made from soybeans (soy foods) are excellent sources of protein. In fact, soy protein is a complete protein, meaning it provides all of the essential amino acids in adequate amounts for human health (Messina, 1999). As with beans, peas, and lentils, soy foods are also excellent substitutes for protein sources that are high in saturated fat like red meat or cheese. In the 2010 Dietary Guidelines of Americans, an intake of three cups (six servings) of legumes weekly is recommended for people who consume 8368 kJ/2000 kcal/day. A serving of legumes is equal to one-half cup of cooked beans, peas, lentils, or tofu.

Cancer and Whole Grains

Even if the protecting effects of whole grains against various types of cancer are not as well known as those against diabetes and cardiovascular disease, numerous case–control studies have found inverse associations between various measures of whole-grain intake and cancer risk (La Vecchia et al., 2003). A meta-analysis of 40 case–control studies examining 20 different types of cancer found that those with high whole-grain intakes had an overall risk of cancer that was 34% lower than those with low whole-grain intakes. Elevated intakes of whole grain were most constantly associated with decreased risk of gastrointestinal tract cancers, including cancers of the mouth, throat, stomach, colon, and rectum. A prospective cohort study that followed more than 61,000 Swedish women for 15 years found that those who consumed more than 4.5 servings of whole grain daily had a risk of colon cancer that was 35% lower than those who consumed less than 1.5 servings of whole grain daily. Higher fiber intakes are known to speed up the passage of stool through the colon, allowing less time for potentially carcinogenic compounds to stay in contact with cells that line the inner surface of the colon. Lignans in whole grains are phytoestrogens and may affect the development of hormone-dependent cancers.

Phenolic compounds in whole grains may modify signal transduction pathways that promote the development of cancer or bind potentially damaging free metal ions in the gastrointestinal tract (Higdon, 2007).

Intake Recommendations

Whole-grain intakes approaching three servings daily are associated with significant reductions in chronic disease risk in populations with relatively low whole-grain intakes. The 2010 Dietary Guidelines for Americans recommend consuming three or more servings of whole-grain products daily (U.S. Department of Agriculture and U.S. Department of Health and Human Services, 2010). Whole-grain foods should be substituted for refined carbohydrates whenever possible.

Cancer and Carotenoids

Food Sources

The most common dietary carotenoids in typical Western diets are β-carotene, α-carotene, β-cryptoxanthin, lycopene, lutein, and zeaxanthin. Carotenoids in foods are mainly in the all-trans form, although cooking may result in the formation of
other isomers. The relatively low bioavailability of carotenoids from most foods compared with supplements is partly because they are associated with proteins in the plant matrix. Chopping, homogenizing, and cooking disrupt the plant matrix, increasing the bioavailability of carotenoids. The bioavailability of lycopene from tomatoes is substantially improved by heating tomatoes in oil (Gartner et al., 1997).

**β-Carotene and α-Carotene**

β-Carotene and α-carotene are provitamin A carotenoids; that is, they can be converted by the body to vitamin A. The vitamin A activity of β-carotene in foods is 1/12 that of retinol (preformed vitamin A). Thus, it would take 12 μg of β-carotene from foods to provide the equivalent of 1 μg of retinol. The vitamin A activity of α-carotene from foods is 1/24 that of retinol, so it would take 24 μg of α-carotene from foods to provide the equivalent of 1 μg of retinol. Orange and yellow vegetables like carrots and winter squash are rich sources of β- and α-carotene. Spinach is also a rich source of β-carotene, although the chlorophyll in spinach leaves hides the yellow–orange pigment. Some foods that are good sources of α-carotene and β-carotene are listed in Tables 10.5 and 10.6, respectively.

**β-Cryptoxanthin**

Like β- and α-carotene, β-cryptoxanthin is a provitamin A carotenoid. The vitamin A activity of β-cryptoxanthin from foods is 1/24 that of retinol, so it would take 24 μg of β-cryptoxanthin from food to provide the equivalent of 1 μg of retinol. Orange and red fruits and vegetables, like sweet red peppers and oranges, are particularly rich sources of β-cryptoxanthin.

**Lycopene**

Lycopene gives tomatoes, pink grapefruit, watermelon, and guava their red color. It has been estimated that 80% of the lycopene in the diet of the U.S. population

---

**TABLE 10.5**

**α-Carotene Content of Selected Foods**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Food</th>
<th>Serving</th>
<th>α-Carotene (mg)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Pumpkin, canned</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>11.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carrot juice, canned</td>
<td>1 cup (8 fl oz)</td>
<td>10.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carrots, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>5.9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carrots, raw</td>
<td>1 medium</td>
<td>2.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mixed vegetables, frozen cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>1.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winter squash, baked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>1.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plantains, raw</td>
<td>1 medium</td>
<td>0.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pumpkin pie</td>
<td>1 piece</td>
<td>0.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Collards, frozen cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>0.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tomatoes, raw</td>
<td>1 medium</td>
<td>0.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tangerines, raw</td>
<td>1 medium</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peas, frozen, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>0.08</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

Lycopene comes from tomatoes and tomato products like tomato sauce, tomato paste, and catsup (ketchup) (Clinton, 1998). Lycopene is not a provitamin A carotenoid, meaning the body cannot convert lycopene to vitamin A.

Lutein and Zeaxanthin

Although lutein and zeaxanthin are different compounds, they are both from the class of carotenoids known as xanthophylls. They are not provitamin A carotenoids. Some methods used to quantify lutein and zeaxanthin in foods do not separate the two compounds, so they are typically reported as lutein and zeaxanthin or lutein + zeaxanthin. Lutein and zeaxanthin are present in a variety of fruits and vegetables. Dark green leafy vegetables like spinach and kale are particularly rich sources of lutein and zeaxanthin. Some foods that are good sources of lutein and zeaxanthin are listed in Table 10.7.

Curcumin

Turmeric is a spice derived from the rhizomes of Curcuma longa, which is a member of the ginger family (Zingiberaceae) (Aggarwal et al., 2005). Curcumin is the principal curcuminoid found in turmeric and is generally considered its most active constituent (Sharma et al., 2005).

The ability of curcumin to induce apoptosis in cultured cancer cells by several different mechanisms has generated scientific interest in the potential for curcumin to prevent some types of cancer (Sharma et al., 2005). Oral curcumin administration has been found to inhibit the development of chemically induced cancer in animal models of oral (Krishnaswamy et al., 1998; Li et al., 2002), stomach (Huang et al., 1994; Ikezaki et al., 2001), liver (Chuang et al., 2000), and colon cancer (Rao et al., 1995; Pereira et al., 1996; Kawamori et al., 1999). ApcMin/+ mice have a mutation in the adenomatous polyposis coli (Apc) gene similar to that in humans with familial adenomatous polyposis, a genetic condition that is characterized by the development

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Food</th>
<th>Serving</th>
<th>β-Carotene (mg)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Carrot juice, canned</td>
<td>1 cup (8 fl oz)</td>
<td>22.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pumpkin, canned</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>17.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sweet potato, baked</td>
<td>1 medium</td>
<td>16.8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spinach, frozen, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>13.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Carrots, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>13.0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Collards, frozen, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>11.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kale, frozen, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>11.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Turnip greens, frozen, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>10.6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pumpkin pie</td>
<td>1 piece</td>
<td>7.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dandelion greens, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>6.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Winter squash, cooked</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>5.7</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cantaloupe, raw</td>
<td>1 cup</td>
<td>3.2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
of numerous colorectal adenomas (polyps) and a high risk for colorectal cancer. Oral curcumin administration has been found to inhibit the development of intestinal adenomas in Apc<sup>Min/+</sup> mice (Mahmoud et al., 2000; Perkins et al., 2002).

**Cancer and Curcumin**

The ability of curcumin to induce apoptosis in a variety of cancer cell lines in culture and its low toxicity have led to scientific interest in its potential for cancer therapy as well as cancer prevention (Karunagaran et al., 2005). To date, most of the controlled clinical trials of curcumin supplementation in cancer patients have been phase I trials. Phase I trials are clinical trials in small groups of people, aimed at determining bioavailability, optimal dose, safety, and early evidence of the efficacy of a new therapy (National Institutes of Health, 2005). A phase I clinical trial in patients with advanced colorectal cancer found that doses up to 3.6 g/day for 4 months were well tolerated, although the systemic availability of oral curcumin was low (Sharma et al., 2004). When colorectal cancer patients with liver metastases took 3.6 g/day of curcumin orally for 7 days, trace levels of curcumin metabolites were measured in liver tissue; however, curcumin itself was not detected (Garcea et al., 2004). In contrast, curcumin was measured in normal and malignant colorectal tissue after patients with advanced colorectal cancer took 3.6 g/day of curcumin orally for 7 days (Garcea et al., 2005). These findings suggest that oral curcumin is more likely to be effective as a therapeutic agent in cancers of the gastrointestinal tract than other tissues. Phase II trials are clinical trials designed to investigate the effectiveness of a new therapy in larger numbers of people and to further evaluate the short-term adverse effects and safety of the new therapy. Phase II clinical trials of curcumin in patients with advanced pancreatic cancer are currently under way, and phase II trials of curcumin for colorectal cancer have been recommended (Sharma et al., 2005).
Colorectal Cancer and Fiber

Most case–control studies conducted before 1990 found the incidence of colorectal cancer to be lower in people with higher fiber intakes. In contrast, most prospective cohort studies conducted more recently have not found significant associations between measures of dietary fiber intake and colorectal cancer risk. Three controlled clinical trials also failed to demonstrate a protective effect of fiber consumption on the recurrence of colorectal adenomas (precancerous polyps). The rate of recurrence of colorectal adenomas during a 4-year period was not significantly different between those who consumed 33 g/day of fiber from a fruit- and vegetable-rich, low-fat diet and those in a control group who consumed 19 g/day. In another trial, there was no significant difference in the rate of colorectal adenoma recurrence during a 3-year period between those supplemented with 13.5 g/day of wheat bran fiber and those supplemented with 2 g/day. Surprisingly, supplementation with 3.5 g/day of psyllium for 3 years resulted in a significant increase in adenoma recurrence compared with placebo (Bonithon-Kopp et al., 2000).

The reasons for the discrepancies between the findings of early case–control studies with those of most prospective cohort studies and recent interventions trials have generated considerable debate among scientists. Potential reasons for the lack of a protective effect by dietary fiber observed in these studies include the possibility that the type or the amount of fiber consumed by most people in these studies was inadequate to prevent colorectal cancer, or that other dietary factors like fat may interact with fiber, influencing its effects on colorectal cancer (Higdon, 2007).

Breast Cancer

Although several early case–control studies found significant inverse associations between dietary fiber intake and breast cancer incidence, most prospective cohort studies have not found dietary fiber intake to be associated with significant reduction in breast cancer risk. The only exception was a prospective cohort study in Sweden, which found that women with the highest fiber intakes (averaging 26 g/day) had a risk of breast cancer that was 40% lower than women with the lowest fiber intakes (averaging 13 g/day) (Mattisson et al., 2004). Those women with the highest fiber and lowest fat intakes had the very lowest risk of breast cancer. The results of small short-term intervention trials in premenopausal and postmenopausal women suggest that low-fat (10–25% of energy), high-fiber (25–40 g/day) diets could decrease circulating estrogen levels by increasing the excretion of estrogens and promoting the metabolism of estrogens to less estrogenic forms. Nevertheless, it is not known whether fiber-associated effects on endogenous estrogen levels have a clinically significant impact on breast cancer risk (Institute of Medicine, 2002). At present, the available evidence does not support the idea that high-fiber intakes significantly decrease the risk of breast cancer in women (Higdon, 2007).
Intake Recommendations

Adequate Intake

In light of consistent evidence from prospective cohort studies that fiber-rich diets are associated with significant reductions in cardiovascular disease risk, the FNB of the Institute of Medicine established its first recommended intake levels for fiber in 2001. The adequate intake (AI) recommendations for total fiber intake are based on the findings of several large prospective cohort studies that dietary fiber intakes of 14 g/4184 kJ (1000 kcal) of energy were associated with significant reductions in the risk of coronary heart disease, as well as type 2 DM (Salmeron et al., 1997). For adults who are 50 years of age or younger, the AI for total fiber intake is 38 g/day for men and 25 g/day for women. For adults >50 years of age, the recommendation is 30 g/day for men and 21 g/day for women. The AI recommendations for males and females of all ages are presented in Table 10.8.

Eating a large amount of fiber in a short period can cause intestinal gas (flatulence), bloating, and abdominal cramps. This usually goes away once the natural bacteria in the digestive system get used to the increase in fiber in the diet. Adding fiber gradually to the diet, instead of all at once, can help reduce gas or diarrhea.

Too much fiber may interfere with the absorption of minerals such as iron, zinc, magnesium, and calcium. However, this effect usually does not cause too much concern because high-fiber foods are typically rich in minerals.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Life Stage</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Males (g/day)</th>
<th>Females (g/day)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Infants</td>
<td>0–6 months</td>
<td>ND</td>
<td>ND</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Infants</td>
<td>7–12 months</td>
<td>ND</td>
<td>ND</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Children</td>
<td>1–3 years</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Children</td>
<td>4–8 years</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Children</td>
<td>9–13 years</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adolescents</td>
<td>14–18 years</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adults</td>
<td>19–50 years</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adults</td>
<td>51 years and older</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pregnancy</td>
<td>All ages</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Breastfeeding</td>
<td>All ages</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>29</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


Note: ND, not determined.
CANCER AND FLAVONOIDS

Although various flavonoids have been found to inhibit the development of chemically induced cancers in animal models of lung, oral, esophageal, stomach, colon, skin, prostate, and breast cancer, epidemiological studies do not provide convincing evidence that high intakes of dietary flavonoids are associated with substantial reductions in human cancer risk. Most prospective cohort studies that have assessed dietary flavonoid intake using food frequency questionnaires have not found flavonoid intake to be inversely associated with cancer risk (Higdon, 2007).

Two prospective cohort studies in Finland, where average flavonoid intakes are relatively low, found that men with the highest dietary intakes of flavonols and flavones had a significantly lower risk of developing lung cancer than those with the lowest intakes. When individual dietary flavonoids were analyzed, dietary quercetin intake, mainly from apples, was inversely associated with the risk of lung cancer, and myricetin intake was inversely associated with the risk of prostate cancer (Higdon, 2007).

There is limited evidence that low intakes of flavonoids from food are associated with increased risk of certain cancers; however, it is not clear whether these findings are related to insufficient intakes of flavonoids or other nutrients and phytochemicals in flavonoid-rich foods.

Food Sources

Although some subclasses of dietary flavonoids like flavonols are found in many different fruits and vegetables, others are not as widely distributed (see Table 10.9). Total flavonoid intakes in Western populations appear to average 150–200 mg/day.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Flavonoid Subclass</th>
<th>Dietary Flavonoids</th>
<th>Some Common Food Sources</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Anthocyanins</strong></td>
<td>Cyanidin, delphinidin, malvidin, pelargonidin, peonidin, petunidin</td>
<td>Red, blue, and purple berries; red and purple grapes; red wine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Flavanols</strong></td>
<td>Catechin, epicatechin, epigallocatechin, epicatechin gallate, epigallocatechin gallate</td>
<td>Teas (green and white), chocolate, grapes, berries, apples</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>– Monomers</td>
<td>Theaflavins, thearubigins, proanthocyanidins</td>
<td>Teas (black and oolong), chocolate, apples, berries, red grapes, red wine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>– Polymers</td>
<td>Hesperetin, naringenin, eriodictyol</td>
<td>Citrus fruits and juices</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flavanones</td>
<td>Quercetin, kaempferol, myricetin, isorhamnetin</td>
<td>Yellow onions, scallions, kale, broccoli, apples, berries, teas</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flavonols</td>
<td>Apigenin, luteolin</td>
<td>Parsley, thyme, celery, hot peppers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Flavones</td>
<td>Daidzein, genistein, glycitein</td>
<td>Soybeans, soy foods, legumes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Information on the flavonoid content of some flavonoid-rich foods is presented in Table 10.10. These values should be considered approximate because several factors may affect the flavonoid content of foods, including agricultural practices, environmental factors, ripening, processing, storing, and cooking (Higdon, 2007).

Nutrition in cancer care embodies prevention of disease, treatment, cure, or supportive palliation. Caution should be exercised when considering alternative or unproven nutritional therapies during all phases of cancer treatment and supportive palliation, as these diets may prove harmful. Patient nutritional status plays an integral role in determining not only risk of developing cancer but also risk of therapy-related toxicity and medical outcomes. Whether the goal of cancer treatment is cure or palliation, early detection of nutritional problems and prompt intervention are essential.

Optimal nutritional status is an important goal in the management of individuals with cancer. Although nutrition therapy recommendations may vary throughout the continuum of care, maintenance of adequate intake is important. Therefore, a waiver from most dietary restrictions observed during religious holidays is granted for those undergoing active treatment. Individuals with cancer are encouraged to speak to their religious leaders regarding this matter before a holiday.

### Table 10.10

**Flavonoid Content of 100 g or 100 mL of Selected Foods by Flavonoid Subclass**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Anthocyanins (mg)</th>
<th>Flavanols (mg)</th>
<th>Proanthocyanidins (mg)</th>
<th>Flavones (mg)</th>
<th>Flavonols (mg)</th>
<th>Flavanones (mg)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Blackberry</td>
<td>89–211</td>
<td>13–19</td>
<td>6–47</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>0–2</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Blueberry</td>
<td>67–183</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>88–261</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>2–16</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grapes, red</td>
<td>25–92</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>44–76</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>3–4</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Strawberry</td>
<td>15–75</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>97–183</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>1–4</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Red wine</td>
<td>1–35</td>
<td>1–55</td>
<td>24–70</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>2–30</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plum</td>
<td>2–25</td>
<td>1–6</td>
<td>106–334</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1–2</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Onion, red</td>
<td>13–25</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>4–100</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Onion, yellow</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>3–120</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Green tea</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>24–216</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>0–1</td>
<td>3–9</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Black tea</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>5–158</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>1–7</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Chocolate, dark</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>43–63</td>
<td>90–332</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parsley, fresh</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>24–634</td>
<td>8–10</td>
<td>0</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grapefruit juice</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>–</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>0</td>
<td>10–104</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


* Per 100 g (fresh weight) or 100 mL (liquids); 100 g is equivalent to ~3.5 oz; 100 mL is equivalent to ~3.5 fl oz.
Whether patients are undergoing active therapy, recovering from cancer therapy, or in remission and striving to avoid cancer recurrence, the benefit of optimal caloric and nutrient intake is well documented.

The goals of nutrition therapy are to accomplish the following:

- Prevent or reverse nutrient deficiencies
- Preserve lean body mass
- Help patients better tolerate treatments
- Minimize nutrition-related adverse effects and complications
- Maintain strength and energy
- Protect immune function, decreasing the risk of infection
- Aid in recovery and healing
- Maximize quality of life

Patients with advanced cancer can receive nutritional support even when nutrition therapy can do little for weight gain. Such support may help accomplish the following:

- Lessen adverse effects
- Reduce risk of infection (if given enterally)
- Reduce asthenia
- Improve well-being

In individuals with advanced cancer, the goal of nutrition therapy should not be weight gain or reversal of malnutrition, but rather comfort and symptom relief.

Nutrition continues to play an integral role for individuals whose cancer has been cured or who are in remission. A healthy diet helps prevent or control comorbidities such as heart disease, diabetes, and hypertension. Following a healthful nutrition program might help prevent another malignancy from developing.

REFERENCES


EFSA Panel on Dietetic Products, Nutrition and Allergies. Scientific opinion on the substantiation of health claims related to various food(s)/food constituent(s) and protection of cells from premature aging, antioxidant activity, antioxidant content and antioxidant properties, and protection of DNA, proteins and lipids from oxidative damage pursuant to Article 13 (1) of Regulation (EC) No. 1924/20061. *EFSA J* 2010; 8(2): 1489.


11 Antioxidants in Neurodegeneration Truth or Myth?

Francisco Capani, George Barreto, Eduardo Blanco Calvo, and Christopher Horst Lillig

CONTENTS

Redox Control and Reactive Oxygen Species/Reactive Nitrogen Species ........... 199
Thioredoxin Family Proteins in the Brain .......................................................... 200
Pathologies Involved in Neurodegeneration ..................................................... 202
  Perinatal Asphyxia ...................................................................................... 202
  Parkinson’s Disease ................................................................................... 203
  Alzheimer’s Disease ................................................................................... 204
Signaling Pathways in CNS Diseases: Role of the Thioredoxins Protein Family ..... 205
Pharmacological Approaches ........................................................................ 206
Conclusion ..................................................................................................... 207
References ..................................................................................................... 207

REDOX CONTROL AND REACTIVE OXYGEN SPECIES/REACTIVE NITROGEN SPECIES

The cell signaling theory was developed from the analysis of signal transduction from extracellular signals to intracellular effector molecules via G-protein coupled receptors by Rodbell [1] and Gilman [2]. First, an extracellular signal activates a receptor protein or protein complex. Then, this activation promotes the release of second messenger molecules. These molecules might act on transducer proteins, e.g., protein kinases, activate the production or release of third messenger molecules, or directly activate effector molecules.

The activities of the enzymes that catalyze the generation of the signals and the modifications of the effector molecules determine the transduction of the information, and the action of protein kinases and phosphatases in signal transduction pathways.

Redox signaling requires the active adjustment of the levels of redox activity of the second messengers in response to the activation of a receptor or sensor molecule [3,4]. The key compounds, i.e., the metabolites that hold the potential to induce reversible posttranslational redox modifications on proteins, are H₂O₂, NO•, and peroxynitrite/
peroxynitrous acid (ONOO−/ONOOH). These compounds are produced enzymatically, either as primary products of specialized enzymes, for instance NO+ produced by nitric oxide synthase (NOS), or as by-products of enzymes, such as superoxide (O2•−) produced by complex I of the inner mitochondrial membrane and a number of other enzymes. The decay of these compounds is controlled by other independent enzymes; for instance, H2O2 and ONOOH are reduced by glutathione peroxidases and peroxiredoxins. The levels of these redox-active second messengers are thus enzymatically regulated on both the production and the elimination side, similar to, e.g., adenylate cyclases and phosphodiesterases whose combined activities determine the level of the second messenger molecule cAMP.

The thioredoxin protein family (Trxs) is involved in this function in different ways through their thiol groups. Two protein thiols can be oxidized to a disulfide, forming a strong inter- or intramolecular bridge. A single protein thiol may also form a disulfide with GSH, termed glutathionylation, or free cysteine, termed cysteinylilation or thiolation. Cysteinyl thiols may also react with hydrogen sulfide (H2S) to form persulfides, reactive oxygen species (ROS), or reactive nitrogen species (RNS) to form sulfenic acids, or nitric oxide resulting in nitroso thiols, a process named S-nitrosylation. Not every surface-exposed, cysteinyl residue can undergo any or all of these oxidative modifications. It was repeatedly demonstrated that distinct thiol groups undergo specific modifications, such as glutathionylation, S-nitrosylation, or sulfenylilation, in response to specific oxidants [5].

THIOREDOxin FAMILY PROTEINS IN THE BRAIN

Trxs are a class of enzymes that utilize the thiol groups of cysteinyl residues for the catalysis of thiol-disulfide exchange and peroxidatic reactions. This family includes the thioredoxins (Trxs), glutaredoxins (Grxs), and peroxiredoxins (Prxs) [6–8], which are all characterized by a common structural motif known as the thioredoxin fold [9].

Trxs were first described as hydrogen donors for ribonucleotide reductase from Escherichia coli [10]. However, during the previous decade, these proteins were recognized as key regulators of cellular functions in the response to redox signals, for instance by the modulation of various signaling pathways, transcription factors, and the immune response [8]. Although the Trxs include more than 10 proteins, the major Trx isoforms are the cytosolic Trx1 and the mitochondrial Trx2. Trxs are thought to be tightly connected to thioredoxin reductases (TrxR). TrxR is an NADPH-dependent homodimer with one FAD cofactor per subunit and a cysteine–selenocysteine active site that reduces the disulfide in the active site of oxidized Trx [11,12]. In addition, TrxR1 can directly reduce the number of substrates, in particular lipid hydroperoxides and H2O2 [13–17].

Glutathione (GSH) constitutes the major intracellular redox buffer in cells [18]. GSH is synthesized in the cytosol in two steps. First, the enzyme γ-glutamylcysteine synthetase (γ-GCS) catalyzes the formation of l-γ-glutamyl-l-cysteine [19–21]. The glycine residue of the GSH tripeptide is added in the second step by glutathione synthetase. Cellular GSH exists predominantly in a reduced form; however, small amounts of the oxidized disulfide form GSSG can also be detected. GSSG is reduced
by glutathione reductase (GR) at the expense of NADPH. The GSH/GSSG ratio is often taken as an indicator of the cellular redox status. Changes in this ratio have been associated with the modulation of transcription of a wide variety of genes implied in multiple cellular processes such as growth, differentiation, and cell death [22–24]. To date, four Grx isoforms have been found in mammals [24]: the cytosolic dithiol Grx1; the mainly mitochondrial Grx2 (Grx2a); testicular cells and some cancer cells express two additional cytosolic/nuclear isoforms of the protein, Grx2b and Grx2c; the cytosolic multidomain monothiol Grx3; and the mitochondrial monothiol Grx5 [8,24]. Unlike in the Trx system, electrons in the Grx system are transferred from the NADPH-dependent glutathione reductase to glutathione (GSH), which, in turn, reduces oxidized glutaredoxin [24].

Peroxiredoxins are a heterogeneous family of thiol-dependent peroxidases present in all kingdoms of life. Prxs execute enzymatic degradation of H$_2$O$_2$, organic hydroperoxides, and peroxynitrite [25]. Unlike Trxs that possess the active double-cysteine region forming an intramolecular disulfide bond when oxidized, Prxs can form intermolecular disulfide bonds. By the number of active Cys residues, mammalian peroxiredoxins fall into three groups: typical two-cysteine Prxs (Prx1–Prx4) that contain both N- and C-terminal Cys residues, atypical two-cysteine Prxs (Prx5) that contain the N-terminal conserved Cys but require an additional Cys for their peroxidase activity, and single-cysteine Prxs (Prx6) that contain only the N-terminal Cys [22,26]. Prxs are present in all subcellular compartments: Prx1, Prx2, and Prx5 are found in the cytoplasm and nuclei, Prx4 and Prx6 in the cytoplasm and secreted, and Prx3 and Prx5 in mitochondria [23,26].

The brain is more susceptible to oxidative damage than most other organs because of its high oxygen utilization, high iron content, presence of unsaturated fatty acids, and decreased activities of detoxifying enzymes such as superoxide dismutase (SOD), catalase, and GR [27–29]. Molecular oxygen is the central component in energy production in mammalians, and the drop in oxygen supply to neuronal tissue has serious consequences for cell fate and survival. Ischemia–reperfusion injury induces serious oxidative stress and, as consequence, a multitude of spatially and temporally regulated responses, ranging from changes in the gene expression pattern to biochemical alterations and, ultimately, cell death. The disturbance of redox homeostasis, low levels of GSH, and an increased production of ROS and peroxynitrite have been described for a number of central nervous system (CNS) disorders, for instance perinatal asphyxia [30–32], stroke [22], focal traumatic brain injury [33], and numerous neurodegenerative disorders including Alzheimer’s disease, Parkinson’s disease, multiple sclerosis, and amyotrophic lateral sclerosis [34,35]. Ischemic brain injuries, resulting either from global or focal decreases in perfusion, are among the most common and important causes of disability and death worldwide after heart infarction and cancer [36,37].

Recently, we described the cellular localization of Trxs in the CNS [38]. We have observed several remarkable differences in both abundance and regional distribution of Trx-immunopositive cells that point to a complex interplay and crosstalk between the proteins of this family. Most of the Golgi type I neurons in the different ischaemic-sensitive areas showed strong staining for Trx1, Trx2, TrxR1, TrxR2, Txnip, Grx1, Grx2, Grx3, Grx5, γ-GCS, Prxl, Prx2, Prx3, Prx4, Prx5, and Prx6. In addition, one
of the most striking localizations was in hippocampal astrocytes stained with Trx2 (Figure 11.1). These data strongly support the concept that Trxs, Grxs, and Prxs are involved in various steps during the oxidative stress response induced by CNS disease [39–52] (for more details, see the next section).

PATHOLOGIES INVOLVED IN NEURODEGENERATION

PERINATAL ASPHYXIA

Perinatal asphyxia (PA)-induced brain injury is one of the most common causes of morbidity and mortality in term and preterm neonates, accounting for 23% of neonatal deaths globally [53]. Following PA, approximately 45% of newborns die and 25% have permanent neurological deficits, including cerebral palsy, mental retardation and developmental delay, learning disabilities, and different issues in school readiness [54]. Neonatal stroke, a cerebrovascular event that occurs between 28 weeks’ gestation and 1 month postnatal age, may be either hemorrhagic or hypoxia-ischemia (HI) in origin and has been associated with consequences including cerebral palsy and behavioral abnormalities [55,56].

Brain injury that occurs early during development results in significant and persistent decreases in cortical and hippocampal volumes. The type and distribution of human brain lesions differ markedly between premature and term babies, likely attributed to the stage of brain maturation and regional vulnerability, as described elsewhere [57–59]. Atrophy of both gray and white matter is also obvious in models...
of perinatal HI. This atrophy is attributed to both loss of ischemic infarcted tissue and impaired development of the surrounding tissue over time [59,60]. The immature brain is considerably more resistant to hypoxia presumably because of the lower density of axons and dendrites over which a membrane gradient must be maintained. Therefore, obtaining a similarly sized injury between age groups requires different durations of hypoxia–ischemia [60]. Moreover, different mechanisms of injury are activated in the immature brain versus the adult, the most obvious difference being that apoptotic mechanisms are several-fold more pronounced in immature animals [60]. It is becoming increasingly recognized that the developing brain shows marked susceptibility to both oxidative stress and neuronal apoptosis, which may underlie this age-dependent injury vulnerability [61–65].

The mechanisms that cause neurological damage after PA are divided schematically into three metabolic phases [66,67]. Hypoxia leads to primary energy failure (phase 1); then, a short time after reoxygenation, aerobic metabolism and cell functions are reestablished (phase 2). However, as a result of a cascade of cellular mechanisms [68,69], after this “latent phase” of 6–24 h, mitochondrial energy production again begins to fail. This secondary energy failure (phase 3) lasts for 24–48 h after the hypoxic event. The damage that occurs during this phase is considerable [70]. In addition, the reoxygenation part of the hypoxia is necessary but also induces the most damage after AP: during the reoxygenation period, extracellular glutamate levels are increased, enhancing the activation of Na⁺/ATPase, increasing further ATP consumption. Extracellular glutamate levels override the buffer capacity of astrocytes, resulting in sustained overactivation of glutamate receptors, mainly of the N-methyl-D-aspartate (NMDA) increasing Ca²⁺ conductance. All these changes activate molecular and cell cascades, prolonging the energy deficit and oxidative stress associated with further cell damage and apoptosis or necrosis.

Oxidative stress is inherent to reoxygenation, resulting in overactivation, but also inactivation of a number of enzymes, mainly those modulating the activity of mitochondria [29,31]. In the clinical situation, resuscitation may even imply hyperoxemia, leading to further production of free radicals and oxidative stress, worsening brain injury [30,31,71–73].

**Parkinson’s Disease**

Parkinson’s disease (PD) manifests itself in most patients with prominent movement abnormalities, including a 4–6 Hz tremor at rest, muscular rigidity, slowness of movement (bradykinesia), and a failure of movement initiation (akinesia). Several environmental factors may have an impact on the occurrence of the disease. Living in rural areas, drinking well water, pesticide exposure, and head trauma are associated with an increased risk of developing PD, while caffeine consumption, taking nonsteroidal anti-inflammatory medications, and smoking appear to protect against it.

The prominent motor abnormalities in PD appear to arise in large part from degeneration of neurons in the substantia nigra (SNC), with resulting loss of dopamine in the basal ganglia. Degenerating dopaminergic cells leave characteristic eosinophilic inclusions in their wake, the so-called Lewy neurites and Lewy bodies [74].
Most cases of PD are “sporadic” and appear to arise from a combination of genetic predisposition and environmental or toxic factors. Purely genetic forms of the disease probably account for less than 10% of cases; however, the risk of family members of an affected patient to develop PD is significantly increased even in sporadic PD. Cells in the SNc are among the most vulnerable cells in the brain due to a relative deficiency in neuroprotective factors, such as the antioxidant glutathione, and because they are exposed to a high level of oxidative stress due to the presence of dopaminergic metabolism and other factors.

This environment may induce these neurons particularly vulnerable to nonspecific genetic or environmental insults that, by themselves, would not be sufficient to induce cell death in other cells. Interestingly, many of the factors known to be involved in neuronal damage in PD appear to interfere with the cell’s ability to eliminate damaged or mutated proteins through the ubiquitin proteasome system [74]. One example of a genetically determined form of parkinsonism, which results directly in degeneration of dopaminergic neurons, are mutations of the gene coding for α-synuclein [75]. Mutated α-synuclein tends to aggregate as the result of a conformational change of the molecule from its usual unfolded, soluble form into a β-pleated sheath. Aggregated α-synuclein is a prominent component of Lewy bodies.

A number of genetic mutations have been associated with autosomal recessive juvenile Parkinson’s disease. The most frequent of these is the gene PARK2, coding for parkin, which accounts for about half of patients with juvenile onset, below the age of 40 years. Parkin is an E3 ubiquitin ligase that is necessary for ubiquitination of proteins for their subsequent degradation in proteasomes. Loss of function of the mutated enzyme may result in failure to direct its substrates to the proteasome system for degradation [76]. However, the mechanism involved in Parkinson disease is not well known.

ALZHEIMER’S DISEASE

Alzheimer’s disease (AD) is the most common form of dementia among older adults, affecting more than 4 million people in the United States and almost 30 million worldwide [77]. AD is the most common form of dementia and characterized by deposition of amyloid-β (Aβ) plaques, neurofibrillary tangles, and progressive neurodegeneration. AD manifests as progressive memory loss and cognitive impairments [77,78]. This syndrome results from abnormalities associated with dysfunction and death of the neurons involved in memory and cognition [78]. Genetic evidence indicates that the inheritance of mutations in several genes causes autosomal dominant familial AD (fAD), while the presence of certain alleles of ApoE4 are significant risk factors for putative sporadic disease [79,80].

Multiple lines of evidence have implicated oxidative stress and free radical damage to the pathogenesis and possible etiology of AD. Such damage found in AD includes advanced glycation end products [81–83], nitration [82], lipid peroxidation adduction products [78], and carbonyl-modified neurofilament protein and free carbonyls [84]. The cytopathological significance of oxidative damage is seen by the upregulation of antioxidant enzymes. Heme oxygenase-1 (HO-1) is among the most sensitive and selective indicators of the cellular oxidative stress response [85,86].
However, the most crucial aspects of the cellular oxidative damage in AD pathogenesis appear to be the cytoskeletal modifications in neurons susceptible to AD, which in turn play a key role in the irreversible cellular dysfunction that ultimately leads to neuronal death [87]. The neuropathological hallmarks of AD are senile plaques and neurofibrillary tangles [88,89]. Evidence of an increased oxidation of macromolecules (lipids, carbohydrates, proteins, and DNA) and oxidative stress products has been found in senile plaques and neurofibrillary tangles [90]. Biomarkers of these forms of oxidation have been observed not only in AD brains but also in peripheral tissues (e.g., blood cells) and biological fluids (e.g., urine) of individuals affected by AD [91–95].

**SIGNALING PATHWAYS IN CNS DISEASES: ROLE OF THE THIOREDOXINS PROTEIN FAMILY**

Oxidative stress and a misbalance in the production or free radicals have been implicated in different diseases of the CNS. Since Trxs are key proteins related to the regulation of redox signaling, it is logical to think that they might be involved in the pathogenesis of CNS disorders. Regarding thioredoxins (Trx1), using amyloid-β treatment in an AD model led to oxidation of Trx1 in the neuroblastoma cell line SH-SY5Y [96]. Overexpression of Trx1 protected SH-SY5Y cells against amyloid-β-induced cell death [96]. Trx1 expression was suppressed in a rat pheochromocytoma cell line (PC12) after treatment with 1-methyl-4-phenylpyridinium (MPP+), an active metabolite of 1-methyl-4-phenyl-1,2,3,6-tetrahydropyridine (MPTP) that causes parkinsonism [97]. Trx1 is also induced after cerebral ischemia induced by middle cerebral artery occlusion [98], and mice overexpressing Trx1 showed attenuation of apoptosis and thereby neuroprotection after both permanent and transient focal ischemia [99].

Although proper mitochondrial function is crucial for the progression of most neurological diseases, almost nothing is known about the role of the mitochondrial Trx2, except for the finding that Trx2 levels were increased in the hippocampus of gerbils after ischemia–reperfusion [100]. Treatment of rat primary hippocampal neurons with TrxR1 attenuated amyloid-β-mediated toxicity. In AD patients, TrxR1 activity was generally enhanced compared with controls [101], whereas TrxR1 levels in cerebrospinal fluid and blood of multiple sclerosis patients were decreased [102].

In relation to glutaredoxins, overexpression of Grx1 protected SH-SY5Y cells against amyloid-β-induced cell death [96]. Several proteins have been described to be involved in PD development and progression. The expression of one of these proteins, DJ-1 [98], correlates with the expression of Grx1 [103,104]. In a mouse model for PD based on MPTP toxicity, loss of dopaminergic neurons was associated with inactivation of mitochondrial complex I, a hallmark of the disease. Recovery of complex I activity correlated with an increase of Grxs activity following MPTP treatment. Whereas knockout of both Grx1 and Grx2 inhibited this recovery [105], overexpression of Grx2 diminished MPTP-induced neuronal apoptosis via decreased complex I activity [106]. After induction of focal ischemia in rat brains, Grx1 levels decreased parallel to the rate of neuronal damage. In AD brain tissue, Grx1 was upregulated in healthy neurons of the hippocampus and the frontal cortex but
downregulated in degenerating neurons [96]. Deglutathionylation/glutathionylation, specifically catalyzed by Grxs, is associated with several aspects of neurodegeneration, like apoptosis, mitochondrial function, and plaque formation, summarized for instance in Ref. [107].

Several other studies demonstrated the important role of GSH in pathologies of the CNS. Amyloid-β treatment of SH-SY5Y cells decreased the total cellular GSH amount [96]. In the substantia nigra of PD patients, total GSH levels were not only decreased, but GSH was also virtually absent. This loss of GSH is one of the first signs of the disease. Knockdown of GSH synthesis in PC12 cells, rat dopaminergic N27 cells, as well as in mice by catecholaminergic neuron-specific downregulation of γ-glutamyl cysteine ligase, the rate-limiting enzyme in the de novo glutathione synthesis, resulted in inhibition of complex I activity [108,109]. These data highlight the importance of the GSH/Grx system in maintenance of mitochondrial function in the early onset of PD.

Finally, some functions have been attributed to Prxs in CNS disease. In amyloid-β-resistant clones of the PC12 cell line, Prx1, Prx2, and Prx6 expression was significantly increased. PC12 cells and primary neurons overexpressing Prx1 exhibited attenuated amyloid-β and MPP+/MPTP toxicity [110]. Treatment with 6-hydroxy-dopamine (6-OHDA) led to an oxidation of Prx1. Increased levels of Prx1 and Prx2 protected dopaminergic cells in vitro and in vivo against 6-OHDA-induced apoptosis, whereas silencing of Prx1 sensitized the cells [111]. In addition, elevated Prx2 levels protected against amyloid-β toxicity in a transgenic mouse model for AD [112]. In whole brain samples, the expression levels of Prx1 and Prx2 were elevated in AD patients [113]. Two other studies, however, could not confirm a higher Prx1 expression in AD brains [114]. Prx2 levels were also increased in the hippocampus and the frontal cortex of AD patients [114] and in the substantia nigra of PD patients [115]. Prx3 expression was decreased in the brains of AD patients [116]. In addition, Prx6 was upregulated in astrocytes of AD patients [117]. In PD patients, peroxidase activity of Prx2 was inhibited by S-nitrosylation [118,119] and phosphorylation [114]. The redox states of Prx2 and Prx6 were more oxidized in the brains and serum of AD patients [120]. In circulating endothelial progenitor cells of ischemia stroke patients, Prx1 was 10-fold more highly expressed than in healthy controls [121]. Prx2 in rat brains was downregulated after cerebral ischemia [122] and protected against stroke-related insults, such as ischemia and glutamate treatment in vitro and in vivo [99]. Prx3 was increased in the hippocampus of gerbils after cerebral ischemia–reperfusion and protected against ischemic damage [123,124].

**PHARMACOLOGICAL APPROACHES**

A body of studies have been published about antioxidant properties; however, they have not had a positive effect on clinical studies [117]. Since Trx family proteins show specific alterations in various pathological conditions, including changes in protein expression, enzymatic activity, tissue distribution, and intra- and extracellular localization, they have been used as therapeutic tools in different experimental models. For instance, ebselen, reviewed in Ref. [119], a chemical mimic of glutathione peroxidase that was shown to reduce hydrogen peroxide levels and oxidize Trx
Antioxidants in Neurodegeneration

[120], was analyzed as potential drug, e.g., for cerebral ischemia [121] and stroke [122]. Two drugs, nipradilol and timolol, used in glaucoma therapy increase the protein levels of Prx2 and thereby protect cells of the trabecular meshwork, the tissue surrounding the base of the cornea, against hydrogen peroxide–induced apoptosis [123]. Another potential target in the clinic is Prx6. Overexpression of the peroxidase could be used to prevent the progression of hypoxia-dependent disorders, such as glaucoma [124]. These studies suggest Trxs as a promising tool for a new therapeutic approach.

CONCLUSION

The importance of redox signaling is increasingly recognized despite the highly transient nature of the redox modifications that makes them very difficult to investigate deeply. The various redox modifications are highly target specific and site specific, and the Trx protein family systems are key players in redox signal transduction both as transducers and regulators of second messenger levels.

Thus far, neuroprotective treatment may limit the secondary neuron damage. New knowledge about cellular repair mechanisms can also pave the way for types of treatment that not merely limit damage but can also repair defects. Therefore, redox signaling studies will be able to answer several questions about the functions of oxidative stress contributing to the development of new clinical applications.

REFERENCES


PREFACE

Oxidative stress, defined as a persistent imbalance between the formation of pro-oxidant molecules and antioxidant defenses, in favor of the former, has recently emerged as a key factor contributing to the development and progression of inflammation-based gastrointestinal diseases. Considerable evidence from both human and animal studies support that the consequences of oxidative stress, including the peroxidation of cellular constituents, disruption of intracellular signaling pathways, and perpetuation of the inflammatory response, induce intestinal damage and contribute to intestinal pathology. There is also a limited number of reports testing the use of antioxidants as a part of the management of various gastrointestinal disorders; however, their preliminary data cannot support a definite therapeutic advantage thus far. The present chapter provides an overview of the role of oxidative stress in the pathogenesis of inflammation-based gastrointestinal tract diseases, namely celiac disease and inflammatory bowel diseases, as well as the potential role of antioxidants in their prevention and treatment.
Celiac disease, also defined as gluten-sensitive enteropathy, is a multiorgan, chronic inflammatory disorder induced by permanent intolerance to gluten, a protein found in cereal grains, namely wheat, barley, and rye (Troncone et al. 2008b; Hall et al. 2009; Ferretti et al. 2012). Alcohol extraction of gluten produces a soluble fraction, the prolamins (gliadin in wheat, secalin in rye, and hordein in barley), and an insoluble fraction, the glutenins, which are both toxic for patients with celiac disease and consist the environmental stimuli responsible for the development of the intestinal damage (Ciclitira et al. 1984). The disease is characterized by histopathological damage mainly located in the proximal small intestine, including villus atrophy, crypt hyperplasia, flattened mucosa, and increased epithelial lymphocytic infiltration (Stojiljkovic et al. 2009; Ferretti et al. 2012). It affects approximately 0.5–1% of the worldwide population; however, more than half of the patients remain undetected.

Although celiac disease can have its onset at any age, it is usually first diagnosed in adulthood (Troncone et al. 2008b; Hall et al. 2009). Typical clinical manifestations of celiac disease include chronic diarrhea, weight loss, abdominal distension, lassitude, and malaise. However, a significant proportion of patients experience other extradigestive symptoms, such as anemia, skin lesions, isolated hypertransaminaseemia, osteopenia, infertility, dermatitis herpetiformis, ataxia, or polyneuropathia. It is important that there are also patients with no or atypical symptoms (silent celiac disease), resulting in underdiagnosis of the disease (Troncone et al. 2008a,b).

Celiac disease is associated with serious consequences on health, such as malabsorption of nutrients, osteoporosis, gastrointestinal malignancies, and the onset of other autoimmune diseases, such as diabetes mellitus, making it a serious public health problem, which needs to be treated. The cornerstone of the disease treatment is the lifelong adherence to a gluten-free diet (GFD), which has been associated with clinical and histological recovery, a better quality of life, and the prevention of disease complications (Troncone et al. 2008a; Hall et al. 2009).

Although the exact mechanisms by which gluten and its fractions (prolamins and glutenins) cause intestinal damage remain unclear, it seems that an interaction of genetic, environmental, and immunological factors occurs. Celiac disease has a genetic basis, indicated by a concordance in monozygotic twins and an increased prevalence in first-degree relatives. The determinants of genetic heritability are the human leukocyte antigen (HLA) class II DQA and DQB genes located in the major histocompatibility complex on chromosome 6. The combination of HLA-DQA1*0501 and DQB1*0201 alleles encode the HLA-DQA2 class II protein, which is responsible for prolamins’ presentation to positive T-cell receptors of CD4 lymphocytes. However, these alleles are critical but not sufficient for celiac disease development (Ferretti et al. 2012). The proposed theory is that gluten and its fractions, as well as other environmental factors, trigger the inflammatory injury and the development of intestinal damage, by activating various pathological immune responses in genetically susceptible individuals (Troncone et al. 2008b).
**Oxidative Stress and Celiac Disease**

Evidence acquired during the last decade suggests that most of the cytotoxic, inflammatory, and immunogenic effects of gluten peptides on the intestinal epithelium are mediated by increased oxidative stress. Some gluten peptides have the ability to penetrate cells in celiac disease patients. Then, they accumulate in lysosomes and trigger the activation of some signal transduction pathways, leading to an overproduction of free radicals (reactive oxygen species [ROS] and reactive nitrogen species [RNS]). In turn, free radicals disturb the pro-oxidant/antioxidant balance in the intestinal mucosa, by increasing levels of lipid peroxidation products and oxidized (GSSG)/reduced (GSH) glutathione ratio (oxidative stress markers), and decreasing protein-bound sulfhydryl groups (which are involved in the cell regulation of ROS levels together with antioxidants). The altered oxidative balance leads to the activation of pro-inflammatory transcription protein complex of the nuclear factor-kappa B (NF-κB), which results in the transcription of pro-inflammatory cytokines like tumor necrosis factor-α (TNF-α), interleukin-8 (IL-8), and interferon-γ (IFN-γ), and enzymes such as cyclooxygenase 2 (COX-2) and inducible nitric oxide synthase (iNOS). Consequently, prostaglandins and nitric oxide (NO) metabolites are produced, which further contribute to oxidative stress, perpetuating a vicious cycle as illustrated in Figure 12.1. The increased oxidative stress also downregulates the production of peroxisome proliferator-activated receptor gamma, mediated by tissue transglutaminase, leading equally to NF-κB activation. As a result, the epithelial barrier dysfunction and the intestinal permeability increase and gluten peptides pass through the enterocytes, activating various immune responses, which further lead to cell damage and villous atrophy in celiac disease patients (Ferretti et al. 2012).

Data from several studies assessing the oxidative or antioxidant status of patients with celiac disease also support the involvement of oxidative stress in the disease pathogenesis and have been recently reviewed (Ferretti et al. 2012). As reported in this review, it seems that celiac disease patients demonstrate increased markers of oxidative stress and damage (e.g., increased iNOS expression in intestine and NO metabolite levels in plasma) and decreased levels of antioxidant enzymes (e.g., decreased glutathione peroxidase activity in the intestine and in blood, respectively) and nuclear factors in intestinal cells and biological fluids, compared with healthy controls (Ferretti et al. 2012).

**Antioxidants and Celiac Disease Risk**

Celiac disease patients’ dietary habits, in terms of macro- and micronutrient intake, have been thus far explored in many studies, with most of the data suggesting that both newly diagnosed and long-term patients are characterized by inadequate dietary vitamin and mineral intake. Reasons for the observed nutritional inadequacies include habitual poor food choices in addition to inherent deficiencies in the GFD, as well as the lack of a proper dietary counseling (Shepherd and Gibson 2013; Wierdsma et al. 2013). However, studies exploring the relationship between dietary antioxidants intake and the risk of celiac disease are currently unavailable. On the other hand, few cross-sectional studies have assessed the antioxidant body content
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

of patients with celiac disease and reported decreased levels of antioxidant vitamin E (α-tocopherol) in both patients’ circulating cells and plasma (Stojiljkovic et al. 2007; Szaflarska-Poplawska et al. 2010), as well as low serum selenium levels (Yuce et al. 2004). Nevertheless, the above-mentioned decreased levels of antioxidants are probably the result of intestinal malabsorption, rather than inadequate dietary intake. Given the fact that cross-sectional studies do not provide a good basis for establishing causality, the conduction of prospective studies in genetically predisposed individuals is clearly needed, to assess the relationship between dietary antioxidant intake and the risk of celiac disease development.

Despite the lack of strong evidence regarding the role of specific antioxidants in celiac disease risk, it is worth mentioning that current theories support the important role of selenium in celiac disease development and severity for two main reasons.

FIGURE 12.1 Schematic illustration of the interaction between oxidative stress and inflammation in the pathophysiology of inflammatory-based gastrointestinal (GI) tract diseases. As depicted, oxidative stress contributes to intestinal inflammation by (i) increasing intestinal permeability and the exposure of intestinal cells to harmful stimuli (gluten in the case of celiac disease or intestinal pathogens in the case of inflammatory bowel diseases), and (ii) stimulating signaling pathways, especially the redox-sensitive transcription factor nuclear factor kappa B (NF-κB), which in turn promotes the production of inflammatory cytokines, such as tumor necrosis factor-α (TNF-α), interleukin-1β (IL-1β), interleukin-6 (IL-6), and interferon-γ (IFN-γ). On the other hand, inflammation augments oxidative stress by stimulating the expression of inflammatory cells’ reactive oxygen and nitrogen species (ROS and RNS) generating systems, such as lipoxygenase (LOX), cycloxygenase-2 (COX-2), NAD(P)H oxidases (NOXs), inducible-nitric oxide synthase (i-NOS), and myeloperoxidase (MPO).
First, selenium is a part of glutathione peroxidase, one of the strongest antioxidant enzymes in the human body, which is involved in the protection of intestinal cells against oxidative damage. Second, selenium deficiency seems to be associated with the development of autoimmune thyroid diseases (AITDs), a common extraintestinal complication of celiac disease, since selenoproteins are necessary for the biosynthesis and activity of thyroid hormones and the maintenance of normal thyroid gland function. Given the aforementioned, selenium malabsorption in celiac disease has recently emerged as a key factor directly leading to both thyroid and intestinal damage. Under this scope, the correction of selenium deficiency, possibly via selenium supplementation, should be considered in patients with celiac disease in parallel with the adoption of GFD, to prevent both further oxidative stress–induced intestinal damage and the development of AITDs (Stazi and Trinti 2010).

**Antioxidants and Treatment of Celiac Disease**

There is much evidence that dietary antioxidants, such as plant polyphenols, carotenoids, and vitamins have the potential to modulate predisposition to intestinal chronic inflammatory diseases. They act through a plethora of mechanisms, including the decrease of inflammatory mediator production through effects on cell signaling and gene expression, the reduction of damaging oxidants production, and the promotion of gut barrier function and anti-inflammatory responses (Calder et al. 2009).

Data investigating the role of antioxidants in celiac disease treatment are scarce. Perhaps one reason explaining this fact is that during the past decades, scientific interest has focused on the effectiveness of GFD, which remains the cornerstone of disease treatment (Hall et al. 2009). Thus far, there is no human clinical trial available investigating the effect of antioxidant intake on celiac disease treatment. There is, however, only one study in a mouse model of celiac disease with unexpected results, concerning the role of retinoic acid (metabolite of vitamin A) in gliadin tolerance and inflammation. According to this study, retinoic acid promoted rather than prevented inflammatory cellular responses in a stressed intestinal environment and worked together with interleukin-15 (IL-15) to drive pro-inflammatory responses against gliadin (De Paolo et al. 2011).

Most of the data regarding the potential role of antioxidants in celiac disease management come from *in vitro* studies. Previously, one study reported that synthetic (pyrrolidine dithiocarbammate) and natural (genistein and tyrphostin) antioxidants inhibited the *iNOS* gene expression in a mouse monocyte/macrophage RAW 264.7 cell line, which were stimulated by gliadin and IFN-γ (De Stefano et al. 2006). *iNOS* production significantly increased in the stimulated cells; however, in the presence of the above-mentioned antioxidants, this response was attenuated. One year later, members of the same research team found that lycopene (carotenoid), quercetin (flavonoid), and tyrosol (polyphenol) decreased *iNOS* and *COX-2* gene expression induced by gliadin and IFN-γ in RAW 246.7 macrophages (De Stefano et al. 2007). These results suggest that antioxidants may control the genes encoding pro-inflammatory cytokines that are involved in celiac disease pathogenesis. In another recent *in vitro* study, the addition of vitamin C (ascorbate) to a culture of
gliadin-challenged, duodenal biopsy extracts from treated celiac disease patients (for a minimum of 6 months on GFD) blocked the secretion of nitrites and pro-inflammatory cytokines (IFN-α, IFN-γ, TNF-α, and IL-6), and inhibited the expression of IL-15 triggered by gliadin, compared with samples from a non-asorbate-supplemented culture (Bernardo et al. 2012). The authors suggested in their conclusions that vitamin C supplementation might be beneficial for patients with celiac disease and can be considered as a future treatment option. The conclusions of one recent review are also promising, suggesting that flavonoids such as epigallocatechin gallate, genistein, myricetin, and quercetin have a protective effect on intestinal intracellular tight junction (Tj) barrier function. The Tjs play an important role in the transport of gluten through enterocytes and in the function of the intestinal barrier. Oxidative stress and pro-inflammatory cytokines causes dysfunction of Tjs in celiac disease patients, and the aforementioned flavonoids have been suggested to protect their function (Suzuki and Hara 2011).

CONCLUSIONS

To sum up, oxidative stress seems to be involved in celiac disease pathogenesis and celiac patients are characterized by a low antioxidant status. According to the aforementioned studies, dietary antioxidants (antioxidant vitamins and phytochemicals) may have a role in the nutritional treatment of celiac disease, by exerting protective effects against toxic gluten fractions on intestinal cells (Figure 12.2). However, the benefits of antioxidants observed in cell cultures must also be confirmed in animal and human studies, to clarify the conclusions that remain ambiguous until now. Further research should also focus on the optimal dosage of antioxidant intake and on the possible differences between dietary sources of antioxidants and supplements. Until then, GFD remains the only step of treatment after the diagnosis of the disease.

FIGURE 12.2 Potential beneficial effect of dietary antioxidant vitamins and phytochemicals on celiac disease patients. Dietary antioxidants may attenuate the toxic effects of gluten fractions on the intestinal cells.
INFLAMMATORY BOWEL DISEASES

INTRODUCTION

Inflammatory bowel diseases (IBDs) represent a group of chronic idiopathic intestinal diseases, with Crohn’s disease (CD) and ulcerative colitis (UC) being the two major phenotypes. Although both pathological conditions are characterized by intestinal inflammation, the site, nature, and extent of intestinal involvement differ significantly among them. CD usually involves the terminal ileum and the colon; however, it can practically affect any part of the gastrointestinal tract from the mouth to the anus in a segmental way (skip lesions), while inflammation is transmural. By contrast, UC always affects the rectum and can spread proximally up to the cecum in an uninterrupted retrograde pattern (continuous areas of inflammation and ulceration with no segments of normal tissue), while inflammation is typically confined to the mucosa (Assadsangabi and Lobo 2013). According to epidemiological data, the highest prevalence of IBD is reported in westernized nations (Europe and North America) and their incidence appears to be gradually increasing in different regions worldwide, indicating their emergence as global diseases imposing great health and economic burdens (Molodecky et al. 2012).

IBDs can occur anytime in life; however, they usually have an onset in early adulthood and a lifelong impact characterized by periods of remission and periods of active disease. The onset and active phases of IBD usually involve symptoms of abdominal and/or rectal pain and diarrhea (with blood or mucus in UC), frequently accompanied by other manifestations such as anorexia, weight loss, nausea and vomiting, arthralgia, and fever. Patients with IBD are at a high risk of developing intestinal cancer (mostly colorectal cancer in UC), while both CD and UC are also associated with several extraintestinal manifestations, including cutaneous lesions, ophthalmologic and joint disorders, biliary and liver complications, osteoporosis, and anemia. The primary end points of active IBD therapy include induction and maintenance of remission, as well as management of IBD-related complications. Currently, therapeutic options include salicylates, corticosteroids, immunosuppressants, immunomodulators, and biologic agents; however, if these treatments fail, the surgical removal of the highly affected intestinal parts remains the only available therapeutic choice (Engel and Neurath 2010).

It has been proposed that IBD occurs due to inappropriate inflammatory and immune response to luminal pathogens and the resulting host–microbe interactions in genetically susceptible individuals; however, the exact pathogenetic mechanisms responsible for their development remain partly elucidated. In brief, data thus far suggest that genetic factors, gut microbiota disorders, defects in the intestinal barrier function that lead to increased intestinal permeability and increased exposure to pathogens, dysregulated innate and adaptive immune system response resulting in an increased secretion of pro-inflammatory cytokines, and the presence of various types of potentially cytotoxic autoantibodies represent the most important determinants of IBD pathogenesis (Fries and Comunale 2011; Zhang and Li 2014). Among the mediators of the dysfunctional immunoregulation of the gut, oxidative stress is considered as a potential etiological and/or triggering factor for IBD.
Oxidative Stress and IBDs

Current theories on IBD pathogenesis suggest that interactions among various genetic, environmental, and immune factors lead to an uncontrolled, dysregulated immune response in the intestinal mucosa. Underlying mechanisms are not entirely clear; however, substantial evidence suggests that chronic intestinal inflammation is associated with enhanced production of ROS and RNS, which in turn contributes to the initiation and perpetuation of the abnormal immune response (Zhu and Li 2012).

There is much direct evidence that a state of increased oxidative stress is present in human and experimental IBD. Several studies have demonstrated that compared with controls, both CD and UC patients and animals with experimental IBD exhibit increased formation of ROS/RNS and excessive levels of oxidized molecules (lipid and DNA oxidation markers), both in blood and in the gastrointestinal tract (Thomson et al. 1998; Rezaie et al. 2007). The intestinal epithelium contains multiple antioxidant systems, such as antioxidant enzymes (i.e., superoxide dismutase, catalase, glutathione peroxidase, myeloperoxidase, and glutathione reductase) and low molecular-weight antioxidant molecules (i.e., reduced glutathione and metallothionein), all of which are involved in protecting the intestinal cells against oxidative stress. In line with the augmented formation of oxidized molecules, both human and in vivo studies have reported an imbalance (either increase or decrease) in blood and intestinal mucosa concentrations of the aforementioned antioxidants in IBD (Thomson et al. 1998; Rezaie et al. 2007). This suggests either an induction of their synthesis in response to the oxidative molecules produced during the inflammatory response or their depletion due to severe persistent oxidative stress.

Oxidative stress is considered to contribute both to the development and the progression of IBD. It has been proposed that the augmented formation of ROS/RNS may occur at the very early stage of the disease process or even before the disease onset, suggesting a possible causative role of oxidative stress in the genesis of IBD. This notion is largely supported by several in vivo studies, recently reviewed by Zhu and Li (2012), showing that the direct inoculation of ROS/RNS to the intestine of experimental animals leads to intestinal inflammation and the development of colitis. Moreover, the chemical or genetic depletion of endogenous antioxidants (e.g., glutathione or glutathione peroxidase) has been shown to lead to spontaneous development of experimental colitis, while both the administration of exogenous antioxidants and the chemical or genetic amplification of endogenous antioxidants, such as superoxide dismutase, have been proven to attenuate the progression of chemically induced colitis in mice (Zhu and Li 2012). Regarding IBD progression, overproduction of ROS/RNS via various sources, especially the activated neutrophils and macrophages, can cause direct damage to intestinal cells via interacting with cellular constituents, including lipids. The subsequent formation of lipid peroxidation products, such as reactive aldehydes, has been shown to induce the infiltration and activation of inflammatory cells, leading to additional mucosal injury and the perpetuation of the inflammatory response (Kumagai et al. 2004; Trevisani et al. 2007).

It is still unclear whether oxidative stress precedes or follows intestinal inflammation. ROS/RNS can disintegrate the intestinal epithelium and increase intestinal permeability, leading to an increased exposure to intestinal pathogens and induction
of the inflammatory response. Moreover, oxidative stress can lead to the activation of NF-κB, a pro-inflammatory redox-sensitive transcription factor that is known to result in a further overexpression of pro-inflammatory cytokines, hence contributing to the perpetuation of intestinal inflammation in IBD. On the other hand, inflammation can result in oxidative stress by stimulating ROS/RNS-generating systems. The increased activity of infiltrating immune cells in IBD patients is known to result in an increased production of pro-inflammatory cytokines, such as TNF-α, IL-1β, and IFN-γ, which in turn lead to an increased formation of ROS/RNS by phagocytic cells accumulating within the gastrointestinal tract, during times of active inflammation (Abraham and Cho 2009; Jena et al. 2012). It is therefore obvious that oxidative stress and intestinal inflammation consist of two closely related mechanistic aspects, both implicated in the development and the progression of IBD, as shown in Figure 12.1.

**Antioxidants and IBD Risk**

As previously described, oxidative stress plays an important role in IBD pathogenesis. Several studies have thus far attempted to investigate any potential relationship between dietary antioxidant intake or blood circulating antioxidant levels and IBD risk, which are presented and discussed in detail below.

**Dietary Antioxidant Intake and IBD Risk**

Although genetic and immune factors are the most important determinants of IBD development, nutrition has also been proposed as a potential environmental factor affecting IBD risk. For instance, it has been hypothesized that dietary components could influence the risk of intestinal inflammation through several mechanisms, including a direct contact with the colonic mucosa, changes in the chemical composition of mucosal cell membranes, or even an effect on the balance of intestinal flora. Indeed, several studies have thus far explored potential associations between long-term dietary habits, in terms of nutrients and foods or food groups, and IBD risk. According to a recent review of prospective cohorts, mainly including middle-aged Europeans, a diet high in protein from meat and fish has been consistently found to increase the risk of both CD and UC development, while an increased intake of linoleic acid and a decreased intake of omega-3 polyunsaturated fatty acids seem to be associated with increased UC risk (Andersen et al. 2012). Retrospective case–control studies also demonstrate a positive association between the dietary intake of total polyunsaturated fatty acids and omega-6 fatty acids, as well as the consumption of meat and the likelihood of both CD and UC, while they also provide limited data on food groups rich in antioxidants; in specific, a high consumption of fruits has been associated with a lower likelihood of CD, while a high consumption of vegetables has been associated with a lower likelihood of UC (Hou et al. 2011).

Regarding dietary antioxidants, given the involvement of oxidative stress in IBD pathogenesis, one could speculate that an increased dietary antioxidant intake could protect against the development of IBD; however, such evidence is currently limited. Thus far, only one prospective study provided results regarding the potential associations between specific dietary antioxidants and UC risk (Hart et al. 2008). In this nested case–control study within a European prospective investigation, 260,686 men
and women aged 20–80 years residing in the United Kingdom, Sweden, Denmark, Germany, and Italy, selected from the European Prospective Investigation into Cancer and Nutrition (EPIC) Study cohort, provided information on their dietary habits through country-specific food-frequency questionnaires and were followed for the development of UC. According to the study’s results, no significant association between dietary vitamin C, vitamin E, carotene, and retinol intake and UC risk was observed. Prospective studies testing associations between dietary antioxidants and CD risk are currently unavailable. Evidence regarding the potential role of dietary antioxidants in IBD development is also available through some case–control studies, comparing the dietary habits of either newly diagnosed or long-term IBD patients with those of healthy individuals (Reif et al. 1997; Geerling et al. 1998, 2000a; Sakamoto et al. 2005; Filippi et al. 2006; Rosman-Urbach et al. 2006; Kawakami et al. 2007; Sousa Guerreiro et al. 2007). Most of the data support that both CD and UC patients tend to report lower vitamin C intake, compared with controls, while data on other dietary antioxidants, such as vitamin A or vitamin E, are largely conflicting. Moreover, in most studies, patients with CD exhibit a higher frequency of inadequate dietary antioxidant intake (defined as a dietary intake below the country-specific recommended intake) compared with healthy individuals.

Prospective studies undoubtedly provide the most reliable data regarding disease risk. Given the lack of such studies evaluating the association between dietary antioxidants and IBD risk, a definite conclusion cannot be drawn. On the other hand, case–control studies can provide valuable information regarding the role of dietary antioxidants in IBD development, given that the interval between the diagnosis and participants’ recruitment into the study is short, so that the prediagnosis diet is accurately reported. However, it should be mentioned that they also present many methodological limitations, mainly due to being largely susceptible to recall bias, while their retrospective design does not allow the reporting of causal associations between dietary antioxidant intake and IBD risk, as does a prospective design. Particularly, case–control studies on long-term IBD patients are of little value, since patients’ dietary habits are most probably already influenced by the disease itself. It has been reported that patients with IBD in remission modify their dietary habits to prevent a possible disease relapse; food groups usually avoided or completely excluded include fruits, vegetables, legumes, pulses, and whole grains (Zallot et al. 2013), which are among the most important dietary sources of antioxidants. In addition, IBD patients are usually advised to follow a low-fat diet to prevent symptoms of diarrhea resulting from fat malabsorption due to intestinal inflammation (Brown et al. 2011). This possibly contributes to a decreased intake of the fat-soluble antioxidants vitamins A and E. Given the aforementioned, the low antioxidant intake of IBD patients observed in case–control studies could actually reflect disease-associated dietary modifications rather than dietary habits contributing to IBD development.

**Blood Antioxidant Levels and IBD Risk**

Evidence regarding the association between antioxidants and IBD is also available through studies exploring the blood antioxidant status of patients with CD and UC in comparison with healthy subjects (Ringstad et al. 1993; Ramakrishna et al. 1997; Bousvaros et al. 1998; D’Odorico et al. 2001; Koutroubakis et al. 2004; Rezaie et
Briefly, patients with IBD tend to exhibit lower total plasma antioxidant capacity and lower plasma vitamin C, vitamin A, and vitamin E levels compared with healthy individuals; however, not all studies confirm these differences between patients and controls. Interestingly, some studies have also reported lower serum selenium levels both in adults and children with IBD compared with healthy controls, as well as an inverse association between serum selenium levels and disease extent. Given that patients with IBD have an increased risk of intestinal cancer and that selenium may inhibit intestinal carcinogenesis through multiple mechanisms (e.g., by protecting cellular membranes against oxidative damage, by reducing the mutagenicity of cancer-causing chemicals, or by affecting carcinogen metabolism) (Meplan and Hesketh 2012), reduced selenium levels may be of special importance in patients with IBD.

Although it is clear that IBD patients present an imbalance in blood antioxidant levels, this observation could be a result of the established disease rather than a preceding phenomenon. For instance, low blood antioxidant levels could reflect a poor dietary antioxidant intake, caused by IBD patients’ strict dietary modifications to prevent and/or manage gastrointestinal symptoms or prevent disease relapse as previously mentioned. Most important, decreased blood levels of antioxidants could be the result of IBD patients’ general state of malnutrition. It is estimated that malnutrition occurs in up to 85% of patients with CD and up to 60% of patients with UC both in active phases of the disease and in periods of remission. Nutritional deficiencies are prevalent, particularly in relation to anemia and osteoporosis, but also vitamin and mineral deficiencies, and result from extensive intestinal inflammation leading to nutrient malabsorption, poor appetite leading to low energy intake and consequent weight loss, gastrointestinal symptoms including nausea, vomiting and diarrhea, intestinal surgery complications, or medication-related adverse effects (Lomer 2011).

**Antioxidants and Treatment of IBDs**

Given the strong involvement of oxidative stress in IBD pathogenesis and progression, antioxidant supplementation has been proposed as a potential alternative therapeutic option combined with established pharmacological treatment for IBD patients. In fact, the oldest and most commonly used drug for the treatment of patients with IBD, mesalazine, also known as 5-aminosalicylic acid, has shown ROS scavenging capabilities, as well as a synergistic interaction with other antioxidants, such as α-tocopherol (Rezaie et al. 2007).

Thus far, only few interventional studies have been conducted to examine the efficacy of specific antioxidants in patients with IBD, which are briefly presented in Table 12.1. The main antioxidants studied are vitamins C and E, β-carotene, and selenium (Geerling et al. 2000b; Aghdassi et al. 2003; Trebble et al. 2004, 2005; Seidner et al. 2005; Mirbagheri et al. 2008; Wiese et al. 2011), while two other studies investigated the role of curcumin in IBD treatment (Holt et al. 2005; Hanai et al. 2006). Curcumin (plant name *Curcuma longa*) is the principal natural polyphenolic compound found in the Indian spice, turmeric, and seems to exert strong anti-inflammatory and antioxidant properties (Holt et al. 2005). Thus far, the studies’ results are quite
### TABLE 12.1

Human Studies Assessing the Efficacy of Specific Antioxidants in IBD Treatment

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Study Sample and Methods</th>
<th>Results</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Geerling et al. 2000b</td>
<td>RCT: 25 CD patients in remission were supplemented either with antioxidants (12.4 μg selenium, 150 μg β-carotene, 4 mg vitamin E, and 20 mg vitamin C), or antioxidants plus n-3 fatty acids or placebo daily for 3 months.</td>
<td>Total antioxidant capacity and superoxide dismutase activity significantly increased, whereas the activity of glutathione peroxidase decreased. No change was observed between the groups considering lipid peroxidation or disease activity.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seidner et al. 2005</td>
<td>RCT: 121 patients with mild or moderate UC were given either an oral supplement enriched with fish oil, fructooligosaccharides, gum arabic, and antioxidants (72 IU vitamin E, 156 mg vitamin C and 30 μg selenium) (n = 59), or a carbohydrate-based placebo formula (n = 62) for 6 months. Clinical and histologic responses were assessed at 3 and 6 months or at the final visit.</td>
<td>Both groups showed histological improvements and similar reduction in the degree of disease activity, which was significantly different from the baseline. UC patients given the oral supplement required significantly reduced doses of corticosteroids to control clinical symptoms, compared with the control group. However, no marker of OS was measured in this study.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wiese et al. 2011</td>
<td>Pilot study: 28 patients with active CD on stable medication were asked to consume 16 oz of IBD Nutrition Formula containing fish oil, a fermentable prebiotic/fiber system, and increased levels of antioxidant vitamins and minerals (1185 μg β-carotene, 1320 IU vitamin A, 72 IU vitamin E, 156 mg vitamin C, and 22 μg selenium) daily for 4 months.</td>
<td>Plasma phospholipid levels of arachidonic acid decreased, while eicosapentaenoic acid and docosahexaenoic acid levels increased. Vitamin D (25-OH) levels improved in all patients. There was a significant decrease in disease activity and a significant improvement in quality of life in patients with final EPA &gt;2%.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aghdassi et al. 2003</td>
<td>RCT: 57 stable but oxidatively stressed CD patients were supplemented either with antioxidants (800 IU vitamin E and 1000 mg vitamin C) or placebo daily for 4 weeks.</td>
<td>Plasma vitamin C and E increased while all indices of oxidative stress (breath pentane and ethane output, plasma lipid peroxides, and F2-isoprostane) decreased. Disease activity remained stable.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### TABLE 12.1 (CONTINUED)

**Human Studies Assessing the Efficacy of Specific Antioxidants in IBD Treatment**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Reference</th>
<th>Study Sample and Methods</th>
<th>Results</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Mirbagheri et al. 2008</td>
<td>Case series study: 15 patients with mild and moderately active UC received d-α-tocopherol enema (8000 U) plus medication daily for 12 weeks.</td>
<td>Rectal d-α-tocopherol administration significantly reduced disease activity and was related with less need for corticosteroids.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trebble et al. 2004, 2005</td>
<td>RCT: 62 CD patients were supplemented either with fish oil (EPA and DHA) and antioxidants (150 μg β-carotene, 200 μg selenium, 30 mg vitamin E, and 90 mg vitamin C) (n = 31) or with placebo (n = 31) daily for 24 weeks.</td>
<td>Supplementation was associated with reduced plasma, interferon-γ, and prostaglandin E₂. No differences were detected in disease activity or indices of bone turnover.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hanai et al. 2006</td>
<td>RCT: 88 patients with quiescent UC were supplemented either with curcumin (2 g/day: 1 g after breakfast and 1 g after the evening meal) plus medication (n = 44) or with placebo plus medication (n = 44) for 6 months.</td>
<td>Curcumin supplementation resulted in greater improvements in disease severity and greater reduction in relapse rates, compared with the placebo group.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Holt et al. 2005</td>
<td>Pilot study: 5 patients with UC were treated with 550 mg curcumin twice daily for 1 month and then 550 mg three times daily for another month. In addition, 5 patients with CD were treated with 360 mg curcumin for 1 month and then 360 mg four times daily for 2 months.</td>
<td>All 5 UC patients improved, 4 of 5 reduced concomitant medications, while in 4 CD patients disease activity (symptomatic improvements of fewer bowel movements, less diarrhea, less abdominal pain and cramping) was reduced, as well as sedimentation rates.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Note:* CD, Crohn’s disease; g, gram; IBD, inflammatory bowel diseases; (I)U, (international)units; mg, milligram; RCT, randomized controlled trial; UC, ulcerative colitis; μg, microgram.
promising, suggesting that antioxidants may be a therapeutic option in IBD treatment. However, they also present various limitations, such as the low dose of administered antioxidants, small sample size, short duration, and no or short follow-up period. In addition, in five of the above-mentioned studies (Geerling et al. 2000b; Trebble et al. 2004; Seidner et al. 2005; Trebble 2005; Wiese et al. 2011), the supplement given to IBD patients, apart from antioxidants, also contained other dietary components such as fish oil, vitamins, and minerals; hence, the effect of antioxidants per se on IBD activity and severity is largely unclear.

Despite the lack of interventional studies in humans with IBD, most of the data assessing the effectiveness of antioxidants in the treatment of IBD comes from animal or in vitro studies. Several animal studies in rodent models of IBD (mainly experimental colitis and models of intestinal inflammation) have shown that vitamin E or selenium supplementation alone or in combination can significantly reduce markers of disease activity or severity, inflammation, and/or oxidative damage (Ademoglu et al. 2004; Tirosh et al. 2007; Bitiren et al. 2010; Tahan et al. 2011). In addition, there is much evidence that pure polyphenol molecules, such as quercetin, apigenin, genistein, resveratrol, and epigallocatechin-3-gallate, as well as natural polyphenolic extracts, such as extracts from green tea leaves and red wine, are capable of attenuating IBD severity and activity, by reducing immune cell infiltration in the intestine, intestinal inflammation, and oxidative stress markers (Romier et al. 2009). Interesting enough are the beneficial effects of curcumin on IBD treatment, shown in several in vivo studies (Jian et al. 2005; Camacho-Barquero et al. 2007; Deguchi et al. 2007; Mouzaoui et al. 2012), while only two of the aforementioned human trials have reproduced these data (Holt et al. 2005; Hanai et al. 2006). In brief, the main mechanisms proposed behind the observed effects of curcumin include free radical scavenging, the increase in the antioxidant enzymes, the suppression of pro-inflammatory enzymes (e.g., COX-2) and inflammatory cytokines (e.g., TNF-α, like INF-γ), and the modulation of signal transduction and transcription factors, including NF-κB. In addition, apart from curcumin’s potent anti-inflammatory properties, its potential chemopreventive effects on carcinogenesis are currently being investigated (Baliga et al. 2012). Subsequently, limited in vitro studies also indicate that pure polyphenols and plant polyphenolic extracts could exert anti-inflammatory properties via the modulation of intracellular signaling cascades in the intestinal cell. However, other in vitro studies have produced contradictory results, making it difficult to draw definite conclusions (Romier et al. 2009).

Undoubtedly, further research is needed through well-designed human randomized controlled trials to elucidate the applicability of antioxidants in IBD treatment. In addition, more in vitro and in vivo studies are also required to understand the complex mechanisms regarding the actions of antioxidants on IBD pathogenesis and progression.

**Conclusions**

Although mounting evidence supports the involvement of oxidative stress in IBD pathogenesis and progression, data regarding the role of specific antioxidants on IBD risk and management remain thus far limited and do not allow
the development of evidence-based recommendations on dietary antioxidant intake for these diseases. Nevertheless, given that current dietary guidelines for patients with both CD and UC suggest vitamin and mineral supplementation for all patients, or at least in those with malnutrition or those exhibiting reduced oral intake (Brown et al. 2011), the selection of supplements that also contain antioxidant compounds should be considered, to improve patients’ nutritional and blood antioxidant status.

REFERENCES


13 Antioxidants in Obesity and Inflammation

Chrysi Koliaki, Alexander Kokkinos, and Nicholas Katsilambros

CONTENTS
Introduction............................................................................................................. 233
Obesity as an Inflammatory Condition ................................................................. 234
Association of Obesity with Oxidative Stress....................................................... 234
Defective Antioxidant Defense in Obesity............................................................. 235
Clinical and Experimental Evidence on the Effects of Exogenous Antioxidants in Obesity ................................................................. 236
  Green Tea Catechins.......................................................................................... 237
  Anthocyanins and Blueberries ........................................................................... 239
  Curcumin........................................................................................................... 239
  Resveratrol ...................................................................................................... 240
  Coenzyme Q..................................................................................................... 241
  α-Lipoic Acid .................................................................................................... 241
  Fruits, Legumes, and Nuts ............................................................................... 241
Safety Concerns and Open Questions................................................................... 242
Recommendations.................................................................................................. 243
Concluding Remarks and Perspectives............................................................... 243
References............................................................................................................. 244

INTRODUCTION

The development of obesity is characterized by an increased number and size of fat cells due to enhanced processes of adipocyte proliferation and differentiation, which are regulated by interacting genetic, metabolic, pharmacological, environmental, and nutritional factors. The key abnormality in obesity is an energy imbalance promoting excess energy storage in adipose tissue, which becomes progressively hypertrophic, hyperplastic, and dysfunctional, and is characterized by severe metabolic stress and disrupted energy metabolism.

Obesity is strongly associated with increased risk for type 2 diabetes mellitus (T2DM) and cardiovascular disease (CVD), mainly due to concomitant chronic subclinical inflammation and oxidative stress (Dali-Youcef et al., 2013; Vincent and Taylor, 2006), providing the rationale for testing the short- and long-term effectiveness of several antioxidant and anti-inflammatory pharmacological and dietary interventions.
for the prevention and treatment of obesity and its cardiometabolic complications. Experimental data from animal and in vitro studies as well as small-scale observational studies in humans suggest beneficial effects of specific antioxidant compounds on obesity-related conditions. However, it is important to note that randomized controlled clinical trials assessing the long-term safety and efficacy of antioxidant supplementation in obese humans are currently limited, inconsistent, and raise a number of methodological issues that warrant a cautious interpretation and critical appraisal of their findings.

**OBESITY AS AN INFLAMMATORY CONDITION**

Low-grade systemic inflammation is a prominent characteristic of obesity and is defined as a modest upregulation of circulating indicators of inflammation such as leukocyte count and concentrations of acute-phase proteins, pro-inflammatory cytokines, chemokines, soluble adhesion molecules, and prothrombotic mediators. In obese humans, systemic concentrations of pro-inflammatory mediators are consistently higher than in lean individuals, and promote cardiometabolic dysregulation by increasing the risk for insulin resistance and atherosclerosis (Calder et al., 2011). Obesity has been mechanistically linked to low-grade inflammation through the concept that adipose tissue synthesizes and secretes into the circulation a number of biologically active molecules such as hormones, growth factors, inflammatory mediators, and immune system effectors. White adipose tissue is no longer viewed as an inert energy storage organ, but is rather perceived as the largest endocrine gland of the human body. The secretory products of adipose tissue are collectively termed adipokines, and represent the mediating link between local and systemic inflammation in the context of obesity (Tilg and Moschen, 2006). Some adipokines are produced exclusively by adipocytes (leptin, adiponectin), while others are produced by both adipocytes and other cell populations of the stromovascular fraction of adipose tissue, predominantly the resident macrophages that infiltrate the hypertrophic adipose tissue (Weisberg et al., 2003). The anatomical localization of adipose tissue is of paramount importance for determining its physiological function, especially with regard to lipid handling (lipolysis and lipogenesis), gene expression patterns, insulin sensitivity, and profile of secreted adipokines. Central fat accumulation in the thorax and abdomen has been associated with increased systemic inflammation and cardiometabolic risk, whereas peripheral fat distribution is considered metabolically benign (Peppa et al., 2013). Obesity-related chronic low-grade inflammation can be further aggravated by hyperglycemia, which is commonly prevalent in obese humans owing to their concomitant peripheral insulin resistance (Calder et al., 2011).

**ASSOCIATION OF OBESITY WITH OXIDATIVE STRESS**

Oxidative stress is one of the unifying mechanisms underlying the development of obesity-related comorbidities, mainly T2DM and CVD. In obesity, multiple contributing factors may promote increased oxidative stress, including hyperglycemia, hyperleptinemia, increased tissue lipid availability leading to lipotoxicity, inadequate antioxidant capacity, and chronic subclinical inflammation (Vincent and Taylor, 2006). Data from cross-sectional studies provide solid evidence for increased
systemic oxidative stress in obesity. Markers of systemic lipid peroxidation (plasma malondialdehyde levels, thiobarbituric acid reactive substances) are increased in obese humans, and low-density lipoprotein (LDL) cholesterol is oxidized much faster, promoting atherosclerosis (Van Gaal et al., 1998). Urinary isoprostane excretion rates are higher in obese subjects and correlate positively with body mass index (BMI), as shown in the Framingham offspring cohort (Keaney et al., 2003). Plasma isoprostane levels have been also shown to correlate positively with BMI and total and visceral fat mass (Uraikawa et al., 2003). Biomarkers of oxidative stress are present in several tissues of obese humans, including plasma, skeletal muscle, and erythrocytes. The strong association between obesity and oxidative stress is highlighted by the finding that measures targeted at reducing body weight, such as physical activity, caloric restriction, and surgical interventions, have been shown to substantially improve biomarkers of oxidative stress in obese humans (Vincent and Taylor, 2006).

**DEFECTIVE ANTIOXIDANT DEFENSE IN OBESITY**

Antioxidants can be either nonenzymatic (dietary antioxidants and endogenous coenzyme Q) or enzymatic (antioxidant enzymes). Dietary antioxidants mainly comprise vitamins (C, E, β-carotene), antioxidant minerals (zinc, copper, selenium, manganese), and phytochemicals (phenols, flavonoids, lycopene, hydroxytyrosol), while the major antioxidant enzymes include superoxide dismutase (SOD), glutathione peroxidase (GPX), and catalase. The collective antioxidant capacity can be measured by total antioxidant status, representing free radical inhibition attained by all the antioxidants listed above in a tissue sample such as serum or plasma (Vincent and Taylor, 2006).

In the healthy state, endogenous and exogenous antioxidants work cooperatively to maintain the pro-oxidant/antioxidant balance and prevent tissue damage. An adequate combination of enzymatic and nonenzymatic antioxidants is indeed critical to secure cellular homeostasis. In obesity, total antioxidant defense from both endogenous and exogenous (dietary) sources is insufficient (Figure 13.1). A low dietary intake of protective antioxidants and phytochemicals has been reported in obese humans, since these individuals tend to consume relatively low amounts of antioxidant-rich foods such as fruit, vegetables, whole grains, legumes, wine, olive oil, seeds, and nuts (Vincent et al., 2010). This distinct dietary behavior leads to reduced serum levels of vitamins (C, E, β-carotene) and trace minerals such as selenium and zinc, which are important cofactors for proper antioxidant enzyme function (Ozata et al., 2002; Wallström et al., 2001). As a result of poor antioxidant intake, obese humans face an antioxidant deficit, independent of the external metabolic stressors imposed on their body. Beyond that, it has been suggested that dietary antioxidants are more rapidly depleted in obese humans to effectively combat the excessive pro-oxidant processes, leaving them ultimately less defended against free radical toxicity (Vincent and Taylor, 2006). Furthermore, the activity of all major antioxidant enzymes appears to be impaired in obesity. In obese humans, erythrocyte antioxidant enzyme activities (SOD, GPX) are markedly lower compared with their lean counterparts (Olusi, 2002). Of note, all the above data refer to long-standing obesity. Interestingly, it has been proposed that in the early stages of obesity, there might be a transient upregulation of total radical–scavenging capacity to counteract increased
In summary, the combination of inadequate dietary and enzymatic antioxidants with increased production of reactive oxygen species (ROS) leads to an imbalance that favors lipid and protein oxidation in obesity. The available antioxidant capacity is “overpowered” by excessive uncontrolled ROS formation in obese humans, shifting the pro-oxidant/antioxidant balance toward oxidative stress.

**FIGURE 13.1** Mechanisms for reduced antioxidant defense capacity in human long-standing obesity. Low dietary intake of protective antioxidants (vitamins, trace minerals, phytochemicals), rapid depletion of available antioxidants to confront excessive radical production, and impaired activity of antioxidant enzymes all contribute to insufficient antioxidant defense mechanisms in chronically obese humans, shifting the pro-oxidant/antioxidant balance toward increased oxidative stress. GPX, glutathione peroxidase; ROS, reactive oxygen species; SOD, superoxide dismutase.

oxidative stress, which is, however, followed by progressive depletion of all available antioxidants, a process induced by prolonged obesity (Vincent et al., 2001).

In summary, the combination of inadequate dietary and enzymatic antioxidants with increased production of reactive oxygen species (ROS) leads to an imbalance that favors lipid and protein oxidation in obesity. The available antioxidant capacity is “overpowered” by excessive uncontrolled ROS formation in obese humans, shifting the pro-oxidant/antioxidant balance toward oxidative stress.

**CLINICAL AND EXPERIMENTAL EVIDENCE ON THE EFFECTS OF EXOGENOUS ANTIOXIDANTS IN OBESITY**

The term phytochemicals is used to describe naturally occurring, plant-derived, bioactive compounds that exert beneficial effects in the prevention and treatment
of chronic metabolic and inflammatory disorders, including obesity. Dietary polyphenols are considered the leading phytochemicals and comprise catechins, anthocyanins, curcumin, and resveratrol, which are discussed in detail below. These compounds may modulate physiological and molecular pathways involved in energy metabolism, and their antiobesity effects have been demonstrated in cell cultures, animal models of obesity, and clinical/epidemiological studies (Meydani and Hasan, 2010).

**GREEN TEA CATECHINS**

Green tea has been extensively studied for its putative disease-preventing effects and is rich in polyphenolic flavonoids known as catechins (Sae-tan et al., 2011). A typical brewed green tea beverage (2.5 g green tea in 250 mL hot water) contains 240–320 mg catechins, including epicatechin (EC), epigallocatechin (EGC), epicatechin-3-gallate (ECG), and epigallocatechin-3-gallate (EGCG), which is considered the most abundant and well-studied green tea polyphenol, accounting for approximately 30–50% of total green tea catechin (GTC) content. As summarized in Table 13.1, the main mechanisms suggested to be involved in the antiobesity effects of GTCs have been demonstrated in *in vitro* studies and include (Moon et al., 2007) (i) inhibition of dietary fat absorption resulting in increased fecal lipid excretion due to inhibition of pancreatic lipase and changes in lipid emulsification properties of gastric and duodenal fluids, leading to impaired capacity of pancreatic lipase to digest dietary fat (Nakai et al., 2005); (ii) modulation of lipid metabolism in liver and adipose tissue in the direction of decreased *de novo* lipogenesis and enhanced fat oxidation and thermogenesis in brown adipose tissue (Lee et al., 2009; Park et al., 2011); (iii) activation of the nutrient-sensing enzyme adenosine monophosphate (AMPK), which prevents fat accumulation and favors fat oxidation and glucose utilization (Murase et al., 2009); and (iv) modulation of mitogenic, endocrine, and metabolic function of adipocytes (Lin and Lin-Shiau, 2006).

| TABLE 13.1 |
| **Main Mechanisms Suggested to Be Involved in the Antiobesity Effects of Dietary Polyphenols such as Green Tea Catechins, Resveratrol, and Curcumin** |
| Reduced dietary fat digestion, absorption, and transportation |
| Decreased lipogenesis in liver and adipose tissue |
| Increased catecholamine-mediated thermogenesis in brown adipose tissue |
| Activation of adenosine monophosphate-dependent protein kinase (AMPK) |
| Increased fat oxidation in the liver and muscle |
| Inhibition of adipocyte proliferation and differentiation |
| Suppressed angiogenesis in adipose tissue |
| Improvement of peripheral glucose uptake |
| Reduced inflammation in liver and adipose tissue |
In more detail, EGCG or EGCG-containing green tea extracts have been shown to reduce food intake, lipid digestion, absorption and transportation, and increase energy expenditure by stimulating thermogenesis in brown adipose tissue through a synergistic interaction with norepinephrine, enhancing fatty acid oxidation in liver and muscle, increasing muscle glucose uptake through glucose transporter-4 (GLUT4) translocation, and promoting fecal lipid excretion (Bose et al., 2008; Klaus et al., 2005). In adipose tissue, EGCG exerts antimitogenic and antilipogenic effects. The antimitogenic effects of EGCG on preadipocytes are mediated by downregulated activities of cell cycle control kinases such as extracellular signal-regulated kinases 1/2 (ERK 1/2) and cyclin-dependent kinase 2 (CDK2), leading to suppressed adipocyte proliferation and differentiation (Lin and Lin-Shiau, 2006). Beyond inhibiting preadipocyte maturation, EGCG may also induce apoptosis in mature adipocytes (Lin et al., 2005). EGCG exerts its antilipogenic effects through inhibited expression and activity of multiple lipogenic enzymes such as acetyl-coA carboxylase (rate-limiting step in fatty acid synthesis), fatty acid synthase, glycerol-3-phosphate dehydrogenase (rate-limiting step in triglyceride biosynthesis), and stearoyl-coA-desaturase 1 (rate-limiting enzyme in monounsaturated fatty acid synthesis) (Ahmad and Mukhtar, 1999; Ikeda et al., 2005; Lee et al., 2009).

Animal data suggest that supplementation of a high-fat diet (HFD) with EGCG results in lower weight gain due to reduced fat absorption from the gut (Bose et al., 2008). In addition to decreasing intestinal fat absorption, EGCG may prevent diet-induced obesity in mice by enhancing fat oxidation and augmenting norepinephrine-mediated sympathetic stimulation of thermogenesis in brown adipose tissue (Klaus et al., 2005). It has been also suggested that long-term green tea supplementation in animal models of obesity may exert beneficial metabolic effects, leading to a significant decline in fasting glucose and insulin levels and improved insulin sensitivity (Wu et al., 2004).

With regard to clinical data, not all epidemiological studies provide clear-cut evidence that green tea consumption is linked to body weight. A cross-sectional study conducted in Taiwan reported an association of habitual green tea consumption with lower body fat mass (Wu et al., 2003), in line with a longitudinal study from the Netherlands showing that green tea consumption is associated with lower BMI (Hughes et al., 2008). However, other studies found no association of green tea with adiposity measures, but only with an improved lipoprotein profile, which is beneficial for the overall obesity-associated atherosclerotic risk. In one of these studies, green tea consumption was associated with reduced total and LDL cholesterol but not with body weight (Tokunaga et al., 2002). In another study performed in male subjects over the age of 40 years, green tea consumption again displayed no correlation with body weight, but was associated with increased high-density lipoprotein (HDL) cholesterol and decreased LDL cholesterol and triglycerides (Imai and Nakachi, 1995). Thus, the epidemiological (cross-sectional and prospective) data remain inconsistent. Similarly controversial are the data regarding the effects of GTCs on energy expenditure and fat oxidation in humans. In one study comparing an EGCG-containing green tea extract enriched with 50 mg caffeine against caffeine alone, the green tea extract formulation was significantly more potent in stimulating 24-h energy expenditure, fat oxidation, and urinary norepinephrine excretion in healthy male humans (Dulloo et al., 1999). In contrast with these data, in another study in overweight
and moderately obese male and female subjects, green tea extracts rich in EGCG and caffeine consumed for 13 weeks were not associated with maintenance of body weight lost after a very-low-calorie diet, indicating no effects of GTCs on fat oxidation and energy homeostasis (Kovacs et al., 2004). With regard to controlled clinical intervention trials, they suggest overall that long-term consumption of green tea at high doses may be effective in reducing body weight and fat mass in humans (Saitan et al., 2011), particularly when combined with physical activity (Venables et al., 2008). In a clinical study, it was shown that an EGCG-rich green tea extract reduced body weight and waist circumference by 4.5% in moderately obese patients after 3 months of treatment (Chantre and Lairon, 2002). In the same direction, daily ingestion of one bottle of tea rich in GTCs (690 mg) for 12 weeks resulted in lower body weight, waist circumference, and total and subcutaneous fat, compared with a bottle of tea with a lower amount of GTCs (22 mg) (Nagao et al., 2005). The heterogeneity of data presented above must be acknowledged and is possibly related to differences in the treatment protocols employed, the purity of extracts tested, the percentage of concomitant caffeine enrichment, the duration of intervention, and the distinct physiological characteristics of the studied participants.

ANTHOCYANINS AND BLUEBERRIES

Anthocyanins are the major active component of blueberries, which are fruit rich in bioactive polyphenolic compounds such as hydroxycinnamic acid, flavonoids, proanthocyanidines, and anthocyanins. Blueberry juice can be biotransformed within the gut by *Serratia vaccinii* bacteria, increasing its polyphenolic content and quadrupling its antioxidant activity (Meydani and Hasan, 2010).

In animal studies, it has been shown that supplementation of an HFD with purified anthocyanins extracted from blueberries has no marked effects on body weight, hepatic steatosis, and food intake, but exerts beneficial metabolic effects on serum lipids, fasting glucose, leptin levels, and β-cell function (Prior et al., 2009). Of note, the same effects are not accomplished with administration of blueberry extracts, suggesting that the absorption and bioavailability of anthocyanins from the gut may be hindered by the concomitant presence of carbohydrates and lipids contained in whole blueberry extracts (Prior et al., 2008). In a mouse model of obesity and diabetes, chronic administration of anthocyanins failed to reduce body weight, but decreased fasting glucose and increased adiponectin (Vuong et al., 2009). In another animal study, supplementation of an HFD with whole blueberry powder again showed no effects on body weight, but improved insulin sensitivity and glucose homeostasis due to inhibition of macrophage infiltration in adipose tissue (DeFuria et al., 2009).

In summary, anthocyanins and blueberry extracts seem to have no beneficial effects on obesity per se, but may favorably impact obesity-associated conditions such as insulin resistance and inflammation, thus promoting cardiometabolic health.

CURCUMIN

Curcumin is the major, low-molecular, bioactive polyphenol found in the spice turmeric and possesses a great number of biological properties such as antioxidant,
anti-inflammatory, anticancer, antiangiogenetic, chemopreventive, and chemotherapeu tic effects. Cell culture and animal studies suggest that curcumin may modu late energy metabolism, ameliorate inflammation, and suppress angiogenesis, which might also account for its anticancer effects (Strimpakos and Sharma, 2008). With regard to obesity, curcumin has been shown to inhibit the expression of several growth factors in adipose tissue such as vascular endothelial growth factor, fibroblast growth factor, epidermal growth factor, and angiopoietin, leading to reduced angiogenesis in adipose tissue and thus preventing its expansion (antiadipogenic effect) (Gururaj et al., 2002). Of note, the antiobesity effects of curcumin have been mainly studied in animal experiments, whereas intervention studies in humans are mainly focused on its anti-inflammatory and anticancer properties.

In HFD-fed mice, curcumin supplementation reduced the density of microvessels in adipose tissue, providing direct evidence for suppressed angiogenesis (Ejaz et al., 2009). In addition, it activated AMPK, downregulated lipogenic gene expression, and enhanced fat oxidation. In hamsters, supplementation of an HFD with curcumin reduced blood lipids, leptin levels, and insulin resistance (Jang et al., 2008). Furthermore, in a mouse model of obesity and insulin resistance, a generous amount of curcumin in the diet significantly improved glycemic control and reduced hepatic and adipose tissue inflammation, in addition to lowering body weight and fat mass as measured by magnetic resonance imaging (Weisberg et al., 2008).

**Resveratrol**

Resveratrol is a well-studied polyphenol, which is present, among other foods, in grapes, red wine, peanuts, and ground nuts, and is considered protective against CVD, T2DM, aging, cancer, and obesity through its pluripotent antioxidant and anti-inflammatory properties. Studies in animal models have shown that resveratrol induces biological effects similar to those observed after caloric restriction, such as increased longevity and prevention of age-associated cardiometabolic abnormalities (Barger et al., 2008). It acts by stimulating AMPK activity, thus leading to enhanced fat oxidation and peripheral glucose uptake through GLUT4 translocation (Zang et al., 2006). It has also been suggested that it may upregulate sirtuin 1 activity, which deacetylates and activates a critical transcription factor related to mitochondrial biogenesis (peroxisome proliferator-activated receptor γ co-activator 1a), leading to increased oxidative phosphorylation capacity and reduced lipid accumulation (Lagouge et al., 2006). In vitro data from cell cultures and gene microarray analyses have shown that resveratrol inhibits adipogenesis and enhances lipolysis in isolated human adipocytes, and downregulates the expression of lipogenic genes in hepatic tissue (Ahn et al., 2008). Through its potent antioxidant activity, resveratrol may also prevent oxidative damage related to impaired glucose metabolism, thus preventing the pathogenesis of diabetic complications.

Resveratrol treatment has been shown to significantly reduce total and regional body fat in both genetic and diet-induced animal models of adiposity (Meydani and Hasan, 2010). In humans, a double-blinded, placebo-controlled, randomized, cross-over clinical trial showed that resveratrol treatment for 30 days (150 mg/day) improved adipose tissue function in healthy obese men, by decreasing adipocyte size and upregulating intracellular pathways related to lysosomal and phagosomal
processes, suggesting autophagy as an alternative mechanism of resveratrol-induced lipid breakdown (Konings et al., 2013).

Despite compelling evidence from molecular, cell culture, and animal studies that resveratrol may contribute to the prevention of obesity, epidemiological and randomized clinical trials are needed to substantiate its effects on humans.

**Coenzyme Q**

Coenzyme Q (CoQ) is the only nonenzymatic antioxidant synthesized by humans and the single lipid component of the mitochondrial electron transport chain, regulating mitochondrial membrane permeability and activity of uncoupling proteins at a subcellular level (Turunen et al., 2004). CoQ is at the crossroad between oxidative stress and mitochondria, which are thought to play a crucial role in adipocyte differentiation and energy metabolism in obesity. A strong negative correlation between CoQ content in adipose tissue and obesity markers in rodents and humans has been found. In mice, HFD-induced obesity depletes CoQ from subcutaneous adipose tissue, whereas a long-term increase in CoQ content by gene overexpression related to its synthesis inhibits adipogenesis, suggesting CoQ as a potent antiadipogenic factor (Bour et al., 2011). In obese humans, adipose tissue CoQ levels are markedly reduced and a critical threshold of CoQ content in adipose tissue has been identified, below which all rodents and humans develop an obese phenotype (species-conserved threshold value) (Bour et al., 2011). In the clinical setting, CoQ treatment for 8–9 weeks has been associated with a clear body weight reduction in obese humans (Van Gaal et al., 1984).

**α-Lipoic Acid**

α-Lipoic acid (ALA) is a naturally occurring short-chain fatty acid, which serves as an essential cofactor for enzymes of the mitochondrial respiratory chain. It is a powerful antioxidant and widely used as a nutrient supplement due to its antioxidant properties. It has been shown that ALA supplementation may prevent lipid peroxidation and oxidative DNA damage in obese rats, suppress *ad libitum* food intake, increase whole-body energy expenditure, reduce body weight and visceral fat mass, and additionally decrease blood glucose and insulin levels (Kim et al., 2004). Since ALA was effective after both intraperitoneal and intracerebrovascular administration in animal studies, the central nervous system appears as the primary site of its anorexigenic effects, which are particularly mediated by suppressed hypothalamic AMPK activity (Kim et al., 2004). In humans, the antiobesity effects of ALA supplementation are less prominent. In a double-blinded, placebo-controlled, randomized clinical trial in a large number of overweight and obese subjects with comorbidities, ALA treatment for 20 weeks led to minimal weight loss (2.1%) only at the highest dosage (1800 mg/day) (Koh et al., 2011).

**Fruits, Legumes, and Nuts**

A nutritional intervention study in obese men and women comparing two energy-restricted diets enriched or not in fruits for 8 weeks showed that both diets led to
significant weight loss, but only the fruit-enriched diet resulted in an additional decrease of oxidized LDL cholesterol and increase of total serum antioxidant capacity (Crujeiras et al., 2006). Legumes are also a significant dietary source of polyphenolic compounds, including flavonoids, isoflavones, phenolic acids, and lignans. In a nutritional intervention study, soya consumption increased total plasma antioxidant capacity in obese postmenopausal women (Azadbakht et al., 2007), while more common legumes such as beans, lentils, and chickpeas have been shown to improve cardiovascular risk factors and biomarkers of oxidative stress in obese humans. Consumption of four servings of legumes per week within a weight reduction program followed for 8 weeks led to more significant weight loss compared with a diet without frequent legume consumption, and furthermore improved plasma antioxidant capacity and decreased circulating proatherogenic cholesterol levels (Crujeiras et al., 2007). Additional metabolic benefits of legumes are their satiety-promoting effects and their potential to alleviate the negative effects induced by hypocaloric diets on lean body mass and basal metabolic rate (Abete et al., 2008).

Nuts represent one more “functional” food with multiple bioactive compounds. The American Heart Association has recommended regular nut consumption since 2000 (Krauss et al., 2000). Their mono- and polyunsaturated fat content relates to their lipid-lowering effects, while their rich concentration of copper, magnesium, tocopherols, squalene, and phytosterols accounts for their strong antioxidant capacity (Alexiadou and Katsilambros, 2011). The concern that they might promote weight gain due to their high energy density is not evidence-based, since it has been shown that subjects who consume nuts more than 2 times per week have a lower risk of prospective weight gain than those who eat rarely or no nuts, after adjusting for several obesity-related factors (Bes-Rastrollo et al., 2007).

SAFETY CONCERNS AND OPEN QUESTIONS

In observational and laboratory studies, high doses of EGCG have been associated with hepatotoxicity (hepatic necrosis and inflammation) (Lambert et al., 2010). In humans, a limited number of controlled clinical trials have been conducted to determine the maximum tolerated dose of GTCs administered via diet or in alternative formulations such as pills or capsules. To date, no large-scale human intervention study has reported any serious adverse effects with GTCs. Mild adverse effects have been reported in a few cases of resveratrol treatment in humans (Cottart et al., 2009), while in animal studies high doses of resveratrol supplementation have been associated with anemia, nephrotoxicity, hepatotoxicity, increased homocysteine, and reduced HDL cholesterol levels (Crowell et al., 2004; Noll et al., 2009).

Beyond the underexplored safety issues related to long-term antioxidant supplementation in humans, there is also a number of aspects that have not been adequately addressed yet. The primary molecular and cellular targets of action of dietary antioxidants, their dose-response relationships, their threshold dose, and, most important, the translation of animal and in vitro data to human intervention studies remain relevant unresolved questions. Of note, the major proposed mechanisms of action are based on in vitro studies and occur only at high concentrations of the tested
compounds. Owing to the absence of compelling *in vivo* evidence supporting these mechanisms, their *in vivo* relevance still remains uncertain. Furthermore, it has been intriguingly suggested that antioxidant supplements beyond critical concentrations may not only fail to accomplish the desired effects but also lead to opposite results from those anticipated (Spanou et al., 2010). For all the above reasons, the positive study findings with antioxidant supplementation in humans should be viewed and interpreted with caution.

RECOMMENDATIONS

At present, there is no sufficient evidence to support the long-term use of exogenous antioxidant supplements as a safe and effective measure for the prevention and treatment of obesity and its concomitant state of low-grade inflammation. The routine supplementation of diet with antioxidants and vitamins is therefore not considered necessary (Katsilambros et al., 2006). Nevertheless, the integration of healthy foods containing bioactive compounds in the context of a balanced energy-restricted dietary pattern can help maintain a normal body weight and prevent obesity-related cardiometabolic complications.

Finally, coffee, which also possesses antioxidant properties, may also be included as part of a healthy, heart-friendly diet. A recent review of the currently available evidence on the effects of habitual coffee intake on cardiometabolic outcomes has clearly demonstrated that a moderate daily consumption of two to three cups of coffee (300 mg caffeine) is safe, harmless, and associated with neutral to beneficial health outcomes for the general public (O’Keefe et al., 2013). In the same lines, there is evidence that green coffee extract may also exert a beneficial effect on weight, although the existing data are still not unequivocal (Onakpoya et al., 2011).

CONCLUDING REMARKS AND PERSPECTIVES

Despite uncertainties, nutritional intervention remains the safest and most cost-effective treatment and prevention option for obesity and the metabolic syndrome. Although antioxidant supplementation should be viewed with caution, consumption of foods with anti-inflammatory and antioxidant properties should be considered an important component of a dietary approach against obesity and CVD. A diet rich in antioxidant compounds may enhance the benefits of weight loss, especially in patients with metabolic syndrome and high cardiovascular risk.

Further *in vivo* studies examining the primary molecular and cellular mechanisms of action of dietary antioxidants, and their temporal and dose-response relationships, are warranted. As to safety issues, the therapeutic index of all suggested antioxidant agents must be established, not only when these compounds are delivered through the diet, but especially when they are converted to a bolus formulation such as a pill or capsule (pharmacokinetic studies). Only with complete understanding of all possible effects and side effects of antioxidant interventions can their potential benefits for the prevention and treatment of obesity and obesity-related comorbidities be fully unraveled and critically appraised.
REFERENCES


Antioxidants in Obesity and Inflammation


Modulation of Immune Response by Antioxidants

Kathrin Becker, Florian Überall, Dietmar Fuchs, and Johanna M. Gostner

INTRODUCTION

Healthy living is the best way to prevent disease. Environmental pollution, sunlight exposure, and many other influences favor radical stress, leading to an increasing number of oxidative stress–associated inflammatory diseases. Cardiovascular disease, cancer, neurological disorders, diabetes, ischemia/reperfusion, or even normal aging processes are characterized by an imbalance between radical generation and neutralization (Dalle-Donne et al., 2006; Dhalla et al., 2000; Jenner, 2003). Free radicals, like reactive oxygen species (ROS) or reactive nitrogen species (RNS), lead to oxidation and nitration of biomolecules, which can subsequently result in destruction of whole cellular compartments (Kovacic and Jacinto, 2001). To protect from radical damage, cells are equipped with a variety of enzymatic and nonenzymatic antioxidant systems. Exogenous antioxidants derived from diet or medications are suggested to support these protective mechanisms; however, excessive antioxidant intake may also lead to adverse effects. In this chapter, we will focus on the interference of antioxidants with immune response and discuss possible consequences of unconsidered high-dose antioxidant supplementation.
SMALL REDOX MOLECULES AND REDOX HOMEOSTASIS

In a redox reaction, electrons are transferred from one molecule to another. One agent becomes reduced by receiving electrons from the reaction partner, which will be oxidized. Such reactions are crucial for life; however, aberrant or excessive oxidation of biomolecules can become damaging for the cell (Davies, 1995).

Free radicals are defined as molecules with one or more unpaired electrons. An unpaired electron extremely raises the reactivity of a molecule. Among the many small redox-active molecules, in particular ROS and RNS, were intensively investigated because of their important roles as both deleterious and beneficial molecules (Valko et al., 2006). Cells continuously produce radicals such as superoxide anion ($O_2^-$) or nitric oxide (NO$^+$), which react to a variety of ROS/RNS, such as hydroxyl radical (HO$^+$), hydrogen peroxide ($H_2O_2$), hypochlorite (OCI$^-$), and peroxynitrite (ONOO$^-$) or nitrogen dioxide (NO$_2^-$) (Dröge, 2002; Wink et al., 2011).

Despite the variable structure of redox molecules, they share common mechanisms that harm cells and tissues through damage of proteins, DNA, or lipids (Valko et al., 2007). All components of the DNA, the purine and pyrimidine bases as well as the deoxyribose backbone, were shown to be targets of, e.g., HO$^+$ (Halliwell and Gutteridge, 1999). Polyunsaturated fatty acid residues of phospholipids are extremely sensitive to oxidation and are easily attacked by ROS (Siems et al., 1995). Also, the side chains of all amino acid residues of proteins, in particular cysteine and methionine residues, are susceptible to RNS/ROS attacks (Stadtman et al., 2004).

Various mechanisms to counteract ROS have been described: (i) endogenous antioxidant enzymes such as catalase (CAT), glutathione reductase (GSR), or superoxide dismutase (SOD), as well as (ii) nonenzymatic systems such as glutathione (GSH), urate, and coenzyme Q. In addition, other various free amino acids, peptides, and proteins serve as low molecular weight antioxidants (Valko et al., 2006). All these enzymes and molecules have the ability to transform ROS/RNS into more stable, and thus harmless, compounds via redox-based mechanisms.

Production of high levels of ROS/RNS during respiratory burst reaction is an important strategy in the defense against invading pathogens (Decoursey et al., 2005). However, at such high concentrations, free radicals can be hazardous and damage not only target cells but also host cells in the inflamed tissue. Thus, ROS/RNS generation, release, and neutralization has to be tightly regulated during immune response. At low concentrations, ROS/RNS play an important role in many signaling processes as regulatory mediators. Stress response signaling, detoxification, and several immunobiochemical pathways can be activated by ROS/RNS-derived signals in a dose-dependent manner (Gostner et al., 2013; Valko et al., 2007; Wink et al., 2011). Small redox molecules are also involved in the induction and maintenance of cell growth and differentiation. Thus, the cellular redox status is an intrinsic indicator of cellular and systemic homeostasis.

Normally, redox reactions are balanced and a dynamic equilibrium of radical generation and scavenging free radicals exists, called “redox homeostasis.” A disturbed equilibrium of pro-oxidant/antioxidant reactions, misbalance between enzymatic and nonenzymatic antioxidant systems in the body, but also an overdose of antioxidant intake, can be reasons for a shift of the redox state, possibly leading to pathological consequences.
There are numerous studies that extrapolate the potential of ROS to trigger specific disease conditions and, in these, immune responses play a major role. An imbalanced redox homeostasis and oxidative stress was described to be associated with diseases that are accompanied by chronic immune activation such as infections, allergies, autoimmune disorders, neurodegenerative diseases, several malignancies, or the normal aging process (Dalle-Donne et al., 2006; Murr et al., 2005; Sayre et al., 2001). Elevated oxidative stress levels are suggested to be involved in the development and progression of chronic diseases. To support the cellular antioxidant machinery in detoxification and neutralization of ROS/RNS, uptake of antioxidant therapeutics and supplements, but also an antioxidant-rich diet, was suggested to be beneficial.

However, for several pathologies, it is questionable if oxidative stress is causative for disease onset or if it is an accompanying factor due to sustained inflammation. Thus, antioxidant treatment would only be helpful in reducing symptoms, but not the disease causes. Unreflected neutralization of reactive species may even cause shortage of RNS/ROS within the cell, which means that no more free radicals can perform their regulatory mechanisms of redox-regulated pathways and further pathologies could develop. Poor or even adverse outcomes of an antioxidant therapy in clinical studies support the view that further/other therapeutic approaches should be considered for such diseases (Bjelakovic et al., 2004; Dotan et al., 2009; Gerss and Köpcke, 2009; Kris-Etherton et al., 2004).

**PRODUCTION OF CELLULAR ROS/RNS**

Under normal conditions, the main intracellular source of ROS is $O_2^-$, resulting as a by-product from the mitochondrial respiratory chain (Dröge 2002; LeBras et al., 2005); however, xanthine oxidase (McNally et al., 2003), lipid peroxidases (Zhang et al., 2002), cytochrome P450 enzymes (Fleming et al., 2001), and uncoupled NO synthases (Vásquez-Vivar et al., 1998) also produce ROS as secondary products.

NADPH oxidases (NOX) produce ROS as their primary and sole function. NOX are membrane-bound enzyme complexes composed of a catalytic transmembrane spanning subunit and several regulatory proteins (Altenhöfer et al., 2012). The main reaction of NOX is to reduce molecular oxygen to $O_2^-$ (Altenhöfer et al., 2012; Rossi and Zatti, 1964). Phagocyte NOX was first identified to be responsible for the high amounts of $O_2^-$ and $H_2O_2$ released during the respiratory burst reaction. Excessive stimulation of NOX can become a major source of free radicals (Keisari et al., 1983).

Oxygenation of L-arginine in the presence of NADPH by nitric oxide synthase (NOS) leads to the formation of NO\textsuperscript{•}, NADP+, and L-citrulline (McNeill and Channon, 2012). NO\textsuperscript{•} is commonly known to be a regulator of the vasomotor tone. NO\textsuperscript{•} is able to diffuse through cell membranes and can initiate a variety of signaling cascades in a dose-dependent manner (Vignais, 2002; Wink et al., 2011). There exist three types of NOS isoforms: (i) neuronal NOS (nNOS), (ii) endothelial NOS (eNOS), and (iii) inducible NOS (iNOS). nNOS is involved, e.g., in the regulation of synaptic signaling and in the control of muscle contractility and local blood flow, while eNOS is involved in vasodilation, inhibition of platelet aggregation, and
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

leukocyte adhesion, and controls vascular smooth muscle proliferation and endothelial progenitor cell activation (Förstermann and Sessa, 2012). iNOS has effects on vascular functions under conditions of sepsis, and is an important mediator of inflammation. nNOS and eNOS are calcium dependent, while iNOS can act independently. Many tissues express one or more of these isoforms. Low amounts of NO•, at nanomolar concentrations, are normally produced by the constitutively expressed eNOS and nNOS (Mariotto et al., 2004), while iNOS expression is inducible in macrophages, after stimulation with, e.g., lipopolysaccharide (LPS), cytokines like interferon-gamma (IFN-γ), or other proinflammatory stimuli, and NO• levels can increase up to micromolar concentrations (Thomas et al., 2008). Such large amounts of NO• can have cytostatic effects. Excessive NO• production by iNOS can also contribute to chronic inflammatory pathologies and plays a crucial role in septic shock (Förstermann and Sessa, 2012).

ROS and RNS production during the respiratory burst reaction is conducted in the phagosome to minimize damage to cells. The regulation of phagosomal pH and O2•− production in neutrophils, macrophages, and dendritic cells follows distinct programs due to differences in NOX localization and phagosomal NO• concentrations (Savina and Amigorena, 2007). The interaction of NO• and O2•−/ROS can lead to the formation of nitrite (NO2−), nitrogen dioxide (NO2), and also nitrogen trioxide (N2O3). The ROS/RNS balance is important in orchestrating immunomodulatory mechanisms. However, both oxidative and nitrosative stress can interfere with intracellular redox buffer systems and thus result in a decrease of antioxidant ability (Wink et al., 2011).

ANTIOXIDANT SYSTEMS

Various enzymatic and nonenzymatic antioxidant defense systems protect cells against ROS/RNS attacks (Cadenas, 1997), and further preventive and repair mechanisms contribute to the overall protection.

SOD, CAT, and glutathione peroxidase (GPX) are the primary antioxidant enzymes that counteract ROS damage. SODs dismutate O2•− to H2O2 or molecular oxygen. CAT catalyzes the composition of H2O2 to water and molecular oxygen. GPX requires GSH as an electron donor and converts H2O2 very efficiently to water (Valko et al., 2007).

The primary intracellular nonenzymatic systems are GSH, cysteine/cystine (Cys/CySS) couples, and thioredoxins (TRXs). GSH is the major intracellular redox buffer in mammalian cells. GSH acts as a cofactor for several detoxifying enzymes and as a free radical scavenger. It is able to regenerate important antioxidants, like vitamins, back into their active forms. The capacity to regenerate important antioxidants is linked with the redox state of the glutathione/glutathione-disulfide couple (GSH/GSSG). GSH/GSSG couples are located in the cytoplasm, nucleus, mitochondria, plasma, or other organelles, but at different concentrations and different redox potentials (Kemp et al., 2008). Upon secretion of GSH, most of it is cleaved into its components and the resulting cysteines will fill the extracellular Cys/CySS pool, which is the major thiol/disulfide extracellular redox buffer system (Kemp et al., 2008). The GSH/GSSG ratio is a good measure to detect oxidative stress within
the cell (Jones et al., 2000; Nogueira et al., 2004). TRXs are low molecular weight proteins that contain a conserved dithiol at the active site. They are mostly found in the cytoplasm and nuclei in mammalian cells, and possess cytokine-like properties (Kemp et al., 2008). All thiol/disulfide buffers share similarities in their mode of action; however, each system has its own and unique function and is able to support the reduction of different subsets of proteins (Kemp et al., 2008; Lillig and Holmgren, 2007).

The intracellular redox balance is primarily held by the thiol/disulfide buffers. Under oxidative stress, not only the GSSG content increases but, in parallel, the content of protein mixed disulfides also augments (Valko et al., 2007). Thiol-containing signaling proteins such as receptors, protein kinases, and some transcription factors can be altered in their function by the formation of mixed disulfides. Thus, thiol/disulfide buffers represent an important element for various signal transduction networks, e.g., for the activation and differentiation of T cells but also for several other immunological mechanisms (Kesarwani et al., 2013).

Besides cellular antioxidant systems, antioxidant substances can be absorbed from dietary intake. Many food compounds exhibit antioxidative properties such as vitamins; phytochemicals can also be potential antioxidants, e.g., carotenoids like lutein and zeaxanthin, polyphenols, and flavonoids or stilbenes such as resveratrol have been shown to modulate redox homeostasis in vitro (Butt and Sultan, 2009; Santhakumar et al., 2014; Zaknun et al., 2012). Many of these compounds are contained in so-called healthy food, especially in fruits or vegetables or in beverages such as red and white wine, cacao and tea, and they are considered to play a major role in preventing disease and improving health (Heidemann et al., 2008). Thus, in the last years, ascorbic acid (vitamin C), carotenes (vitamin A), melatonin, glutathione, tocopherols, and tocotrienols (vitamin E) were in the focus of research because of their antioxidant capacities as potent agents for nutritional supplementation (Balsano and Alisi, 2009; Zaknun et al., 2012).

Although a clear demonstration of beneficial effects of the use of antioxidant supplements in disease prevention is not yet available (Stanner et al., 2006), such preparations are already widely used, sometimes also without any medical indication. Besides that many clinical trials could not associate a connection between antioxidant supplementation and disease prevention, high-dose (single) antioxidants could even increase the risk of disease as was reported, e.g., for age-related diseases or cardiovascular disorders (Bjelakovic et al., 2007; Jha et al., 1995; Myung et al., 2013; Zheng Selin et al., 2013). There is also evidence accumulating that high vitamin supplementation in early life increases the risk of an allergy later in life (Hyppönen et al., 2004; Milner et al., 2004). Furthermore, excess of vitamin uptake can cause neurotoxicity; however, vitamin deficiency may lead to neurological defects (Lanska, 2010; Snodgrass, 1992).

Of note, in daily life antioxidant uptake is often not recognized as such and many people do not even know which substances can act as antioxidants, as it is the case for several food additives such as preservatives and colorants but also for vitamins. Addition of antioxidants to food or beverage has increased, to stabilize them for transport and storage, to maintain color, or because of potential beneficial health implications, and an overexposure is not easy to avoid.
Extra-high-dose antioxidant uptake might not only support the development of allergy but could also disturb the successful execution of an immune response. Cytocidal products like ROS or RNS are necessary as a defense strategy, and their shortage may not only counteract pathogen eradication but also interfere with negative feedback loops of antiproliferative mechanisms, which regulate control and limit immune reactions. Thus far, several studies have investigated the influence of antioxidants on Th1-type immune response by focusing on tryptophan breakdown (Jenny et al., 2011).

**TH1-TYPE IMMUNE RESPONSE**

Various cell types act in cooperation for an effective immune response, whereby they cross-regulate each other. A coordinated interplay between innate and adaptive immune system is necessary for an efficient defense.

If an antigen enters the body, it will be presented on major histocompatibility complexes of antigen-presenting cells to T cells. There it will be recognized by the T-cell receptor and the presence of additional costimulatory signals such as protein ligand B7 and cluster of differentiation 28 (CD28) interaction ensures that T cells get activated (Balakrishnan and Adams, 1995). Antigen-mediated signals and stimuli from the microenvironment, such as cytokines, are critically involved in T cell differentiation into different effector subtypes.

Activated Th1-type cells secrete cytokines and thus activate T effector cells, like cytotoxic T cells or nonspecific effector cells such as natural killer cells and macrophages. They represent an important subpopulation of T helper cells that are characterized by the release of interleukin (IL)-2 and IFN-γ. Other cytokines like IL-4, IL-5, IL-6, and IL-13 are secreted by the subpopulation Th2-type cells and favor the Th2-type immune response (Romagnani, 2006). The classical division of Th1- and Th2-type cells has been extended as additional Th cell subtypes were identified in recent years. T-cell differentiation into Th1- and Th2-type cells is suggested to crucially depend on the redox environment, where oxidative conditions favor Th1 development and “antioxidative stress” leads to a shift in allergic Th2 responses (Gostner et al., 2013; Zaknun et al., 2012) (Figure 14.1).

Th17-type cells, which combine the innate and adaptive immunity, were found to be involved in the defense against extracellular fungi or bacteria (Yu and Gaffen, 2008). The Th9-type subset controls growth and activation (Schmitt et al., 2014), and follicular helper T (Tfh) cells are involved in B-cell maturation (Zhou et al., 2009). Another type of T-helper cells—the regulatory T (Treg) cells—are responsible for the maintenance of self-tolerance (Hori et al., 2003) and can limit the potential of collateral tissue damage (Hori et al., 2003; Zhou et al., 2009).

During defense against intracellular pathogens, Th1-type cells release the most prominent pro-inflammatory cytokine, IFN-γ. It is probably the most important inducer of antimicrobial and antitumoral defenses, and stimulates the production of ROS in macrophages (Nathan et al., 1983; Nathan, 1987). These high amounts of ROS further triggers redox-sensitive signaling cascades, e.g., mitogen-activated protein kinase, transcription factor nuclear factor-κB (NF-κB), and activator protein (AP)-1-dependent signaling cascades. NF-κB is a central inflammation mediator that...
Modulation of Immune Response by Antioxidants

regulates the expression of pro-inflammatory cytokines, chemokines, and adhesion molecules (Aggarwal, 2004). Moreover, NF-κB coordinates the expression of different subsets of genes; thus, NF-κB signaling is not only involved in the initiation but also in the maintenance and resolution of immune responses.

IFN-γ induces biochemical pathways such as GTP-cyclohydrolase (GCH1), indoleamine 2,3-dioxygenase 1 (IDO1), and iNOS (Werner et al., 2011; Widner et al., 2000). IDO is the rate-limiting enzyme in the conversion of the essential amino acid tryptophan into kynurenine. IDO1 is expressed in various cells such as macrophages, microglia, neurons, and astrocytes (Guillemin et al., 2007), and its activation plays an essential role as an antiproliferative strategy for pathogens and malignant cells but also as a negative feedback loop in the control of Th1-type immune response (Samelson-Jones and Yeh, 2006). Tryptophan metabolism is implicated in a variety of physiological and pathophysiological processes like antimicrobial, antitumor defense, neuropathology, and immunoregulation. Also, antioxidant activities have been described for IDO owing to the utilization of O$_2^-$ both as a substrate and as cofactor (Thomas and Stocker, 1999).

Activation of GCH1 leads to the formation of neopterin, a pteridine derivate, and of 5,6,7,8-tetrahydrobiopterin (BH$_4$). Neopterin has been identified as a biomarker for oxidative stress (Murr et al., 2002). BH$_4$ is an essential cofactor for several mono-oxygenases, such as iNOS (Werner et al., 2011). Of note, BH$_4$ is stabilized by several antioxidants to guarantee proper function. Owing to a relative deficiency of human macrophages in pyruvoyl tetrahydropterin synthase, high neopterin instead of BH$_4$ is
produced. The NO• output in humans is probably generated by the proper functioning of NOS in other cell types, such as endothelial cells, rather than by inducible NOS (iNOS) of macrophages. BH4-deficient NOS produce O2•− instead of NO• and can promote further reactions to form RNS or ROS such as H2O2 or ONOO−. Of note, NO• can act as an anti-inflammatory agent by directly inhibiting IDO enzyme function.

Neopterin derivatives are to be able to interfere with several redox-regulated pathways, such as NF-κB signaling and iNOS expression. High neopterin levels have been shown to be associated with a strong release of H2O2 (Nathan, 1986). Furthermore, higher neopterin levels were found to be associated with lower levels of antioxidants in human serum (Murr et al., 2009). Thus, neopterin can be used as a sensitive indirect marker for oxidative stress during immune activation (Murr et al., 1999).

The Th1-type immune response is involved in the pathogenesis of several inflammatory disorders like autoimmune syndromes, cardiovascular diseases, malignant tumor diseases, or neurodegenerative disorders (Romagnani, 2004; Schroecksnadel et al., 2006, 2007). Several in vitro studies confirmed the association of altered neopterin levels and IDO activity in patients with infectious disease, including HIV, cardiovascular disease, malignancies, neurodegenerative disorders, or normal aging processes (Capuron et al., 2011; DeRosa et al., 2011; Fuchs et al., 1992; Schroecksnadel and Fuchs, 2006).

Neopterin is a stable biomarker that can be measured in body fluids like urine, blood, and cerebrospinal fluid with enzyme-linked immunosorbent assays (Fuchs et al., 1992; Murr et al., 2002). IDO activation can be estimated by the calculation of the kynurenine-to-tryptophan ratio, which can be measured by using high-performance liquid chromatography (Widner et al., 1997). Thus, neopterin formation and tryptophan breakdown are robust readouts to evaluate the immune activation status.

**MONITORING IMMUNE RESPONSE IN VITRO**

Peripheral blood mononuclear cells (PBMCs) isolated via density centrifugation from blood of healthy donors can be used as in vitro model to measure the immunomodulatory influences of various substances on Th1-type immune response (Jenny et al., 2011). PBMCs comprise lymphocytes, mainly T cells but also B cells and natural killer cells, and monocytes/macrophages. T cells can be stimulated with mitogens such as phytohemagglutinin (PHA) to produce IFN-γ, which activates monocytes and initiates Th1-type pathways. When analyzing for GCH1 and IDO activity, neopterin, tryptophan, and kynurenine concentrations can be measured in cell supernatants after 2 days of incubation. With PHA stimulation, an artificial inflammatory milieu is generated, and different substances can be tested concerning whether they can influence immunobiochemical pathways (Figure 14.2).

Several drugs that are known to possess antioxidant activities, like aspirin, salicylic acid, atorvastatin, or vitamin A or C but also phytocompounds and botanical extracts, were shown to suppress tryptophan breakdown and neopterin production in PHA-stimulated PBMCs in a dose-dependent manner (Becker et al., 2014; Jenny et al., 2011).
Modulation of Immune Response by Antioxidants

A central target of antioxidants is NF-κB signaling. NF-κB is highly inducible by ROS and mediates pro-inflammatory cytokine expression (Asehnoune et al., 2004). A close relationship between NF-κB activation, production of neopterin, and degradation of tryptophan was demonstrated in the human myelomonocytic cell-line THP1-Blue in vitro (Schroecksnadel et al., 2010). This reporter cell line expresses an alkaline phosphatase reporter upon activation of NF-κB/AP-1 signaling, allowing a colorimetric readout of NF-κB activity in the cell supernatant.

ANTIOXIDANTS—A TWO-EDGED SWORD

The anti-inflammatory properties of antioxidants might be helpful during a situation of an overwhelming immune activation. Still, there is a question of dosage and the timepoint of intervention with antioxidant therapeutics or high-dose supplements during the course of infection or disease.

However, excessive antioxidant uptake presents a potential risk for unwanted adverse effects, especially when taken over longer periods. Too low ROS/RNS during...
the immune defense may result in inefficient pathogen clearance, and the risk of an infection can increase. Other adverse effects can be due to the interference with the cross-regulation of Th1 and Th2 immune responses, where a suppression of Th1-type response can favor Th2-type activation and can increase the risk of allergy or asthma. The typical Th2-type immune reaction after an allergen exposure result in the production of specific cytokines like IL-4, IL-5, and IL-13; whenever another allergen is met, a stronger immune response occurs. Under an antioxidant stress condition, the allergic response is suggested to be stronger and the sensitivity for allergens is enhanced.

**CONCLUSION**

Antioxidants may have a beneficial influence on human health when administered as an anti-inflammatory agent under certain conditions characterized by high levels of oxidative stress. However, excessive antioxidant uptake may increase allergy risks via the modulation of immune reactions toward a Th2-type pattern. Interestingly, the increase in allergy development is in line with the large-scale introduction of antioxidants in foods in the Western world.

Of note, for several antioxidant molecules, their direct antioxidant activity is not their sole function; the indirect effects mediated by these compounds should also be taken into consideration (Dinkova-Kostova and Talalay, 2008). The origin of the antioxidant may also play a role, especially when evaluating a high-dose uptake of single antioxidants in comparison to antioxidant-rich nutrition.

In general, a well-functioning human being does not need further supplementation of antioxidants; a balanced diet together with regular physical exercises will keep the body healthy and balanced.

**REFERENCES**


Modulation of Immune Response by Antioxidants


INTRODUCTION

Epidemiology

Human immunodeficiency virus/acquired immunodeficiency syndrome (HIV/AIDS) remains one of the most important public health challenges worldwide, especially in low- and middle-income countries. According to the World Health Organization (WHO) and UNAIDS (Joint United Nations Programme on HIV/AIDS), 34 million
people globally were living with the HIV infection in 2010. Also in the same year, 2.7 million new HIV infections, including 390,000 among children less than 15 years old, and an annual death rate of 1.8 million people was reported [1]. In sub-Saharan Africa, where two-third (22.6 million) of the HIV-infected people live, more than 6800 new infections and more than 5700 persons were dying from HIV in 2010 [2,3]. After sub-Saharan Africa, the regions with the highest rate of infection are the Caribbean, Eastern Europe, and Central Asia [3].

**Types of HIV Infection**

Two types of HIV infections are known, HIV-1 and HIV-2. Both strains of HIV are retroviruses and causative agents of AIDS. Although both viruses are similar in terms of basic gene arrangement, mode of transmission, intracellular replication pathway, and clinical consequence, important differences exist between infections caused by both viruses (Table 15.1; Refs. [4–6]).

**HIV Transmission**

HIV can be transmitted through a multitude of routes. In Africa, about 90% of HIV transmission in adults occurs through sexual contact. In industrialized countries, it has been observed that the prevalence of HIV among men who have sex with men is consistently higher than that in the general population [7]. Another path for HIV transmission is HIV from mother-to-child transmission (MTCT). MTCT

---

**Table 15.1**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Characteristic</th>
<th>HIV-1</th>
<th>HIV-2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Origin</td>
<td>SIV cpz</td>
<td>SIV smm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Epidemiology</td>
<td>Extends worldwide</td>
<td>Largely confined in West Africa and</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>communities in Europe with socioeconomic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>links to West Africa, e.g., Portugal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clinical progression</td>
<td>Progression to immunodeficiency is faster</td>
<td>Progression to immunodeficiency is slower;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>hence, individuals are mostly long-term</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>nonprogressors</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pathological processes</td>
<td>Progression occurs at lower CD4 counts</td>
<td>Progression occurs at higher CD4 counts</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Virology</td>
<td>Rate of DNA replication is higher, leading</td>
<td>Rate of DNA replication about 100-fold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>to higher viral load</td>
<td>lower, leading to lower viral load</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cellular response</td>
<td>Less polyfunctional and produce less IL-2</td>
<td>More polyfunctional and produce more IL-2</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

is responsible for about 630,000 pediatric infection annually, with more than 90% of these children living in sub-Saharan Africa [1,8]. HIV can also be transmitted through contaminated blood during blood transfusion or objects. Chen and coworkers discovered that the natural history of AIDS was caused by blood transfusion [9].

**PATHOMECHANISM OF HIV**

**CD4 Cells and HIV**

The HIV virus affects various cells of the immune system. Besides mononuclear phagocytes (monocytes and macrophages), studies in vivo show that CD4 lymphocytes are the most affected by HIV-1. To measure the state of the immune system and the degree of immune suppression due to HIV infection, the concentration of CD4 (cluster of differentiation 4) cells in plasma is used. The higher the CD4 cell count, the better the condition and prognosis of the individual (Table 15.2; Ref. [10]).

CD4 cells act as receptors for the entry of HIV virus into the cells. CCR5 (human C–C chemokine receptor 5), expressed on immune receptor cells and antigen-presenting cells, together with CD4 cells, are the primary receptors used by HIV for viral entry. Specific molecules that bind to CCR5 include MIP-1α, MIP-1β, and RANTES. These molecules play an important role in the homing and migration of effector and memory T cells during acute infections. Activation of CCR5 cells

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Clinical Parameter</th>
<th>Level</th>
<th>Stage of Infection</th>
<th>Significance</th>
<th>Common Infections</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CD4 cell count</td>
<td>500–1400 cells/μl</td>
<td>Average counts in healthy, HIV-negative individuals</td>
<td>Immune system is damaged</td>
<td>Oral thrush, pneumonia, tuberculosis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>&lt;500 cells/μl</td>
<td>Early symptomatic phase</td>
<td>Damage is severe and patient is officially diagnosed as an AIDS patient</td>
<td>Weight loss, diarrhea, chronic fatigue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>&lt;350 cells/μl</td>
<td>Late symptomatic phase</td>
<td>Infection is advanced and damage may be irreparable</td>
<td>Tuberculosis, <em>Mycobacterium avium</em> complex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Viral load</td>
<td>&gt;100,000 copies of HIV/ml of blood</td>
<td>Symptomatic phase</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

by chemokine leads to T-cell migration to the site of inflammation and immune response to antigen [11].

**Viral Load and HIV**

HIV viral load is one of the main surrogate indicators used for monitoring and managing HIV disease progression and treatment success in adults and children worldwide [12]. Viral load represents the number of copies of HIV virus per milliliter of blood and measures the speed with which the infection is progressing. The higher the viral load, the faster the progression. HIV patients are required to test their CD4 count and viral load regularly since these values will help the clinician determine the appropriate time to initiate the antiretroviral therapy. However, in many resource-limited areas, it is difficult to systematically monitor HIV progression through HIV viral load. This difficulty is due to the high cost of testing in big cities and the lack of equipment and technology in rural areas, where most of the infected persons live. For this reason, CD4 count or CD4% are now frequently used to monitor HIV-1 disease progression in both children and adults.

The progressive depletion of CD4 and increase in viral load are the hallmarks for HIV infection. Although the mechanism by which the HIV virus causes CD4 depletion is not well known, evidence exist that the depletion of CD4 is caused by an indirect mechanism. The most acceptable mechanism, supported by *in vivo* studies, includes the consequences of HIV interaction with resting CD4 lymphocytes, which cannot support viral replication. The binding of the HIV virus to resting CD4 cells in the lymphoid tissues leads to the upregulation of the lymph node homing receptors (L-selectin and Fas) [12]. When these HIV-signaled CD4 cells return to the blood, they home very rapidly back to peripheral lymph nodes and axial bone marrow. Their disappearance from the blood is likely due to their leaving the circulatory system. Most of the cells that have been induced by HIV to home on lymph nodes are subsequently induced into apoptosis during the process of trans-endothelial migration when secondary signals are received through various homing receptors [13]. The more CD4 cells are being activated, the higher the number of homing receptors (signs of CD4 destruction by apoptosis), and consequently the higher the HIV-1 viral load.

**HIV/AIDS and Malnutrition**

Despite the major advances in understanding the biology of the HIV infection and important progress in the HIV/AIDS therapy, the basic role of the patients’ nutrition in the pathogenesis of HIV infection is still a subject of great interest. Malnutrition and HIV are intricately interrelated with one another. Evidence exists that malnutrition increases the rate of disease progression as well as the rate of transmission of infection from mother to child. Also, HIV infection enhances malnutrition through its impact on nutrient intake, absorption, and utilization. However, it is still unclear which specific nutritional deficiencies contribute to poor clinical outcomes. With the increased global HIV/AIDS pandemic, coupled with the limited HIV drug availability, especially in developing countries, nutritional strategies to correct micronutrient deficiencies are gaining interest. Micronutrient deficiency during an HIV infection is
provoked by body metabolism changes and opportunistic conditions such as mouth sores, pain in the mouth, swallowing problems, anorexia, fever, diarrhea, vomiting, or loss of appetite, which, in turn, lead to reduced food intake and visible weight loss. These conditions lead to deficiencies of vitamins and minerals (vitamins A, C, and E; selenium; zinc, etc.) that are required to enhance the immune system [14,15]. Studies indicate that micronutrient supplements reduce plasma HIV RNA viral load, improve CD4+ cell counts, and reduce the incidence of opportunistic infections [16].

**HIV AND NUTRITION**

Recently, the importance of nutrition in human health is receiving increasing attention. Also, the assessment and improvement of the nutritional status in HIV infection has been recognized as an important part of comprehensive care of HIV-infected persons [17]. The use of nutritional supplements as well as natural food has been used to investigate its effects in various health conditions, including HIV/AIDS.

During an HIV infection, a long-term practice of adequate nutrition would compensate for energy lost due to HIV infection and would help the body resist further infections. To achieve this goal, the body has to be fed with relevant nutrients that can boost the immune system. Examples of such nutrients are micronutrients, including antioxidants such as vitamins A, C, and E; selenium; zinc; etc. These antioxidants are known in clinical interventions to positively influence the nutritional status and immunological parameters of HIV/AIDS patients. Besides nutritional supplements, a wide range of natural foods such as fruits, vegetables, cereals, etc., are rich sources of micronutrients [18,19]. The WHO recommends the “five-a-day” intake of fruits and vegetables, which can cover the required daily allowance of antioxidants. Environmental and epidemiological studies indicate that a high intake of fruit and vegetables is associated with a reduced risk of cancer, cardiovascular diseases, and oxidative stress [20]. Meanwhile, the health benefits of a high fruit and vegetable intake has been attributed to their high antioxidant content.

**HIV/AIDS AND OXIDATIVE STRESS**

During HIV infection, oxidative stress occurs through the activation of reactive oxygen species (ROS), produced after the activation of phagocytic cells (macrophages and neutrophils). ROS are also produced as by-products during electron mitochondrial transport of aerobic respiration, oxidoreductase catalysis, and metal-catalyzed oxidation. ROS are thus highly reactive and capable of causing significant damages to cell structure and function. Common ROS are the hydroxyl radical, hydrogen peroxide, and superoxide anion. ROS are known to play a critical role in the induction of oxidative stress and the degradation of immune cells [21]. Excess production of ROS can attack double bonds in polyunsaturated fatty acids, inducing lipid peroxidation that may result in more oxidative cellular stress. Oxidative stress is a condition when the balance between pro-oxidants and antioxidants is upset, causing an overproduction of ROS [22]. Oxidative stress promotes the replication of the virus by upregulating the activation of NF-kappa B (NF-κB), a transcriptional promoter of proteins involved in the inflammatory and acute-phase response. NF-κB is bound
to I-κB in the cytoplasm in its inactive form. However, tumor necrosis factor-α and ROS can cause the activation of NF-κB from I-κB. NF-κB then translocates to the nucleus and binds to the DNA, promoting transcription of HIV-1 [23,24]. To prevent such damages, adequate amounts of neutralizing antioxidants to act as scavenger of free radicals are required.

ANTIOXIDANTS AND HIV/AIDS

Antioxidants are nutrients who protect cells and tissues against ROS, produced as a result of immune activation to eradicate pathogens. Antioxidants occur endogenously in the body and also naturally in foods such as fruits and vegetables [25]. Common endogenous antioxidants include superoxide dismutase (catalyzes the conversion of two superoxide anions into a molecule each of hydrogen peroxide and oxygen), catalase (catalyzes the conversion of hydrogen peroxide to water and oxygen), and glutathione peroxidase (catalyzes the degradation of hydrogen peroxides and other organic peroxides to alcohols). They are known for their beneficial effects on free radicals in biological systems, reducing oxidative stress on immune cells and reducing the replication of the HIV virus [26]. Common exogenous antioxidants include ascorbic acid, α-tocopherol, carotenoids, polyphenolic flavonoids, selenium, and zinc, which can be obtained directly from the diet.

VITAMIN A

Of all the known vitamins, the role of vitamin A has been studied most extensively. Studies show that vitamin A has an effect on the immune system through the action of all-trans retinoic acid, which supports robust antibody responses by promoting Th₂ (type 2 helper) cell development [27]. Th₂ produces cytokines (IL-4, IL-5, and IL-10) that are responsible for strong antibody production as well as activation of eosinophils and inhibition of several macrophage functions, hence providing a phagocyte-independent protective response [28]. Hoag et al. observed a profound reduction in Th₂ cells in vitamin A–deficient mice, accounting for their depressed T-dependent antibody responses [29]. Providing vitamin A or its active metabolites reversed this defect. Vitamin A deficiency is a result of a low serum level of vitamin A due to reduced dietary intake following the HIV-related conditions already mentioned [30]. Vitamin A deficiency can also be a result of increased urinary excretion due to acute infections [31]. Visser and coworkers also observed, in resource-poor settings in South Africa, an association between advanced disease and/or weight loss and lowered blood concentrations of vitamin A [32]. Vitamin A deficiency can lead to pathological changes in the mucosal surfaces, impaired antibody responses, decreased CD4 cell population, and altered T- and B-cell functions.

Previous studies have shown that low vitamin A levels are also associated with increased risk of transmission of HIV from mother to child [33]. Fawzi and coworkers proposed that advanced HIV disease may suppress the release of vitamin A from the liver, leading to low levels of vitamin A in the plasma (despite the body having enough vitamin A liver stores) and, correspondingly, an increase in the risk of MTCT [34].
Recently, another researcher observed no improvement in vitamin A level, CD4 counts, and viral load after supplementing HIV-positive patients with a fortified sorghum meal. The conclusion was made that the major differences between these trials of multiple micronutrient supplements in HIV-infected adults—including: variations in the characteristics of study participants, composition and doses of the supplements, study duration, and other differences—could explain these contradictory findings [35].

**β-CAROTENE**

Carotenoids are among the most important dietary antioxidants found in human plasma. Their concentrations in plasma are considered to be the most accurate indicator of dietary carotenoid intake. Many epidemiologic studies have associated high carotenoid intake with a decrease in the incidence of chronic disease. However, the biological mechanisms for such protection are currently unclear. β-Carotene, among other carotenoids, is known to have antioxidant properties; however, the antioxidant activity of these compounds can shift into a pro-oxidant effect, depending on factors such as oxygen tension or carotenoid concentration. Mixtures of carotenoids alone or in association with other antioxidants can increase their activity against lipid peroxidation [36]. Although some clinical trials found no benefit of supplementing β-carotene on CD4 counts [37], others indicate its beneficial effects on HIV disease progression [38]. Baeten and coworkers observed in a multivariate analysis that β-carotene concentrations below the median were associated with elevated C-reactive protein (>10 mg/l) and higher HIV-1 plasma viral load. The authors suggest that low β-carotene concentrations primarily reflect a more active HIV infection, rather than true deficiency amenable to intervention [39].

**VITAMIN C**

Vitamin C, also known as ascorbic acid, is synthesized in the liver of most mammalian species but not by humans. Like most antioxidants, studies indicate an increased utilization of vitamin C in HIV-infected persons compared with healthy controls [31,40]. Increased use coupled with low dietary intake of vitamin C can lead to vitamin deficiency during HIV infection. Previous studies already confirmed that massive doses of vitamin C can suppress the symptoms of HIV disease and significantly reduce the occurrence of secondary infections [41]. Later, Fawzi and coworkers observed that supplementation of vitamin C in combination with vitamin E may provide protection to red blood cells against being destroyed by free radicals [34]. Recent studies indicate that increased intakes of vitamin C during HIV infection can lead to mild increase of CD4 counts, help prevent oxidative damage, and enhance normal immune function and survival [42].

**VITAMIN E**

Studies disclose the presence of low vitamin E levels in the plasma of HIV-infected persons [31,43]. This can be a result of increased utilization of vitamin E in quenching free radicals, thus reducing the peroxidation of polyunsaturated fatty acids [44].
Vitamin E deficiency in HIV patients can also be due to poor dietary intake, poor absorption, diarrhea, and impairment of the recycling mechanism of vitamin E through vitamin C [45]. Studies have shown an association between higher vitamin E intake and lower risk of progression to AIDS [32,43]. Other studies indicate the possibility for the supplementation of vitamin E to influence the production of RANTES, an important antiviral chemokine. In a small supplementation study, 500 mg α-tocopherol given once daily for 2 months reduced RANTES production and increased the expression of CCR5 on the surface of CD4 cells of HIV-1-infected persons. Endogenous production of antiviral factors like RANTES may significantly affect HIV-1 replication and the pace of disease progression.

**Selenium**

Selenium is an important part of glutathione peroxidase, which is a very important enzyme in the metabolism of erythrocytes. Selenium plays an important role in the selenoenzyme glutathione peroxidase, which protects cells against free radical damage and oxidative stress [46]. Evidence exists that the utilization of selenium increases in HIV patients, leading to low plasma selenium levels. Low serum selenium level exacerbates the oxidative stress induced by HIV, increasing the risk of mortality and the occurrence of AIDS-related opportunistic infections [30,47]. Previous studies showed an increase in lipid peroxidation (oxidative stress) in HIV-positive individuals with lower plasma concentrations of selenium. Further studies illustrated that supplementation with selenium in HIV-positive patients led to higher glutathione peroxidase levels [48]. These studies do not indicate an improvement in CD4 cells. Meanwhile, Hurwitz and coworkers observed a suppression of the viral load in HIV patients after supplementation with selenium. However, since most studies on selenium are small and observational studies, confounding could be a possible justification for conflicting results [15].

**Zinc**

Zinc is a vital mineral known to affect a multitude of enzymes involved in the synthesis and metabolism of carbohydrates, lipids, proteins, nucleic acids, alcohol and membrane stabilization, etc. Zinc deficiency in humans could be a result of the intake of diets poor in zinc and animal proteins, and rich in inhibitors of zinc absorption such as phytic acid and inorganic calcium salts. Studies indicate an association between zinc deficiency and impaired immune function and increasing infection risk [49,50]. Zinc is involved in the growth, development, and function of neutrophils, macrophages, natural killer cells, and T and B lymphocytes. Studies also show that zinc supplementation can reduce the rate of diarrheal diseases, reduce acute lower respiratory tract infections, and increase CD4 cells [51]. Abrams and coworkers, in a related study, also indicated a positive relationship between CD4 counts and dietary intake of zinc, although no relation between dietary intake of zinc and HIV disease progression was evident [52]. However, the reported relationships of zinc and HIV-related outcomes have not been consistent across studies. A possible explanation for
this contradictory observation could be confounding due to the small size of studies and study design, as already mentioned above.

**Polyphenols**

Polyphenols are a class of bioactive secondary plant substances that are widespread in plants, including sorghum, millet, barley, dry beans, peas, and other legumes; fruits such as apples, blackberries, cranberries, grapes, oranges, pears, plums, raspberries, and strawberries; and vegetables such as cabbage, celery, onion, and parsley. Phenolic compounds are also present in tea and wine. They are known to exert strong antioxidant and anti-inflammatory effects *in vitro* [24,53]. Polyphenols are known to boost immune function in HIV-infected persons by their ability to counteract oxidative stress [54]. Some studies, however, show no effect of polyphenols on CD4 and viral load after supplementation with fruit juices, although plasma antioxidant capacity is increased [55]. Both previous and recent studies indicate increased antioxidant capacity and increased intracellular glutathione in T cells (an indication of reduced intracellular oxidative stress), increased proliferation of CD4 cell count, decreased viral load in the subgroups with advanced immunodeficiency, after treatment with polyphenol-rich antioxidants [26,56]. Despite the positive effects of polyphenols on lymphocyte proliferation and apoptosis, it will be profitable to further research in this area, considering larger sample sizes and longer duration. Also, a variety of polyphenols should be taken into consideration.

**N-Acetyl Cysteine (NAC)**

NAC has been in clinical practice for several years and has been used for the treatment of several disorders, including HIV/AIDS. NAC has been proven beneficial in patients with the autoimmune disorder systemic lupus erythematosus. In these patients, the mechanism underlying NAC activity was ascribed to a blockade of the mammalian target of rapamycin (mTOR) in T lymphocytes. Activation of mTOR occurs upon glutathione (GSH) depletion or after exposure to nitric oxide (NO), which causes mitochondrial hyperpolarization. This can lead to a downregulation of the transcription factor for knead box P3 and, subsequently, to a decline in CD4. NAC blocks the activation of mTOR and increases the number of T lymphocytes [57]. NAC can cross the epithelial cell membrane and sustain the synthesis of glutathione (GSH), which is the ubiquitous source of the thiol pool in the body and an important antioxidant involved in numerous physiological processes. These include detoxification of electrophilic xenobiotic modulation of redox-regulated signal transduction, regulation of immune response, prostaglandin and leukotriene metabolism, antioxidant defense, neurotransmitter signaling, and modulation of cell proliferation [58]. NAC reacts relatively slowly with superoxide, hydrogen peroxide, and peroxynitrite, which casts some doubt on the importance of these reactions under physiological conditions. Finally, Samuni and coworkers made the major conclusion that the antioxidative activity of NAC, as of other thiols, can be attributed to its fast reactions with OH, NO$_2$, CO$_3$ (−), and thyl radicals, as well as to restitution of damaged targets in vital cellular components [59].
FACTORS AFFECTING ANTIOXIDANT LEVEL IN HIV/AIDS PATIENTS

Oppportunistic Condition

Opportunistic conditions such as thrush, vomiting, and tuberculosis often lead to a lack of appetite, which further leads to reduced food intake or malabsorption and consequently micronutrient and antioxidant deficiencies.

Medication Intake

The intake of a series of drugs such as diuretics, laxatives, bile acid, etc., often leads to increased loss of nutrient accompanied by micronutrients such as vitamin A, vitamin B, zinc, etc.

Combination Therapy (HAARTS)

Besides the effects of the medication mentioned above, the therapy (HAARTS) used for HIV/AIDS treatment also affects antioxidant levels. Standard HAARTS is a combination of at least three antiretroviral drugs, mostly made up of one protease inhibitor combined with at least two nucleoside analogue reverse transcriptase inhibitors. ART/HAARTS cannot cure HIV, but its effectiveness in the suppression of plasma HIV-1 RNA to undetectable concentrations has been shown in several clinical trials [60,61]. In the above-mentioned studies, the introduction of HAART resulted to about a 50% decline in AIDS mortality, decreased MTCT rate, as well as reduced incidence rate of opportunistic infections. Although limited studies have found a reduction in antiretroviral concentration due to supplementation with antioxidants, evidence exists that high concentrations of vitamin C may significantly reduce indinavir (a protease inhibitor used in the treatment of HIV patients) plasma concentration [62,63]. Merenstein et al., after supplementing with vitamin C, observed an increased rate of adherence to HAARTS; however, its effects on CD4 and viral load were not ascertaining [40]. Previous research by Ngondi and coworkers, in an attempt to observe the effects of combination therapy on oxidative stress markers, found that the combination treatment therapy I [stavudine (80 mg) + lamivudin (600 mg) + nevirapine (400 mg) + zidovudine (600 mg)] brought about a significant reduction in the plasma concentration of protein sulfhydryl groups, thiobarbituric acid reactive substances, and vitamin C levels compared with therapy II [stavudine (80 mg) + lamivudin (300 mg) + nevirapin (400 mg)] or with a combination therapy III [zidovudine (600 mg) + lamivudin (300 mg) with efavirenz (600 mg)] [64].

Regardless of the type of combination therapy, intake of HAARTS has always been linked with adverse effects such as nausea, vomiting, etc., which indirectly leads to reduced nutrient intake and micronutrient deficiencies (Table 15.3; Ref. [65]).

Dietary Intake

Low dietary intake of micronutrient antioxidants through fruits and vegetables and/or antioxidant supplements will eventually lead to micronutrient deficiency, especially including vitamins A, C, and E; zinc; and selenium.
Micronutrient deficiency is not only limited to poor countries but also extends to high-income nations—especially in people with low economic and educational status. However, micronutrient deficiencies in HIV/AIDS patients are highly prevalent in developing countries, where expensive high-quality animal-derived products are often not affordable to the poor, and associated with important negative biomedical consequences. Furthermore, studies show that vitamin A deficiency has been associated with a lack of knowledge rather than with low income, contrary to iron deficiency whose main cause was mainly economically determined [66].

### TABLE 15.3

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Medication</th>
<th>Adverse Effects</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Zidovudin (Retrovir)</td>
<td>Nausea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Didanosin (Videx)</td>
<td>Nausea, diarrhea, loss of taste</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>141 W94 (Glaxo Wellcome)</td>
<td>Nausea, diarrhea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abacanir (Glaxo Wellcome)</td>
<td>Nausea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Saquinavir (Invirase)</td>
<td>Nausea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indinavir (Crixivan)</td>
<td>Kidney stones (&gt;21 days drinking)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ritonavir (Norvir)</td>
<td>Nausea, diarrhea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Adefovir</td>
<td>Lack of appetite, diarrhea, nausea</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nelfinavir (Viracept)</td>
<td>Diarrhea</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>


### SOCIOECONOMIC STATUS

Micronutrient deficiency is not only limited to poor countries but also extends to high-income nations—especially in people with low economic and educational status. However, micronutrient deficiencies in HIV/AIDS patients are highly prevalent in developing countries, where expensive high-quality animal-derived products are often not affordable to the poor, and associated with important negative biomedical consequences. Furthermore, studies show that vitamin A deficiency has been associated with a lack of knowledge rather than with low income, contrary to iron deficiency whose main cause was mainly economically determined [66].

### ADVERSE EFFECTS OF SUPPLEMENTATION OF ANTIOXIDANTS ON HIV/AIDS PATIENTS

Previous studies have shown positive effects of antioxidant supplements and/or an antioxidant-rich diet on standard biological markers such as CD4 cells and viral load [32,34]. Meanwhile, some studies demonstrate the adverse effect of antioxidant supplementation on the immune system. The supplementation of vitamin E, for example, has been shown to increase the expression of CCR5 (the major cell entry coreceptor for T-cell line–tropic and macrophage-tropic strains of HIV-1), hence an increased infection of CD4 cells and whence an increased viral load [11]. Meanwhile, other researchers suggest that high doses of supplemented antioxidants could cause fluctuating CD4 concentrations, which could indirectly increase the rate of oxidative stress, deteriorating the health condition [20,67].

Besides the adverse effect of supplements on health, they are often very expensive and unaffordable for the majority of HIV/AIDS patients in resource-limited settings [68].
HIV Prevention

Besides the provision of antiretroviral medication and counseling on adequate nutrition, HIV/AIDS prevention is one of the most important aspects of comprehensive care of HIV/AIDS-infected people. Addressing prevention in comprehensive care is vital and will go a long way to reduce the number of HIV new infection rates, as well as delay the onset of AIDS for already infected individuals. Strategies to assure effective prevention of HIV infection among children and adults include providing free HIV testing campaigns, strengthening the capacities of HIV prevention services, providing contraceptives and counseling, and providing HIV care and treatment to infected persons timely. Other prevention strategies include promoting behavior change. Behavior change will help promote safer individual behavior and change in social customs, and consequently healthier forms of sexual behavior, e.g., correct and consistent use of condoms. Also, providing behavior change programs for sex workers and men who have sex with men will help reduce the prevalence of HIV in this group of individuals [69].

REFERENCES


Section IV

Role of Herbs
Role of Herbs and Spices  
*In Health and Longevity and in Disease*

*Krishnapura Srinivasan*

CONTENTS

Introduction ............................................................................................................ 281
Antioxidant Effects of Spices and Herbs ................................................................. 283
  Turmeric (*Curcuma longa*) and Curcumin .......................................................... 284
  Garlic (*Allium sativum*) and Onion (*Allium cepa*) ........................................... 284
  Ginger (*Zingiber officinale*) .............................................................................. 288
  Clove (*Eugenia caryophyllus*) and Eugenol ....................................................... 289
Antiatherogenic and Cardioprotective Effect ...................................................... 290
Cancer-Preventive Property ............................................................................... 291
Amelioration of Oxidative Stress in Diabetes .................................................... 293
Anticataractogenesis .......................................................................................... 294
Neuroprotective Potential .................................................................................. 294
Anti-Inflammatory Effect .................................................................................. 294
Hepatoprotective and Renal-Protective Effects .................................................. 295
Other Nutraceutical Properties of Herbs and Spices ....................................... 296
Conclusions ....................................................................................................... 296
References ......................................................................................................... 297

INTRODUCTION

Herbs and spices have a long history of both culinary and medicinal use. Ayurvedic traditional medicine evolved more than 5000 years ago, and uses herbs and spices for health, including turmeric, basil, mace, cinnamon, and ginger (Govindarajan et al. 2005). Traditionally, the Chinese have integrated food, nutrition, and health, including herbs and spices in specially prepared dishes for both sustenance and for purported health benefits (Bellamy and Pfister 1992). Ginseng and ginkgo biloba are reportedly used to improve stamina and cognitive performance, respectively. Herbs and spices can be regarded as among the first “functional foods.” Asian and Indian diets, which are high in vegetables and fruits, also generally include a large amount and considerable variety of herbs and spices (Sinha et al. 2003). The health-promoting effect of these foods are attributable not only to the general nutritional profile (high in dietary
fiber; low in fat and salt; low energy density; and high in vitamins A, C, and folate) but also to a wide range of nonnutrient bioactives and phytochemicals such as flavonoids and other phenolics, which are found in herbs and spices. Herbs and spices add flavor to foods without salt, thus assisting to meet the reduced daily intake of sodium. Herbs and spices add flavor to foods without fat, thus assisting to meet healthy fat intake. Inclusion of herbs and spices in diets promotes intake of plant-based foods that increase the nutritional quality of the daily diet. Herbs and spices, while providing flavor and aroma to our diets, also contribute diverse bioactives that may have a role in improving human health. Herbs and spices are hence a desirable integral part of daily diet.

Oxidative stress has been implicated in the etiology of cardiovascular disease, type 2 diabetes, cataract, inflammatory diseases, neurodegenerative diseases, cancer, and also in the natural aging process. Reactive oxygen radicals are detrimental to cells since they induce lipid peroxidation in cellular membranes, generating lipid peroxides that cause extensive damage to membranes and membrane-mediated chromosomal damage. Endothelial cell injury is often the first stage of these disorders. The antioxidant enzymes, superoxide dismutase, catalase, and glutathione peroxidase, present intracellularly can directly scavenge these oxidants or prevent their conversion to toxic species. There is a growing interest in natural antioxidants found in plants that hinder the oxidative processes and thereby delay or suppress oxidative stress. A wide variety of phenolic compounds present in spices possess potent antioxidant, anti-inflammatory, antimutagenic, and cancer-preventive activities. This article lists a host of spice compounds that are experimentally evidenced to control cellular oxidative stress both in vitro and in vivo and their beneficial role in preventing or ameliorating oxidative stress–mediated diseases—cardiovascular disease, diabetes, cataract, and cancer.

A wide variety of phenolic compounds and flavonoids present in spices (Figure 16.1) are now experimentally documented to possess potent antioxidant, anti-inflammatory, antimutagenic, and anticarcinogenic activities. The antioxidative and anti-inflammatory properties of these bioactive compounds from spices appear to contribute to their chemopreventive or chemoprotective activity. Cyclooxygenase-2 (COX-2) has been recognized as a molecular target of many chemopreventive as well as anti-inflammatory agents. Studies have shown that COX-2 is regulated by the eukaryotic transcription factor NF-κB. The molecular mechanisms underlying the chemopreventive effects of spice ingredients in terms of their effects on intracellular signaling cascades, particularly those involving NF-κB and mitogen-activated protein kinases, are recently reviewed (Surh 2002). Antioxidants in foods may work in combination to produce synergistic effects. Plant foods, which are rich in flavonoids, have many different antioxidant compounds (Halvorsen et al. 2006). Many epidemiological studies show that consuming a diet high in antioxidant-rich fruits and vegetables is associated with a variety of other health benefits (Cao et al. 1998). Herbs and spices make an important contribution to total daily flavonoid intake (Baghurst 2006). Higher amounts of dietary antioxidants or higher plasma levels of antioxidants are associated with improved heart health and cellular function (Cao et al. 1998).
In the context of the oxidative stress theory of aging and age-related degenerative diseases, dietary phenolic or thiolic antioxidants have been shown to increase the life span of laboratory animals and protect against senescent immune decline. In view of the limitations of the “lipid theory” of atherosclerosis and the current suggestion that free radical–mediated oxidation of cholesterol is a key step in atherogenesis (Duthrie and

### FIGURE 16.1  Spice bioactive compounds.
Brown 1994), the antioxidant compounds present in spices have gained more importance for their possible role in the prevention of atherogenesis. Among the several nutraceutical attributes of common spices, their antioxidant potential has far-reaching health implication. Herbs and spices are undoubtedly a rich source of antioxidants. Culinary spices and herbs may contribute significantly to the total intake of plant antioxidants. Spices and herbs typically are a more concentrated source of dietary antioxidants than many other food groups such as fruits, berries, cereals, and vegetables (Tapsell et al. 2006).

While spices typically are used at relatively low levels in foods, these data indicate that spices may provide a meaningful level of antioxidant activity when consumed at higher levels. The antioxidant capacity of herbs and spices has been evaluated on the basis of the oxygen radical absorbance capacity, which provides a measure of the scavenging capacity of antioxidants against the peroxyl radical, and Trolox, a water-soluble vitamin E analogue, is used as a calibration standard. There are many phytochemicals such as phenolics and organosulfur compounds in spices that possess bioactivity beyond antioxidation. The volatile oil components of thyme (Thymus vulgaris) include carvacrol, borneol, geraniol, and thymol. Thymol is the primary volatile oil constituent of thyme, and its antioxidant protection of cellular membranes is well documented. Thyme also contains a variety of flavonoids, which increase thyme’s antioxidant capacity. The antioxidative effects of spices—turmeric/curcumin (Table 16.1), garlic and onion (Table 16.2), clove/eugenol (Table 16.3), red pepper/capsaicin (Table 16.4), black pepper/piperine (Table 16.4), ginger/gingerol, and fenugreek—and of several herbs, which have been extensively studied and evidenced as potential antioxidants, are specifically discussed.

**Turmeric (Curcuma longa) and Curcumin**

The yellow compound curcumin from the rhizome of Curcuma longa has been claimed to be a potential antioxidant (Table 16.1) and anti-inflammatory agent with bioprotective and chemopreventive properties. Curcumin is shown to be a good inhibitor of lipid peroxidation by several investigators (Reddy and Lokesh 1992). Curcumin has significant abilities to protect against single-strand breaks induced by singlet oxygen, a reactive oxygen species (ROS) with potential genotoxic/mutagenic properties (Subramanian et al. 1994). The ability of curcumin to protect DNA against oxygen free radicals seems to be related to its structure and may at least partly explain its therapeutic and other beneficial effects, including antimutagenic and anticarcinogenic properties (Figure 16.2). The antioxidant properties of turmeric and curcumin are also evidenced in animal studies (Reddy and Lokesh 1994a,b). Curcumin inhibits lipid peroxidation possibly by quenching oxygen free radicals, as inferred by in vitro studies, and by enhancing the activity of endogenous antioxidant enzymes.

**Garlic (Allium sativum) and Onion (Allium cepa)**

Diallyl sulfides and diallyl disulfides, which are active components of garlic, have known antioxidant (Table 16.2), anti-inflammatory, and antimutagenic activities.
TABLE 16.1
Antioxidant Effects of Curcumin in *In Vitro* Systems and in *In Vivo* Situations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>In Vitro/Animal Model</strong></th>
<th><strong>Effect Demonstrated</strong></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>In Vitro Models</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RBC membranes</td>
<td>Curcumin inhibited lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rat liver microsomes</td>
<td>Curcumin inhibited ascorbate–Fe²⁺-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Xanthine–xanthine oxidase system</td>
<td>Curcumin inhibited superoxide anion and OH radical generation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rat macrophages</td>
<td>Curcumin inhibited SO anions, H₂O₂, and nitrite radical production</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plasmid DNA</td>
<td>Curcumin diminished singlet oxygen–induced DNA strand damage</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rat liver microsomes</td>
<td>Curcumin inhibited Fe²⁺-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human LDL</td>
<td>Curcumin inhibited Cu²⁺-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mice</td>
<td>Curcumin lowered lipid peroxidation produced by CCl₄, paraquat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin suppressed CCl₄-induced and ⁶⁰Co-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Turmeric decreased Fe²⁺-induced liver lipid peroxides; enhanced antioxidant enzymes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hypercholesterolemic and high-fat fed rats</td>
<td>Dietary curcumin enhanced antioxidant status of red blood cells, blood, and liver</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Hepatoprotective Effect</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin lowered Fe²⁺-induced liver hepatotoxicity and lipid peroxides</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin reduced alcohol-induced oxidative stress</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin reduced lipid peroxides in chloroquine-induced hepatotoxicity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mice</td>
<td>Curcumin suppressed trichloroethylene-induced oxidative stress</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Cardioprotective Effect</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Humans</td>
<td>Curcuminoids reduced serum lipid peroxides</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Humans</td>
<td><em>Curcuma longa</em> extract decreased blood lipid peroxides and LDL oxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isoproterenol-treated rat</td>
<td>Curcumin countered lipid peroxidation in myocardial infarction</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isoprenaline-treated rat</td>
<td>Oral curcumin reduced oxidative stress during myocardial ischemia</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atherosclerotic rabbits</td>
<td><em>Curcuma longa</em> extract decreased susceptibility LDL to lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cholesterol-fed rabbits</td>
<td><em>Curcuma longa</em> reduced oxidative stress during atherosclerosis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Oxidative Stress in Diabetes</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>STZ-diabetic rats</td>
<td>Dietary curcumin lowered lipid peroxides in plasma and urine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>STZ-diabetic rats</td>
<td>Curcumin countered decreased enzymic/nonenzymic antioxidants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>Antioxidant Effect in Cataract</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin decreased naphthalene-induced opacification of eye lens</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin prevented selenium-induced oxidative damage in eye lens and delayed cataract</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(Continued)
TABLE 16.1 (CONTINUED)
Antioxidant Effects of Curcumin in *In Vitro* Systems and in *In Vivo* Situations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>In Vitro/Animal Model</th>
<th>Effect Demonstrated</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>STZ-diabetic rats</td>
<td>Curcumin/turmeric countered oxidative stress in eye lens and progression of cataract</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin lowered oxidative stress in induced renal toxicity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Curcumin protected lead-induced neurotoxicity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mice</td>
<td>Curcumin increased activities of antioxidant and phase II enzymes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mice</td>
<td>Curcumin showed antitumor effect in skin induced by peroxynitrite</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

TABLE 16.2
Antioxidant Influence of Garlic (*Allium sativum*) and Onion (*Allium cepa*)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>System</th>
<th>Effect Observed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>Garlic (Allium sativum) and Its Constituents</em></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hamster</td>
<td><em>S</em>-Allylcysteine suppressed the incidence of DMBA-induced buccal pouch tumors, decreased lipid peroxidation, and enhanced antioxidant enzymes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Garlic intake reduced the incidence of azoxymethane-induced colon tumor, accompanied by reduction in lipid peroxidation and higher GST activity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td><em>S</em>-Allylcysteine administration inhibited NDA-induced liver cancer and lipid peroxidation with simultaneous increase in antioxidants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Garlic oil increased hepatic antioxidant enzyme activities</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diabetic rats</td>
<td>Garlic oil increased plasma total thiols and decreased lipid peroxides; higher GST activity in erythrocytes and SOD in liver and kidney</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Diabetic rats</td>
<td>Garlic juice countered changes in lipid peroxides and activities of GST</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Atherosclerotic patients</td>
<td>Garlic extract lowered plasma and erythrocyte malondialdehyde levels</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hypercholesterolemic subjects</td>
<td>Garlic extract increased blood antioxidant oxidant status, superoxide radical scavenger activity, and decreased lipid peroxides</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human subjects</td>
<td>Garlic supplementation increased resistance of LDL to oxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rat erythrocytes</td>
<td>AGE prevented decrease of RBC deformability induced by lipid peroxidation and reduced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human LDL</td>
<td>Garlic compounds inhibited superoxide production; suppressed copper-induced LDL oxidation</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
TABLE 16.2 (CONTINUED)

Antioxidant Influence of Garlic (Allium sativum) and Onion (Allium cepa)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>System</th>
<th>Effect Observed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Onion (Allium cepa) and Its Constituents</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nicotine-injected rats</td>
<td>Onion oil showed increased resistance to lipid peroxidation and increased tissue antioxidants and antioxidant enzymes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alloxan diabetic rats</td>
<td>S-Methyl cysteine sulfoxide lowered levels of malondialdehyde, hydroperoxide, and conjugated dienes in tissues</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Alloxan-diabetic rats</td>
<td>Onion juice countered changes in lipid peroxides and activities of GST in plasma and tissues</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats fed with high-fat/high-sucrose diet</td>
<td>Onion reduced superoxide generation and increased NO availability in the aorta</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human volunteers</td>
<td>Ingestion of onions resulted in increased total antioxidant capacity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human PMNL cells</td>
<td>Aqueous extract of onion inhibited 5’-lipoxygenase in vitro</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Note: DMBA, dimethyl benzanthracene; GST, glutathione-S-transferase; NDA, N-nitroso diethylamine; SOD, superoxide dismutase; LDL, low-density lipoprotein; AGE, advance glycation endproducts; PMNL, polymorphonuclear leukocyte.

TABLE 16.3

Antioxidant Influence of Eugenol in In Vitro Systems and In Vivo Studies

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Animal Model/In Vitro System</th>
<th>Effect Demonstrated</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Human RBC</td>
<td>Eugenol inhibited Cu(^{2+})-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rat liver microsomes</td>
<td>Eugenol inhibited ascorbate–Fe(^{2+})-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ROS generation in the xanthine–xanthine oxidase system</td>
<td>Eugenol inhibited the generation of reactive oxygen species, and prevented the oxidation of Fe(^{2+}) in Fenton reaction that generates OH radicals.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peroxynitrite-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
<td>Eugenol decreased nitrotyrosine formation and lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human PMNL cells</td>
<td>Eugenol inhibited 5-lipoxygenase and formation of leukotrienes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>In vitro study</td>
<td>Eugenol inhibited copper-induced oxidation of LDL</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Animal Models

| Rats fed unsaturated fat | Dietary eugenol decreased serum and liver lipid peroxides, enhanced activities of antioxidant enzymes, and lowered lipid peroxides in liver |
| 7,12-Dimethyl benz(α)anthracene applied mice | Eugenol inhibited the number of tumors due to radical scavenging activity |
| CCl\(_4\)-administered rat | Eugenol pretreatment countered hepatotoxicity |
| Rats | Eugenol lowered Fe\(^{2+}\)-induced lipid peroxides; lowered hepatotoxicity |
| Swiss mice | Oral eugenol increased glutathione, GSH-transferase in the intestine |

Eugenol protected against oxidative stress caused by γ-radiation.
Antioxidants in Health and Disease

Onion is a major source of flavonoids, especially the two quercetin glycosides, quercetin 4′-O-β-glucoside and quercetin 3,4′-O-β-diglucosides, which are recognized as bioactive substances. The antioxidant effect of onion oil and garlic oil (100 mg/kg for 21 days) has been reported on nicotine-induced lipid peroxidation in rat tissues (Helen et al. 1999), as inferred by countering the increased lipid peroxides in the liver, lungs, heart, and kidney tissues of nicotine-treated rats and restoration of the activities of antioxidant enzymes, which decreased in nicotine-treated rats.

Ginger (Zingiber officinale)

The antioxidant effect of the total phenols of ginger extract has been established in vitro (Stoilova et al. 2007). Gingerol exhibited dose-dependent inhibition of nitric oxide production and significant reduction of inducible nitric oxide synthase in lipopolysaccharide-stimulated macrophages, thus suggesting the protective ability of this

---

### TABLE 16.4
Antioxidant Influence of Capsaicin of Red Pepper (*Capsicum annuum*) and Piperine of Black Pepper (*Piper nigrum*)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Animal Model</th>
<th>Effect Demonstrated</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Capsaicin of Red Pepper</strong></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human RBC</td>
<td>Capsaicin inhibited lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rat liver microsomes</td>
<td>Capsaicin inhibited ascorbate–Fe³⁺-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rat liver mitochondria</td>
<td>Capsaicin inhibited lipid peroxidation and scavenging of DPPH radicals</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human LDL</td>
<td>Capsaicin inhibited Cu²⁺-induced lipid peroxidation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Human PMNL cells</td>
<td>Capsaicin inhibited 5′-lipoxygenase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rats</td>
<td>Capsaicin reduced oxidative stress in the liver, lung, kidney, and muscle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>High-fat-fed rats and hypercholesterolemic rats</td>
<td>Capsaicin enhanced antioxidant status of red blood cells, blood, and liver</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| **Piperine of Black Pepper**      |                                                                                     |
| Rat liver                         | Piperine inhibited ascorbate–Fe³⁺-induced lipid peroxidation                       |
| *In vitro*                        | Piperine inhibited/quenched superoxides and hydroxyl radicals, and inhibited lipid peroxidation |
| *In vitro*                        | Black pepper and piperine inhibited human PMNL 5′-lipoxygenase                      |
| Human LDL                         | Piperine protected Cu²⁺-induced lipid peroxidation of human LDL                    |
| Mice                              | Piperine decreased mitochondrial lipid peroxidation and augmented antioxidant defense during benzo(α)pyrene-induced lung carcinogenesis |
| High-fat-fed rats                 | Black pepper/piperine reduced oxidative stress by lowering lipid peroxidation, and restored the activities of antioxidant enzymes and GSH |
| Rats                              | Piperine protected against carcinogen-induced oxidative stress in the intestinal lumen |
| Streptozotocin-diabetic rats       | Piperine partially protected against diabetes-induced oxidative stress             |

---

Ginger (Zingiber officinale)

The antioxidant effect of the total phenols of ginger extract has been established in vitro (Stoilova et al. 2007). Gingerol exhibited dose-dependent inhibition of nitric oxide production and significant reduction of inducible nitric oxide synthase in lipopolysaccharide-stimulated macrophages, thus suggesting the protective ability of this
compound against peroxynitrite-mediated damage (Ippoushi et al. 2003). Capsaicin (trans-8-methyl-N-vanillyl-6-nonenamide) is the major pungent and irritating ingredient of red pepper. The antioxidant property of capsaicin in terms of inhibiting lipid peroxidation in human erythrocyte membranes and in rat liver microsomes is documented (Reddy and Lokesh 1992).

**Clove (Eugenia Caryophyllus) and Eugenol**

The antioxidant potency of eugenol, the principal flavor compound of clove (Table 16.3), is recognized by the inhibition of the generation of ROS in model systems, the inhibition of copper-induced lipid peroxidation in human erythrocyte membranes (Reddy and Lokesh 1994b), and carbon tetrachloride–induced lipid peroxidation (Nagashima 1989). Inducible COX-2 has been implicated in the processes of inflammation and carcinogenesis. Eugenol was found to potently inhibit the prostaglandin E_2_ production in lipopolysaccharide-activated mouse macrophages (Kim et al. 2003), thus suggesting that eugenol might be a plausible COX-2 inhibitor, and thus acts as an anti-inflammatory or cancer chemopreventive agent. Eugenol has been investigated for its effects on the cytotoxicity and induction of apoptosis. Eugenol-treated HL-60 cells displayed features of apoptosis, including DNA fragmentation, and demonstrated that ROS plays a critical role in eugenol-induced apoptosis, and this is a possible mechanism of the anticancer effect of eugenol. The antioxidant properties of eugenol are documented in animal studies, where dietary eugenol (0.05%) significantly lowered lipid peroxidation in the serum and liver of rats and was associated with enhanced activities of antioxidant enzymes—superoxide dismutase, catalase, glutathione peroxidase, and glutathione S-transferase (Reddy and Lokesh 1996).
ANTIOXIDANTS IN HEALTH AND DISEASE

Generally, the use of herbs and spices will considerably displace fats and salt in the diet and, hence, is likely to reduce cardiovascular risk. Consumption of garlic or garlic oil has been associated with a reduction in total/low-density lipoprotein (LDL) cholesterol and triglyceride levels (Steiner et al. 1996). Additionally, garlic extracts have been shown to have anticoagulant properties and to cause modest reductions in blood pressure. Ingestion of garlic extract (1 mL/kg daily for 6 months) by atherosclerotic patients led to significantly lowered plasma and erythrocyte lipid peroxide levels (Durak et al. 2004). The results also demonstrated amelioration of oxidative stress by the ingestion of garlic extract. Thus, it is possible that reduced peroxidation processes may play a part in some of the beneficial effects of garlic in atherosclerotic diseases.

While hypercholesterolemia is considered a major risk factor for atherosclerosis, and lowering of cholesterol can significantly reduce risk for cardiovascular diseases, oxidation of LDL has been recognized to play an important role in the initiation and progression of atherosclerosis. Several garlic compounds can effectively suppress LDL oxidation in vitro (Lau 2001). Short-term supplementation of garlic in human subjects has demonstrated an increased resistance of LDL to oxidation; suppressed LDL oxidation may be one of the powerful mechanisms accounting for the antiatherosclerotic properties of garlic.

Intake of lemongrass (Cymbopogon citrates) oil (140 mg/day) by hypercholesterolemic subjects produced a drop in cholesterol concentrations up to 38 mg/dL (Huang et al. 1994). There are a large number of studies concerning the potential cardiovascular health benefits of antioxidants such as flavonoids of tea (Carnesecchi et al. 2001). Herbs and spices make an important contribution to total daily flavonoid intake. Basil (Ocimum basilicum) is a very good source of β-carotene (provitamin A), a powerful antioxidant that not only protects epithelial cells from free radical damage but also helps prevent free radicals from oxidizing cholesterol in the bloodstream leading to arteriosclerosis. Spice components such as zingiber, capsaicin, and curcumin have been associated with a decrease in LDL cholesterol and an increase in high-density lipoprotein (HDL) cholesterol levels in rat studies (Lantry et al. 1997).

Daily intake of curcuminoids (0.5 g) by healthy human volunteers produced a 33% reduction in blood lipid peroxide levels (Soni and Kuttan 1992). Curcumin administration (500 mg/day for 7 days) was accompanied by an increase in HDL cholesterol and a decrease in total serum cholesterol (Quiles et al. 2002). Reduction in serum lipid peroxides and cholesterol suggests the potential of curcumin as a preventive substance against arterial diseases. Supplementation with turmeric reduced oxidative stress (reduced plasma lipid peroxides and restored α-tocopherol and coenzyme-Q levels) and attenuated the development of fatty streaks in rabbits fed on a high-cholesterol diet (Quiles et al. 2002).

Oxidation of LDL plays an important role in the development of atherosclerosis. Turmeric extract decreased the susceptibility of LDL to lipid peroxidation in atherosclerotic rabbits, thus suggesting its value in the management of cardiovascular disease (Ramirez-Tortosa et al. 1999). In healthy humans, the daily intake of 200 mg turmeric extract resulted in a decrease in blood lipid peroxides as well as in HDL
Role of Herbs and Spices

and LDL lipid peroxidation (Miquel et al. 2002). Dietary curcumin and capsaicin significantly inhibited the in vivo iron-induced LDL oxidation in rats and copper-induced oxidation of LDL in vitro (Manjunatha and Srinivasan 2006). Piperine of black pepper (Piper nigrum) has been demonstrated in in vitro experiments to protect against oxidative damage by inhibiting or quenching free radicals and ROS, and inhibit lipid peroxidation (Mittal and Gupta 2000). Piperine is shown to be an effective antioxidant and offer protection against oxidation of human LDL, as evaluated by copper ion–induced lipid peroxidation of human LDL (Naidu and Thippeswamy 2002) (Table 16.4).

Orally administered curcumin effectively countered the changes in the endogenous antioxidant molecules and enzymes accompanying myocardial infarction induced by iso-proterenol in rats (Nirmala and Puvanakrishnan 1996). Curcumin treatment was found to protect the rat myocardium against ischemic insult, and the protective effect could be attributed to its antioxidant properties as well as its inhibitory effects on xanthine dehydrogenase–xanthine oxidase conversion and resultant superoxide anion production (Manikandan et al. 2004).

CANCER-PREVENTIVE PROPERTY

Animal and in vitro studies suggest that certain herbs help protect against oxidative stress and inflammation, both of which are risk factors for cancer initiation and promotion (Surh 1999). Anti-inflammatory compounds of spices—curcumin, gingerol, and capsaicin—appear to act by inhibiting one or more steps in the pro-inflammatory pathway. The natural anti-inflammatory compounds quercetin, curcumin, and silymarin have been shown to be as effective as indomethacin, a nonsteroidal anti-inflammatory drug, in inhibiting the formation of aberrant crypt foci in the rat (Volate et al. 2005). Herbs and spices with known anticarcinogenic properties in animal models of carcinogenesis include tumeric, garlic, ginger, basil, rosemary, mint, and lemongrass (Table 16.5).

Methanol extract of the leaves of rosemary (Rosmarinus officinalis) and its constituent carnosol (a phenolic diterpene) can inhibit tumor promotion in mouse skin (Elson et al. 1989). Geraniol (an acyclic monoterpene alcohol) of Cymbopogon citratus (lemon grass) has been shown to inhibit growth and polyamine biosynthesis in human colon cancer cells (Hertog et al. 1993). Perillyl alcohol (a monoterpene) found in lavender and mint has been shown to reduce tumor incidence and tumor multiplicity in a mouse lung tumor (Gujaral et al. 1978). Aqueous extract of spearmint as drinking fluid during treatment with a colon carcinogen showed lower numbers of colonic aberrant crypt foci in rats (Yu et al. 2004). Myristicin of parsley has been shown to inhibit tumor multiplicity in a rodent lung cancer model and induce glutathione S-transferase in the liver and small intestinal mucosa (Zheng et al. 1992).

Turmeric or its constituent curcumin is found to have chemopreventive effects against cancers of the skin, forestomach, liver, and colon, and oral cancer in mice (Chuang et al. 2000; Volate et al. 2005). The effect of dietary curcumin on the activities of antioxidant and phase II–metabolizing enzymes involved in detoxification and production of ROS has been evaluated in mice (Srinivasan 2014). Induction of detoxifying enzymes by curcumin suggests the potential of this compound as a
protective agent against chemical carcinogenesis and other forms of electrophilic toxicity. *In vitro* and animal cancer models have shown that diallyl sulfide of garlic is effective in the detoxification of carcinogens through its effects on phase I and phase II enzymes (Wargovich et al. 2001).

The incidence of cancer at different sites may be related to oxidative damage to host genome by genotoxicants. Curcumin, which possesses antimutagenic property, appears to be a promising chemopreventive agent. The antioxidant properties of curcumin explain the diverse pharmacological potential of this phytochemical or the parent spice, turmeric (Figure 16.2). The antioxidant property is also implicated in the cancer chemopreventive effects of curcumin against the induction of tumors in various target organs. S-Allylcysteine of garlic modulated 7,12-dimethyl-benz[\(\alpha\)] anthracene-induced buccal pouch carcinogenesis by decreasing the susceptibility of the buccal pouch to lipid peroxidation in Syrian hamsters, while simultaneously enhancing activities of antioxidant enzymes in the liver and circulation (Balasenthil et al. 2001). Dietary garlic (2%) has a protective effect on azoxymethane-induced colon carcinogenesis in Sprague–Dawley rats, which is mediated by modulation of oxidative stress during carcinogenesis (Sengupta et al. 2003). The phenolic compounds 6-gingerol and 6-paradol present in ginger also have antitumor promotional and antiproliferative effects. The chemopreventive and chemoprotective effects exerted by 6-gingerol are often associated with their antioxidative and anti-inflammatory activities.

---

**TABLE 16.5**

**Potential Health Effects of Various Culinary Herbs Indicated in Scientific Literature**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Herb</th>
<th>Bioactive Compound/ Tested Sample</th>
<th>Perceived Health Effects</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Basil (<em>Ocimum basilicum</em>)</td>
<td>Eugenol and flavonoids</td>
<td>Anti-inflammation in cancer development; inhibition of lipid peroxidation; antimicrobial effects</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ginseng</td>
<td>Herb extract</td>
<td>Hypoglycemic effect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lemongrass (<em>Cymbopogon citratus</em>)</td>
<td>Citral, limonene</td>
<td>Anti-inflammation and inhibition of polyamine biosynthesis in human colon cancer development</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oregano (<em>Pomiminta longiflora</em>)</td>
<td>Herb extract</td>
<td>Antimicrobial effects</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Parsley (<em>Petroselinum crispum</em>)</td>
<td>Myristicin/herb extract</td>
<td>Inhibition of lung carcinogenesis; antimicrobial effects</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rosemary (<em>Rosmarinus officinalis</em>)</td>
<td>Flavonoids, rosmarinate</td>
<td>Inhibition of carcinogenesis; anti-inflammation in cancer development</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sage (<em>Salvia officinalis</em>)</td>
<td>Essential oil</td>
<td>Inhibition of bone resorption; improvement in memory retention</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Spearmint (<em>Mentha spicata</em>)</td>
<td>Herb extract</td>
<td>Antimutagenic effect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thyme (<em>Thymus vulgaris</em>)</td>
<td>Thymol</td>
<td>Inhibition of bone resorption; antimicrobial effects</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Eugenol pretreatment was found to inhibit the number of tumors produced by the application of 7,12-dimethyl benz(α)-anthracene as initiator and croton oil as promoter in mice (Sukumaran et al. 1994), wherein eugenol inhibited superoxide formation and lipid peroxidation, suggesting that the radical scavenging activity may be responsible for its chemopreventive action. The ability of piperine to inhibit or reduce the oxidative changes induced by chemical carcinogens has been studied in a rat intestinal model (Khajuria et al. 1998). Carcinogenesis was initiated in intestinal lumen of rats with 7,12-dimethyl benzanthracene, dimethyl aminomethyl azobenzene, and 3-methyl cholanthrone. A protective role of piperine against the oxidative alterations by the carcinogen was indicated by the observed inhibition of lipid peroxides, a significant increase in the glutathione levels, and restoration in the activity of marker enzymes. Oral supplementation of piperine (50 mg/kg) effectively suppressed experimental lung carcinogenesis by B(α)P in mice, as revealed by a decrease in the extent of mitochondrial lipid peroxidation and concomitant increase in the activities of enzymatic antioxidant levels (Selvendiran et al. 2004). This suggests that piperine may extend its chemopreventive effect by modulating lipid peroxidation and augmenting the antioxidant defense system.

AMELIORATION OF OXIDATIVE STRESS IN DIABETES

Increasing evidence in both experimental and clinical studies suggests that oxidative stress plays a major role in the pathogenesis of diabetes mellitus. Streptozotocin-induced diabetic rats maintained on curcumin diet showed lowered lipid peroxidation in plasma and urine (Babu and Srinivasan 1995). Oral administration of curcumin (10 or 30 mg/kg) for 45 days ameliorated hyperglycemia, along with near-normalization of the antioxidant enzyme activities and the levels of lipid peroxidative markers (Mahesh et al. 2005). The efficacy of piperine treatment (10 mg/kg/day for 14 days) in diabetes-induced oxidative stress in rats has been reported (Rauscher et al. 2000). Treatment with piperine reversed the disturbances in antioxidant defense in nonhepatic tissues.

Fenugreek (*Trigonella foenum-graecum*) seed is reported to counter the increased lipid peroxidation and alterations in the content of circulating antioxidant molecules—glutathione, β-carotene, and α-tocopherol—in alloxan-induced diabetic rats (Ravikumar and Anuradha 1999). Oxygen free radicals are presumably responsible for the severity and complications of diabetes. Fenugreek administration to diabetic animals reversed the disturbed antioxidant levels and peroxidative damage, thus suggesting that fenugreek seeds have a beneficial antioxidant property that can be exploited for the treatment/reversal of the complications of diabetes (Genet et al. 2002).

Garlic oil (10 mg/kg for 15 days) is shown to effectively normalize the impaired antioxidant status (circulatory total thiols and ceruloplasmin), and activities of glutathione S-transferase and superoxide dismutase in the liver and kidney in streptozotocin-induced diabetes (Anwar and Meki 2003). The effects of this antioxidant may be useful in delaying the complicated effects of diabetes such as retinopathy, nephropathy, and neuropathy due to imbalance between free radicals and antioxidant systems.
ANTICATARACTOGENESIS

Oxidative stress has been implicated in cataractogenesis. Dietary curcumin showed a preventive role on naphthalene-induced opacification of rat lens (Pandya et al. 2000). This study demonstrated that curcumin attenuates the apoptotic effect of naphthalene in rat lens. Wistar rat pups treated with curcumin being administered with selenium showed no opacities in the lens (Padmaja and Raju 2004). Curcumin cotreatment seemed to prevent oxidative damage and delay the development of cataract induced by selenium. Dietary curcumin (0.002% and 0.01%) and turmeric (0.5%) were found to be effective against the development of diabetic cataract in streptozotocin-induced diabetic rats (Suryanarayana et al. 2005). Curcumin and turmeric supplements delayed the progression and maturation of cataract by countering the hyperglycemia-induced oxidative stress, as indicated by reversal of changes with respect to lipid peroxidation, glutathione, protein carbonyl content, and activities of antioxidant enzymes. Aggregation and insolubilization of lens proteins due to hyperglycemia was prevented by turmeric and curcumin. Dietary curcumin (0.002%) was effective against the onset and maturation of galactose-induced cataract in rats via exerting antioxidant and antiglycating effects, as it inhibited lipid peroxidation and protein aggregation (Suryanarayana et al. 2003).

NEUROPROTECTIVE POTENTIAL

Herbs and spices, by contributing antioxidants, may influence age-related cognitive decline (Rahman 2003). Free radical–induced neuronal damage is implicated in cerebral ischemia reperfusion (IR) injury, and antioxidants are reported to have neuroprotective activity. The neuroprotective potential of curcumin (300 mg/kg) investigated in cerebral ischemia reperfusion injury observed in cerebral ischemia is mediated through its antioxidant activity by preventing the elevation in lipid peroxidation (Thiyagarajan and Sharma 2004). The protective effect of curcumin against lead-induced neurotoxicity has been evidenced in rats, which was accompanied by a reversal of the decrease in glutathione levels, superoxide dismutase, and catalase activities in the brain regions (Shukla et al. 2003).

ANTI-INFLAMMATORY EFFECT

Lipid peroxides play a crucial role in arthritis and other inflammatory diseases. Herbs and spices are useful in the treatment of symptomatic osteoarthritis owing to their ability to reduce inflammation (Grzanna et al. 2005). Turmeric is the earliest anti-inflammatory drug known in the indigenous system of medicine in India. Turmeric extract, curcuminoids, and volatile oil of turmeric have been found to be effective as anti-inflammatory agents in several studies involving mice, rats, and rabbits. The efficacy of curcuminoids was also established in experimental inflammation in mice and rats (Srimal 1997). Both in vitro and in vivo animal studies have documented the anti-inflammatory potential of the spice principles curcumin (of turmeric), capsaicin (of red pepper), and eugenol (of clove). Animal studies have revealed that curcumin and capsaicin also lower the incidence and severity of arthritis and also delay the onset of adjuvant-induced arthritis.
The anti-inflammatory effect of curcumin (400 mg) in patients undergoing surgery for hernia/hydrocele was found to be comparable to that of phenylbutazone (100 mg) (Satoskar et al. 1986). In rheumatoid arthritis patients, administration of curcumin produced significant improvement similar to phenylbutazone (Deodhar et al. 1980). Capsaicin has received considerable attention as a pain reliever. In patients with osteoarthritis and rheumatoid arthritis, topical application of creams containing capsaicin was an effective alternative to analgesics employed in systemic medications, which are often associated with potential adverse effects (McCarthy and McCarthy 1991). There is also evidence for the benefit of ginger in ameliorating arthritic knee pain, although the effectiveness is lesser than that of ibuprofen. Ginger contains pungent ingredients such as 6-gingerol and 6-paradol, which possess anti-inflammatory properties (Surh 1999). Human trial has proven the efficacy of ginger extract in ameliorating arthritic knee pain. Ginger doses of 0.5–1.0 g/day have been found to be efficacious in osteoarthritis and rheumatoid arthritis.

Natural anti-inflammatory compounds of spices (curcumin, capsaicin, gingerol) appear to operate by inhibiting one or more of the steps linking pro-inflammatory stimuli with COX activation, such as the blocking by curcumin of NF-κB translocation into the nucleus. It has been shown recently that natural anti-inflammatory compounds such as curcumin were as effective as indomethacin (a nonsteroidal anti-inflammatory drug). The presence of eugenol in basil’s (*Ocimum basilicum*) volatile oils, which is known to inhibit the activity of COX-2, makes basil an anti-inflammatory herb that can provide healing benefits along with symptomatic relief for individuals with inflammatory problems like rheumatoid arthritis or inflammatory bowel conditions.

**HEPATOPROTECTIVE AND RENAL-PROTECTIVE EFFECTS**

Oral (30 mg/kg for 10 days) dietary administration of curcumin to Wistar rats reduced the iron-induced hepatic damage by lowering lipid peroxidation (Reddy and Lokesh 1996). Increasing evidence demonstrates that oxidative stress plays an important etiologic role in the development of alcoholic liver disease. The protective role of curcumin on alcohol- and thermally oxidized sunflower oil (δPUFA)–induced oxidative stress was observed in Wistar rats; curcumin exerts its protective effect by decreasing the lipid peroxidation and improving antioxidant status (Rukkumani et al. 2004).

Eugenol (5 or 25 mg/kg) has been shown to have a protective effect against carbon tetrachloride–induced hepatotoxicity (Nagababu et al. 1995). Oral administration of eugenol (100 mg/kg for 10 days) lowered the liver and serum lipid peroxide levels, serum marker enzymes of hepatic damage, enhanced by intraperitoneal injection of iron, indicating that eugenol reduces the iron-induced hepatic damage by lowering lipid peroxidation (Reddy and Lokesh 1996). Furthermore, the inactivation of the drug-metabolizing system by carbon tetrachloride was countered by eugenol, suggesting that eugenol might act as an antioxidant and inducer of phase II and phase I enzymes (Kumaravelu et al. 1995). The beneficial effect of curcumin in preventing the acute renal failure and related oxidative stress caused by chronic administration of cyclosporine has been demonstrated in rats (Tirkey et al. 2005).
OTHER NUTRACEUTICAL PROPERTIES OF HERBS AND SPICES

Among the other nutraceutical properties of spices, which are independent of their antioxidant influence, are anticholelithogenic effect, digestive stimulant action, and antimicrobial activity. A persistent high-cholesterol diet leads to cholesterol saturation in bile, resulting in the formation of cholesterol gallstones in the gallbladder. The antilithogenic potential of hypocholesterolemic spices—red pepper, turmeric, garlic, onion, and fenugreek seeds—has been evidenced in animal studies (Srinivasan 2013). The antilithogenicity of these spices is considered to be due to lowering of cholesterol concentration and enhancing the bile acid concentration, both of which contribute to lowering of cholesterol saturation index and hence its crystallization. Several spices such as cumin, coriander, ajowan, fennel, mint, and garlic are common remedies used in traditional medicine to cure digestive disorders. Spices exert digestive stimulatory effects via stimulation of bile acid secretion and stimulation of the production and secretion of digestive enzymes from pancreas (Platel and Srinivasan 2004). Antimicrobial activity has been demonstrated in vitro for several herbs and spices and essential oils from basil, thyme, oregano, parsley, cilantro, and cinnamon (Cowan 1999). Beneficial antimicrobial phytochemicals include polyphenols, terpenoids and essential oils, alkaloids, and lectins. Polyphenols are capable of forming an irreversible complex with nucleophilic amino acids in protein, leading to their inactivation and therefore loss of function. Polyphenols have been reported to disrupt microbial membranes and inactivate microbial enzymes.

CONCLUSIONS

Oxidative stress is clearly implicated in a wide range of disease processes, including cardiovascular disease, cancer, inflammatory diseases, neurodegenerative diseases, cataract, etc. Herbs and spices, which are normal ingredients of the human diet, are now known to exert health-beneficial antioxidant effects in mammalian systems and in several model systems through their bioactive compounds. The antioxidant properties of herbs and spices are of particular interest in view of the impact of oxidative modification of LDL in the development of atherosclerosis, and suppression of oxidative stress and inflammation in their cancer-preventive role, since both oxidative stress and inflammation are a risk factor for cancer initiation and promotion. The antioxidant potential of spices has far-reaching health implication. The studies to this effect are exhaustive, and experimental evidences are plenty particularly in the case of curcumin of turmeric and eugenol of clove. All the available information essentially endorses that using antioxidant spices at high levels is beneficial to the markers of health, although it is less clearly evident that these are actually beneficial in preventing or protecting oxidative stress–mediated diseases. By virtue of antioxidant activity, these spice bioactive compounds are extrapolated to be anti-inflammatory, antimitogenic and cancer-preventive, antiatherogenic and cardioprotective, hepatoprotective, neuroprotective, anticataractogenic, etc. What essentially remains is integrating this knowledge to ascertain whether such health beneficial effects can be observed in humans.
Although the effective dose of these dietary spices evidenced in animal studies to produce the desired antioxidant influence far exceeds their normal levels encountered in our daily diet, the effectiveness of lower doses of these spices cannot be ruled out. There is also the possibility of deriving the beneficial effect by chronic consumption of these spices in our daily diet. In view of the antioxidant potential of a number of herbs and spices with far-reaching health implication, these food adjuncts deserve to be considered as natural and necessary components of our daily nutrition. Use of spices and herbs in the diet ensures adequate intake of both essential nutrients and health-promoting bioactives in the food supply. Herbs and spices can add substantial variety to the nutrients and bioactives available in the diet. Although the potential health effects of herbs and spices are reported abundantly in the scientific literature, it should be noted that human data of variable quality are limited; vast research literature from *in vitro* and *in vivo* studies suggests that specific herbs and spices may confer unique health benefits. The use of herbs and spices as source of antioxidants to combat oxidative stress warrants further attention in terms of validating the antioxidant capacity and testing their effects on markers of oxidation in clinical trials that are aiming to establish antioxidants as mediators of disease prevention.

**REFERENCES**


Antioxidants in Health and Disease


Index

Page numbers followed by f and t indicate figures and tables, respectively.

A
Abacanir, 273t
Academy of Nutrition and Dietetics, 77
1-Acetoxy-pinoresinol, 39, 40
Achillea millefolium, 37
Achillea spp., 30, 37
Acute effects of smoking (ACS), 88–89
Acyclic polysulfides, 35
Acy1-CoA oxidase, 7
Adefovir, 273t
Adenomatous polyposis coli (Apc) gene, 186
Adequate intake (AI) recommendations, for breast cancer, 189, 189t
Adipokines, 234
Adulthood, dietary antioxidants in, 71–76
bioavailability of natural antioxidants and effect on biomarkers, 73–75, 74t
disease prevention, 75
needs and importance, 71–73
supplements and health, 75–76, 76t
Age-related macular degeneration (AMD), 78
Aging, OS theory, 283
Aglycones, 24, 26, 27, 34, 40
Akinesia, 203
Alcohols
extraction of gluten, 216
heavy drinking, 168
moderate consumption, 168
OS and, 48
α-Lipoic acid (ALA), in obesity, 241
Alkoxyls, 86
Allergies, antioxidants in, 59
Allicin, 35
S-allyl cysteine and, 283f
Alliin, 35
Allium cepa, antioxidant effects, 284, 286t–287t, 288
Allium sativum, 38, 283f
antioxidant effects, 284, 286t–287t, 288
Allium species, 30
Allopurinol, 109
S-Allylcysteine, 292
S-Allyl-1-cysteine sulfoxide, 35
Almonds, 179
Alpha-tocopherol beta-carotene cancer (ATBC), 99, 139, 174
Alzheimer’s disease (AD), 77–79, 204–205
Amelioration, of OS in diabetes, 293
American Heart Association (AHA), 117, 242
American Institute for Cancer Research, 180
American Psychiatric Association (APA), 61
5-Aminosalicylic acid, 225
Amyloid β, 78–79
Anemia, 58
Anorexia, 267
Anthocyanidines, 27, 94
Anthocyanins, 27, 31, 33, 34, 35, 36, 73 blueberries and, 239
Antiiatherogenic effect, of herbs and spices, 290–291
Anticataractogenesis, 294
Anticlotting properties, of garlic, 290
Anti-inflammatory effect, spices and herbs, 294–295
Anti-inflammatory properties, of antioxidants, 257–258
Antilipogenic effects, of EGCG, 238
Antilithogenicity, of spices, 296
Antimitogenic effects, of EGCG, 238
Antioxidant(s)
activity, substances and compounds with, 18t–19t
anti-inflammatory properties, 257–258
in asthma and allergies, 59
behavioral alterations, 60–62
brain development and, 60–61
cancer chemopreventive effects, 291–293
celiac disease and, 217, 218–220. See also Celiac disease
CHD and stroke, 120–143. See also Coronary heart disease (CHD); Stroke(s)
in children’s growth and development, 53–64. See also Children’s growth and development
cognitive function, 60–62
defective, defense in obesity, 235–236, 236f
deficiency diseases treatment, 58–59
defined, 24, 176
diabetes and, 152–156. See also Diabetes dietary
in adulthood, 71–76. See also Adulthood, dietary antioxidants in
cancer, 174

301
defined, 167
take, smoking and, 89–99. See also Smoking
dietary antioxidants, interaction, 95 minerals and trace elements, 94–95. See also Minerals; Trace elements natural antioxidants, case, 95–98. See also Natural antioxidants in supplementation studies, 98–99. See also Supplementation, studies vitamins, 91–94. See also Vitamins, smoking and modulation of immune response by, 249–258. See also Modulation of immune response natural. See Natural antioxidants in neurodegeneration, 199–207. See also Neurodegeneration obesity and, 59–60 inflammation, 233–243. See also Obesity in pregnancy, 47–51. See also Pregnancy supplementation in cancers, 174–177, 178t dilemma of, 177, 178–179 Antioxidant capacity (AC), 176 Antioxidant effects, of herbs and spices, 283–289 clove (Eugenia caryophyllus) and eugenol, 284, 287t, 289 garlic (Allium sativum) and onion (Allium cepa), 284, 286t–287t, 288 ginger (Zingiber officinale), 284, 288, 289 red pepper (Capsicum annuum) and black pepper (Piper nigrum), 284, 288t turmeric (Curcuma longa) and curcumin, 284, 285t–286t, 289f Antioxidant level, factors affecting in HIV/AIDS patients, 272–273 combination therapy (HAARTs), 272, 273t medication intake, 272 opportunistic conditions, 272 socioeconomic status, 273 Antioxidative stress, 254 Anxiety, 62 Apigenin, 36, 37, 39, 40 Apigenin-acetyl-apiosylglucoside, 35 Apigenin-7-apiosylglucoside, 35 Apiin, 35 Apocarotenoids, 28 ApoE4 gene, 204 Apples, 31, 32t, 33, 177 Apricots, 31, 32t, 179 carotenoids in, 28 Aqueous cigarette tar (ACT), 84, 86 Arbutus unedo, 33 L-arginine, 251 Arginine, NO from, 13–14 Aromatic plants, 30 Artemisia dracunculus, 37 Arteriosclerosis, 77–78 Arthritis, 294 Artichoke, 27, 32t, 36 Arugula, 181 Ascorbate. See Vitamin C Ascorbic acids. See Vitamin C L-ascorbic acids, 31 Asthma, antioxidants in, 59 Atherogenesis, 283–284 Atherosclerosis, 117, 119, 129, 235, 283–284, 290 Athletes, antioxidant supplementation for, 104–105, 109–110 Atrophy, of gray and white matter, 202–203 Attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder (ADHD), 60, 61–62 Autism spectrum disorders (ASD), 62–63 Autoimmune thyroid diseases (AITDs), 219 Azoxymethane-induced colon carcinogenesis, 292
B

Bananas, 31
Barley, 216
Basil, 30, 32t, 37, 177, 281, 290, 291, 292t, 295
Basilici herba, 39
Beans, 26, 182, 183
Beef, 179
Behavioral alterations, antioxidants and, 60–62
Benozoic acids, 24, 31, 35
Berries, 31, 32t, 141, 177
  color, 27
Beverages, antioxidant effect, 73
Bioavailability, natural antioxidants, 73–75, 74t
BioCycle Study, 154
Biomarkers
  natural antioxidants bioavailability on, 73–75, 74t
  of OS, 235
Bisabolol oxides, 37
Blackberries, 31, 32t, 177
  color, 27
Blackcurrants, 177
Black grapes, 27, 34
Black pepper, 38
  antioxidant effects, 284, 288t
Black tea, 36
Blackthorn, 32t, 33
Blood antioxidant levels, IBD risks and, 224–225
Blueberries, 177
  anthocyanins and, 239
  color, 27
Body mass index (BMI), 235, 238
Bok choy, 180, 181
Borneol, 30, 37, 284
Bradykynesia, 203
Brain
  development, antioxidants and, 60–61
  Trxs family proteins in, 200–202, 202f
Brassicaceae, 181
Brazilian children, 57
Breast cancer, 188–189
  fiber-rich foods, 188–189, 189t
  folic acid in, 168
  intake recommendations, 189, 189t
  selenium and, 172
  soy in, 183
  vitamin C and, 173–174
Breast-feeding, 57
Broccoli, 179, 180, 181
Bronchoalveolar lavage fluid (BALF), 88
Brussels, 181, 182
Butadiene, 87
Butylated hydroxy toluene (BHT), 37
C

Cabbage, 27, 32t, 35, 180, 181, 182
Caffeic acids, 24, 31, 36, 37–38, 39
Caffeoylquinic acids, 33, 36, 37
Caffeoyltartaric acids, 35
Caftaric acids, 37
Camellia sinensis, 27
Camphene, 37
Camphor, 30, 37
Cancers, 75, 166–192
  antioxidant(s), 166–179
    flavonoids on, 97
    folic acid, 167–169, 169t
    food sources, 179
    selenium and, 170–172, 171t
    supplementation, 174–177, 178t
    taking supplements, dilemma of, 177, 178–179
    vitamin C, 172–174, 173t
    breast, 168, 172, 173–174, 188–189
    fiber-rich foods, 188–189, 189t
    intake recommendations, 189, 189t
    soy in, 183
    colon, 167, 170, 291
    colorectal, 167, 187, 188
    forestomach, 291
    FRs in development, 166
    gastric, 174
    intestinal, 225
    liver, 172, 291
    lung, 175, 190
    rodent model, 291
    vitamin C, 173
    vitamin E, 99
    oral, 291
    overview, 166
    pancreatic, 187
    prevention, 174–177, 178t, 179–192
      carotenoids, 184–187. See also Carotenoids, in cancer prevention
collorectal cancer and fiber, 188
    cruciferous vegetables, 181–182
    curcumin, 186, 187
    flavonoids and, 190–192, 190t, 191t
    fruits and vegetables, 179–181
    iodine and thyroid function, 182
    legumes, 182–183
    soy, 183–184
    whole grains, 184
    preventive property, spices and herbs, 291–293, 292t
    prostate, 180–181, 190
      legumes in, 182–183
      selenium and, 99, 170, 172, 175
      soy in, 183
Index

skin, 291
  selenium and, 99, 172
stomach, 174
Cantaloupe, 179
Capsaicin, 283f, 289, 290, 291
  anti-inflammatory effect, 294, 295
  of red pepper, 284, 288t
Capsicum annuum, 283f
  antioxidant effects, 284, 288t
Caraway, 38
Cardamom, 38, 177
Cardioprotective effect, of herbs and spices, 290–291
Cardiovascular disease (CVD), 98, 117–118, 184, 234
antioxidant(s)
  carotenoids, 130–139, 131t–138t
  lycopene, 142–143
  outcomes risk, RCTs of supplemental intake and, 122t–128t
  polyphenols, 140–141
  resveratrol, 141–142
  selenium, 139–140
  vitamin C, 129–130
  vitamin E, 120–129, 122t–128t
Carnosic acid, 37
Carnosol, 37, 39, 291
α-carotene, in cancer prevention, 185, 185t
β-carotene, 30, 31, 72, 76, 96–97, 98
basil, 290
  cancer, 185, 186t
  CHD and strokes, 130, 139
  diabetes, 154
  food sources, 179
  HIV/AIDS and, 269
Carotene and retinol efficacy trial (CARET), 175
Carotenoids, 17, 28–30, 29f, 57, 72, 78
  in cancer prevention, 184–187
  β-carotene, 185, 186t
  β-cryptoxanthin, 185
  α-carotene, 185, 185t
  curcumin, 186, 187
  food sources, 184–185
  lutein and zeaxanthin, 186, 187t
  lycopene, 185, 186
  CHD and strokes, 130–139, 131t–138t
  diabetes, 154
  fruits, 30–31
  HIV/AIDS and, 269
  non-provitamin A, smoking and dietary antioxidants, 92–93
  natural antioxidants, 96–97
  supplementation studies, 99
Carrots, 28, 179, 185
Carvacrol, 24, 25f, 30, 37, 38, 284
Carvum carvi, 38
Caryophyllus aromaticus, 38
Case–control studies, cancers and, 170, 172, 179–180, 183, 184, 188
Catalase, 16
Cataract, 77–78
Cataractogenesis, 294
Catechins, 27, 38–39, 62, 75
  GTC, 237–239, 237t
Cauliflower, 181
C–C chemokine receptor 5 (CCR5), 265, 266
CD4 cells, HIV and, 265–266, 265t
Celiac disease, 216–220
  defined, 216
  OS and, 217, 218f
  overview, 216
  potential beneficial effect of dietary antioxidant, 220, 220f
  risk, antioxidants and, 217, 218–219
  selenium in, 218–219
  vitamin E in, 218
  treatment, antioxidants and, 219–220
  vitamin C in, 219–220
Cell signaling, hydrogen peroxide in, 11
Cell signaling theory, 199
Cellular pathway messaging, 78
Cellular ROS and RNS, production, 251–252
Central nervous system (CNS) diseases
  signaling pathways, Trxs protein family in, 205–206
Cereals, 179
Cerebral ischemia, 206–207
Cerebrovascular disease, 117
c-foc expression, 75
Chain reactions, 10
Chalcones, 25f, 26, 27, 33, 34
Chamazulene, 30
Chamomile, 30, 33t, 36, 38
  Chamomilla flos, 39
CHD. See Coronary heart disease (CHD)
Chemistry basics, oxygen, 4–7, 5f, 6t
Cherries, 31, 32t, 177
  color, 27
Children’s growth and development, antioxidants in, 53–64
  ASD, 62–63
  asthma and allergies, 59
  behavioral alterations, 60–62
  brain development, 60–61
  cognitive function, 60–62
  deficiency diseases treatment, 58–59
  Down syndrome, 63, 64f
  growth and, 56–58, 56t
  micronutrients and early development, 53–54, 55f
  obesity and, 59–60
  OS and health, 54, 56
  overview, 53–56, 55f
Chili powder, 177  
Chinese cabbage, 181  
Chinese green tea, 27  
Chlorogenic acids, 24, 31, 36, 37, 39  
Cider apples, 32t, 33  
Cigarette smoke. See Smoking  
Cinnamaldehyde, 30  
Cinnamic acids, 24, 31, 35, 38, 39  
Cinnamomum zeylanicum, 38  
Cinnamon, 38, 177, 281  
EO compound, 30  
Cisplatin, 177  
Cistus ladanifer, 28  
Cistus monspeliensis, 28  
Cistus salvifolius, 28  
Cistus species, 27, 28  
Citrulline, 13–14  
Citrus fruits, 31, 32t, 33–34, 72, 292t  
carotenoids, 28  
c-jun expression, 75  
Classification, natural antioxidants, 24–30  
carotenoids, 28–30, 29f  
EOs, 29f, 30  
phenols and polyphenols, 24–28  
flavonoids, 25f, 26–27, 32t, 33–34, 36  
molecular structures, 25f  
others, 28  
phenolic acids, 24, 25f  
simple, 24, 25f  
Clinical evidence, on exogenous antioxidants in obesity, 236–242  
ALA, 241  
anthocyanins and blueberries, 239  
CoQ, 241  
curcumin, 237t, 239–240  
fruits, legumes, and nuts, 241–242  
GTCs, 237–239, 237t  
resveratrol, 237t, 240–241  
Cloves, 30, 38, 177  
antioxidant effects, 284, 287t, 289  
Coenzyme Q (CoQ), 241  
Cognitive function, antioxidants and, 60–62  
Cohort studies, cancers and, 180, 184, 188, 190  
Colitis, development, 222  
Collard greens, 179, 181  
Colon cancer, 291  
folic acid in, 167  
polyamine biosynthesis in, 291  
selenium and, 170, 172  
Colorectal cancer, 187, 188  
fiber and, 188  
folic acid in, 167  
Combination therapy (HAARTS), in HIV/AIDS patients, 272, 273t  
Combined antioxidant supplementation studies, 99  
Condensed tannins, 27  
Congenital heart disease, 117  
Consumption, dietary antioxidant disease prevention in elderly, 77–79  
Copper, smoking and dietary antioxidants, 94  
natural antioxidants, 97–98  
Coriander, 177  
Corn, 179  
Coronary heart disease (CHD), 117–143  
antioxidant(s), 120–143  
carotenoids, 130–139, 131t–138t  
hypothesis, 119–120, 120f  
lycopene, 142–143  
polyphenols, 140–141  
resveratrol, 141–142  
selenium, 139–140  
vitamin C, 129–130  
vitamin E, 120–129, 122t–128t  
overview, 117–118  
risk factors associated with, 118  
vitamin E on, 99  
3-p-Coumaroylquinic acid, 31  
COX-2 (cyclooxygenase 2), 217, 218, 282  
COX-2 gene, 219  
Cranberries, 177  
Cretan marjoram, 38  
Crixivan, 273t  
Croccin, 28, 30  
Crocus sativus, 28  
Cryptoxanthin, 31  
β-cryptoxanthin, in cancer prevention, 185  
Cumin, 177  
Curcuma longa, 186, 225, 283f  
antioxidant effects, 284, 285t–286t, 289f  
Curcuminoids, 290, 294  
Curcuminoids, 29, 37, 225, 283f, 290, 291, 293, 294  
antioxidant effects, 284, 285t–286t, 289f  
Curcumins, 290, 294  
anti-inflammatory effect, 294–295  
antimutagenic property, 292  
in cancer prevention, 186, 187  
cancer-preventive property, 291–292  
hepatoprotective and renal-protective effects, 295  
in obesity, 237t, 239–240  
Curry powder, 177  
Cyanidin 3-O-glucoside, 31, 33  
Cyanidin 3-O-rutinoside, 31, 33  
Cyanidins, 27, 31, 35, 36  
Cyclooxygenase 2 (COX-2), 217, 218, 282  
 Cyclosporine, 295
Index

**Index**

**D**

Daidzein, 26–27
Damaging effects of ROS, common targets, 19–20
Dates, 177
Deeply pigmented fruits, 177
Deep vein thrombosis, 117
Defective antioxidant defense, in obesity, 235–236, 236f
Deficiency diseases treatment, antioxidants in, 58–59
Delphinidins, 27, 35, 36
Dementia, 204–205
Depletion, GSH, 87–88
Depression, 62
Development
antioxidants in children, 53–64
ASD, 62–63
asthma and allergies, 59
behavioral alterations, 60–62
brain development, 60–61
cognitive function, 60–62
deficiency diseases treatment, 58–59
Down syndrome, 63, 64f
growth and, 56–58, 56f
micronutrients and early development, 53–54, 55f
obesity and, 59–60
OS and health, 54, 56
overview, 53–56, 55f
cancer, FRs in, 166
Diabetes, 151–157
amelioration of OS in, 293
antioxidants and, 152–156
carotenoids, 154
lycopene, 154
polyphenols, 155–156, 156f
selenium, 155
serum retinol, 154
vitamin C, 153
vitamin E, 153
diet vs. pills, 157
overview, 151–152
serum retinol, 154
Diabetes mellitus, 151–152, 183, 216
gestational, 50–51
OS in, 293
Diallyl disulfides, 284, 288
Diallyl sulfides, 30, 284, 288, 292
Diallyl thiosulfinate, 35
Diarrhea, 265, 267, 270, 273t
Dicaffeoylquinic acids, 36, 37
Didanosin, 273t
Dielectric constant, 9
Diets—Alder reactions, 15
Dietary antioxidants
in adulthood, 71–76
bioavailability of natural antioxidants and effect on biomarkers, 73–75, 74t
disease prevention, 75
needs and importance, 71–73
supplements and health, 75–76, 76t
in cancer, 174
defined, 167
in elderly, 76–79
consumption and disease prevention, 77–79
needs and importance, 76–77
intake, IBD risks and, 223–224
smoking and, 89–91, 90t, 91f
Dietary antioxidants, food sources and, 23–40
natural, classification, 24–30
carotenoids, 28–30, 29f
EOs, 29f, 30
phenols and polyphenols, 24–28. See also Phenols and polyphenols
natural, distribution, 30–40
fruits, 30–34, 32t–33t
grapes and wine, 32t, 34–35
herbs, 33t, 36–39
olives and olive oil, 39–40
vegetables, 32t, 35–36
overview, 23–24
Dietary folate equivalents (DFEs), 168
Dietary Guidelines for Americans, 168, 181, 184
Dietary intakes, for vitamins and minerals, 56–58, 56t
Dietary reference intakes (DRIs), 77, 105
5-Diethoxyphosphoryl-5-methyl-1-pyrroline-N-oxide (DEPMPO), 86
Diet(s)
Mediterranean, 77
pills vs., 157
Diglycoside isolariiciresinols, 28
Dihydrochalones, 33
Dihydroflavonols, 26
2,3-Dihydroxybenzoic acid, 39
3,4-Dihydroxyphenylacetic acid, 24
Dill, 32t, 35
Dill weed, 177
Diosmetin-acetyl-apio glucoside, 35
Diosmetin-apiosylglucoside, 35
Diphenylheptanoid compound, 29
2,2-Diphenyl-1-picrylhydrazyl (DPPH) test, 30, 37
Disease prevention, dietary antioxidants and in adulthood, 75
in elderly, 77–79
Distribution, natural antioxidants, 30–40
fruits, 30–34, 32t–33t
grapes and wine, 32t, 34–35
herbs, 33t, 36–39
olives and olive oil, 39–40
vegetables, 32t, 35–36
Diterpene, 291
Dittany, 30
Dog roses, 32t, 33
Down syndrome, antioxidants and, 63, 64f
Doxorubicin, 177
Dried fruits, 177
Dry beans, in cancer prevention, 182

E
Early development, micronutrients and, 53–54, 55f
Ebselen, 206
Eclampsia, 49
Efavirenz, 272
Eggplant, 27, 32t, 35
Egg yolks, 177
Elderly, dietary antioxidants in, 76–79
consumption and disease prevention, 77–79
needs and importance, 76–77
Electron paramagnetic resonance (EPR)
spectroscopy, 86
Elettaria cardamomum, 38
Ellagic acids, 31
Ellagitannins, 28
Endogenous antioxidants, 89, 90t, 103–104, 106–109
defined, 167
GSH, 106–107
lipoic acid, 107–109
Endometrium, of women, 48
Endoplasmic reticulum (ER), ROS production in, 8, 9
Endothelial isoform of NOS (eNOS), 14, 251–252
Eosinophils, activation, 268
Epicatechin-3-gallate (ECG), 237
Epicatechins (EC), 27, 38–39, 237
Epidemiology, HIV/AIDS, 263–264
Epidermidys, 47
Epigallocatechin (EGC), 237
Epigallocatechin-3-gallate (EGCG), 237, 238
Epigallocatechins, 27
Ericaceae family, 27
Eriodictyol glycosides, 36
Eriodictyol-7-O-glucoside, 38
Eriodictyol-7-O-rutinoside, 26
Escherichia coli, 200

Essential oils (EOs), 29f, 30, 35, 36–37, 177, 292t
Eucalyptol, 30, 37
Eugenia caryophyllus, 283f
antioxidant effects, 284, 287t, 289
Eugenol, 24, 25f, 30, 283f, 292t
anti-inflammatory effect, 294
antioxidant effects, 284, 287t, 289
hepatoprotective and renal-protective effects, 295
in tumors, 293
European Food Safety Authority (EFSA), 73, 75, 176
European Union (EU), 118
Evidence, clinical and experimental
on exogenous antioxidants in obesity, 236–242
ALA, 241
anthocyanins and blueberries, 239
CoQ, 241
curcumin, 237t, 239–240
fruits, legumes, and nuts, 241–242
GTCs, 237–239, 237t
resveratrol, 237t, 240–241
Exercise, physical, 103–111
antioxidants
endogenous, 106–109. See also Endogenous antioxidants
exogenous, 109–111. See also Exogenous antioxidants
general health and, 104
supplementation for physically active individuals, 104–105
overview, 103–104
Exhaled nitric oxide (eNO), 88
Exogenous antioxidants, 89, 90t, 103–104, 109–111
in cancer, 174
clinical and experimental evidence in obesity, 236–242
ALA, 241
anthocyanins and blueberries, 239
CoQ, 241
curcumin, 237t, 239–240
fruits, legumes, and nuts, 241–242
GTCs, 237–239, 237t
resveratrol, 237t, 240–241
defined, 167
flavonoids, 110–111
vitamins C and E, 109–110
Experimental evidence, on exogenous antioxidants in obesity, 236–242
ALA, 241
anthocyanins and blueberries, 239
CoQ, 241
curcumin, 237t, 239–240
fruits, legumes, and nuts, 241–242
GTCs, 237–239, 237t
resveratrol, 237t, 240–241

Index
Familial AD (fAD), 204
Farnesene, 30
Fennel seed, 38
Fenton reaction, 12
Fenugreek seeds, 293
Ferric reducing antioxidant power (FRAP) values, 31
Ferritin, 13
Fertility, OS in, 47–48
Ferulic acids, 24, 31, 39
Fibers
breast cancer, 188–189, 189t
colorectal cancer and, 188
Figs, 31, 177
Fish, 179
F2-isoprostane levels, 88
Flavanols, 25f, 26, 27, 33, 35, 38, 155
Flavan-3-ols, 27, 33, 34
Flavanones, 25f, 26, 27, 33–34, 36, 97, 155
Flavanonols, 25f, 26
Flavones, 25f, 26, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 97, 155, 190
Flavonoids, 25f, 26–27, 32t, 33, 36, 73, 75, 78, 155
in cancer prevention, 190–192, 190t, 191t
food sources, 190–192, 190t, 191t
exogenous antioxidants, 110–111
polymethoxylated, 34
smoking and
dietary antioxidants, 93–94
natural antioxidants, 97
of tea, 290
in thyme, 284
Flavonols, 25f, 26, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 97, 155, 190
Flax seeds, 28, 32t
Foeniculum vulgare, 38
Folic acid, cancer and, 167–169, 169t
Food and Nutrition Board (FNB), 168
Food sources, dietary antioxidants and, 23–40
in cancer, 179
β-carotene, 179
carotenoids, 184, 185
lutein, 179
lycopene, 179
selenium, 179
vitamin A, 179
vitamin C, 179
flavonoids, 190–192, 190t, 191t
of folic acid, 169t
natural antioxidants, classification, 24–30
carotenoids, 28–30, 29f
EOs, 29f, 30
phenols and polyphenols, 24–28. See also Phenols and polyphenols
natural antioxidants, distribution, 30–40
fruits, 30–34, 32t–33t
grapes and wine, 32t, 34–35
herbs, 33t, 36–39
olives and olive oil, 39–40
vegetables, 32t, 35–36
overview, 23–24
of selenium, 171t
of vitamin C, 173t
Forestomach cancer, 291
Framingham offspring cohort, 235
Free radicals (FRs), 4, 84, 87, 93
in cancer development, 166
in cigarette tar, 85–86
defined, 166, 250
Fruits
cancer prevention, 179–181
intake recommendations, 181
depthly pigmented, 177
dried, 177
natural antioxidants distribution in, 30–34, 32t–33t
obesity, 241–242
Functional foods, 281

G
Gallic acids, 24, 31, 34, 36, 37
Gallocatechins, 27
Garlic, 30, 32t, 35, 38, 177, 180, 181, 291, 293
antiatherogenic and cardioprotective effect, 290
antioxidant effects, 284, 286t–287t, 288
diallyl sulfide, 292
S-allylcysteine of, 292
Gas phase, radicals in, 87–88
GSH depletion, 87–88
oxidative radicals, 87
peroxynitrite, 87
Gastric cancer, 174
Gastrointestinal disorders, 215–228
celiac disease, 216–220
defined, 216
OS and, 217, 218f
overview, 216
potential beneficial effect of dietary antioxidant, 220, 220f
risk, antioxidants and, 217, 218–219
treatment, antioxidants and, 219–220
vitamin C in, 219–220
IBDs, 221–229. See also Inflammatory bowel diseases (IBDs)
OS and, 222–223
overview, 221
risks, antioxidant and, 223–225
treatment, antioxidant and, 225–228, 226t–227t
Gastrointestinal tract, cancers of, 187
Index

General health, antioxidants and, 104
Genistein, 26–27, 39
Gentisic acids, 31
Geranial, 30
Geraniol, 284, 291
Gestational diabetes mellitus, 50–51
Gingerol, 283f, 284, 288, 289, 291
Gingers, 38, 177, 281, 291
antioxidant effects, 284, 288, 289
in arthritic knee pain, 295
6-gingerol and 6-paradol in, 292
Ginkgo biloba, 281
Ginseng, 281, 292t
GISSI (Gruppo Italiano per lo Studio della Sopravvivenza nell'Infarto Miocardico), 99
Glaucoma therapy, 207
Glaxo Wellcome, 273t
Gliadin, 216
Glucagon-like polypeptide-1 (GLP-1), 156
Glucose transporter-4 (GLUT4) translocation, 238
β-glucosides, 26–27
Glycosides, 26, 27, 31, 33–34, 35, 36, 39
Glutathione peroxidases (GSH-Px), 16, 17, 54, 63, 94–95, 106, 200, 252, 270
Glutathione reductase (GR), 200–201
Heat shock proteins (HSPs), 107
Heavy drinking, defined, 168
HELENA study, 58
Helicobacter pylori, 174
HELLP syndrome, 49
Hemorrhagic stroke, 118, 129
Hepatoprotective effects, spices and herbs, 295
Herbs, 177, 281–296
amelioration of OS in diabetes, 293
antiatherogenic and cardioprotective effect, 290–291
anticaftaractogenesis, 294
anti-inflammatory effect, 294–295
antioxidant effects, 283–289
clove (Eugenia caryophyllus) and eugenol, 284, 287t, 289
garlic (Allium sativum) and onion (Allium cepa), 284, 286t–287t, 288
ginger (Zingiber officinale), 284, 288, 289
red pepper (Capsicum annuum) and black pepper (Piper nigrum), 284, 288t
turmeric (Curcuma longa) and curcumin, 284, 285t–286t, 289f
cancer-preventive property, 291–293, 292t
hepatoprotective and renal-protective effects, 295
natural antioxidants distribution, 33t, 36–39
neuroprotective potential, 294
other nutraceutical properties, 296
overview, 281–283, 283f
Hernia, 295
H
Halimioides, 28
Head, artichoke, 27, 32t, 36
Health
adult, antioxidant supplements and, 75–76, 76t
general, antioxidants and, 104
pediatric, OS and, 54, 56
Health Professionals Study, 180–181
Heart Outcomes Prevention Evaluation (HOPE) study, 99, 175
Heat shock proteins (HSPs), 107
Heavy drinking, defined, 168
HELENA study, 58
Helicobacter pylori, 174
HELLP syndrome, 49
Heme oxygenase-1 (HO-1), 204
Hemorrhagic stroke, 118, 129
Hepatoprotective effects, spices and herbs, 295
Herbs, 177, 281–296
amelioration of OS in diabetes, 293
antiatherogenic and cardioprotective effect, 290–291
anticaftaractogenesis, 294
anti-inflammatory effect, 294–295
antioxidant effects, 283–289
clove (Eugenia caryophyllus) and eugenol, 284, 287t, 289
garlic (Allium sativum) and onion (Allium cepa), 284, 286t–287t, 288
ginger (Zingiber officinale), 284, 288, 289
red pepper (Capsicum annuum) and black pepper (Piper nigrum), 284, 288t
turmeric (Curcuma longa) and curcumin, 284, 285t–286t, 289f
cancer-preventive property, 291–293, 292t
hepatoprotective and renal-protective effects, 295
natural antioxidants distribution, 33t, 36–39
neuroprotective potential, 294
other nutraceutical properties, 296
overview, 281–283, 283f
Hernia, 295
Hesperetin, 26, 38
Hesperidin, 26, 34
Hesperin, 38
High-density lipoprotein (HDL), 142, 238, 290–291
High-fat diet (HFD), 238, 240
Highly active antiretroviral therapy (HAART), 272, 273t
Hipovitaminosis A, 57
HIV/AIDS. See Human immunodeficiency virus/acquired immunodeficiency syndrome (HIV/AIDS)
Homeostasis, redox, 250–251
Homeostasis model assessment of insulin resistance (HOMA-IR), 154
Homovanillic acid, 39
Homovanillyl alcohol, 40
HOPE (Heart Outcomes Prevention Evaluation) study, 99, 175
Hordein, 216
Horseradish, 181
Human immunodeficiency virus/acquired immunodeficiency syndrome (HIV/AIDS), 263–274
antioxidants and, 268–271
β-carotene, 269
NAC, 271
polyphenols, 271
selenium, 270
supplementation, adverse effects, 273–274
vitamin A, 268–269
vitamin C, 269
vitamin E, 269–270
zinc, 270–271
epidemiology, 263–264
factors affecting antioxidant level in patients, 272–273
combination therapy (HAARTS), 272, 273t
medication intake, 272
opportunistic conditions, 272
socioeconomic status, 273
HIV-1 vs. HIV-2, 264, 264t
infections, types, 264, 264t
malnutrition and, 266–267
nutrition and, 267
OS and, 267–268
overview, 263–265
pathomechanism, 265–266
CD4 cells and, 265–266, 265t
viral load, 266
prevention, 274
transmission, 264, 265
Human leukocyte antigen (HLA), 216
Humans
smoking on OS in, 88–89
sperms, OS and, 47
Hund’s rule, 5
Hydrocele, 295
Hydrogen peroxide, 10–12, 86
Hydrolyzable tannins, 28
Hydroxybenzoic acids, 24, 31, 39
Hydroxycinnamic acids, 33
Hydroxyl radicals, 12–13
Hydroxytyrosol, 24, 25f, 39–40
Hypercholesterolemia, 290
Hyperglycemia, 238, 290
Hyperic herba, 39
Hypercholesterolemia, 238
Hyperglycemia, 238
Hyperglnuria, 238
Hyperglycemia, 238
Hydroxycinnamic acids, 33
Hydroxytyrosol, 24, 25f, 39–40
Hypercholesterolemia, 290
Hyperglycemia, 238
Hyperglnuria, 238
Hyperglycemia, 238
Index

iNOS gene, 219
Intakes
dietary
  antioxidants, IBD risks and, 223–224
  for vitamins and minerals, 56–58, 56t
DRIs, 77, 105
medication, HIV/AIDS patients and, 272
recommendations
  breast cancer, 189, 189t
  cruciferous vegetables, 182
  fruits and vegetables, 181
  soy, 183, 184
  whole grains, 184
Interferon-γ (IFN-γ), 217, 218, 219, 220, 255
Interleukin (IL), 217, 218, 219, 220
Interleukin-6 (IL-6), 107
Intestinal cancer, 225
Intrauterine growth restriction (IUGR), 49
Invirase, 273t
In vitro immune response, monitoring, 256–257, 257f
In vitro systems, antioxidant effects
  curcumin in, 284, 285t–286t, 289f
  eugenol, 284, 287t, 289
In vivo systems, antioxidant effects
  curcumin in, 284, 285t–286t, 289f
  eugenol, 284, 287t, 289
Iodine function, cruciferous vegetables and,
  182
  intake recommendations, 182
Iraqi children, 59
Iron
  smoking and
    dietary antioxidants, 95
    natural antioxidants, 98
  supplementation, 57–58, 59
Ischemia, defined, 118
Ischemia–reperfusion injury, 201
Ischemic stroke, 118, 129
Isoflavones, 25f, 26–27, 97, 155
Isophorone, 30
Isoprene, 87
Isorhamnetin, 35, 37
Isothiocyanates, 181

J
Juniper berry, 38
Juniperus communis, 38

K
Kaempferol, 26, 35, 38
Kale, 179, 181, 186
Kidney stones, 273t
Kinase-driven pathways, on hydrogen peroxide, 11
Kiwi fruit, 72
Kohlrahi, 181
Kwashiorkor, 58

L
Lamivudin, 272
Lariciresinols, 28
Laurels, 38
Lauri folium, 39
Laurus nobilis, 38
Lavender, 291
Leafy greens, 180
Legumes, 181
  in cancer prevention, 182–183
    dry beans, peas, and lentils, 182
    prostate cancer, 182–183
  in obesity, 241–242
Leguminosae family, 26
Lemon balm, 26, 33t, 37, 38
Lemon bark, 26
Lemongrass, 30, 290, 291, 292t
Lemon peel, 34
Lentils, in cancer prevention, 182, 183, 184
Lettuce, 180
Leucocistus, 28
Lewy bodies, 203, 204
Lewy neurites, 203
Lignans, 28
  in whole grains, 184
Ligstrosides, 39, 40
Limonene, 30, 292t
Lind’s study, 57–58
Linoleic acid, 223
Lipid peroxidation, 152, 295
Lipid peroxides, 294
Lipid theory, 283
Lipoic acid, 107–109
Lipoophilic antioxidant, 72
Lipoprotein oxidation, singlet oxygen in, 15
Lipoxylylsine, 108
Liver cancer, 172, 291
Low-density lipoprotein (LDL), 72, 98, 109, 119, 142, 235, 238, 290–291
Lung cancer, 175, 190
  rodent model, 291
  vitamin C and, 173
  vitamin E on, 99
Lutein, 31, 72, 78, 139, 179
  in cancer prevention, 186, 187t
Luteolin, 26, 36, 37, 39, 40, 62
Luteolin-7-O-glucoside, 36
Lycopene, 31, 72, 97, 99
  cancer prevention, 180–181, 184, 185, 186
  CHD and strokes, 142–143
  diabetes, 154
  food sources, 179
Mace, 38, 281
Magnesium, supplementation in diabetes, 157
Mainstream (inhaled) smoking, 84–85
Majoranae folium, 39
Male subfertility, 47–48
Malnutrition
children, 53–54
HIV/AIDS and, 266–267
Malondialdehyde (MDA), 48, 49, 50
Malvidin, 27
Malvidin glycoside, 34
Mandarin peel, 32t, 34
Mangoes, 177, 179
Marjoram, 30, 33t, 38, 177
Matricaria chamomilla, 38
M-coumaric acid, 38
Medication intake, 272
Mediterranean diet, 77
Melissa folium, 39
Melissa officinalis, 26, 37
Melons, carotenoids in, 28, 31
Mental development, antioxidants and, 60–61
Mentha piperita, 39
Mentha pulegium, 38
Mentha spicata, 292t
Mesalazine, 225
Methanols, 37
Methotrexate, 177
Methyl allyl sulfides, 30
Methylphenidate, 61
1-Methyl-4-phenylpyridinium (MPP+), 205
1-Methyl-4-phenyl-1,2,3,6-tetrahydropyridine (MPTP), 205
Micronutrients
deficiency, 266–267, 273
early development and, 53–54, 55f
examples, 267
Milk, 179
Minerals
child growth and development, 54, 56, 56t,
57–58, 59–62
smoking and, 94–95
copper, 94
Mint, 291, 292t
Miscarriage, OS and, 48
Mitochondria, ROS production in, 7
Mitogen-activated protein kinases (MAPKs), 109
Mn-superoxide dismutase (Mn-SOD), 109
Moderate alcohol consumption, defined, 168
Modulation of immune response, 249–258
anti-inflammatory properties of antioxidants, 257–258
antioxidant systems, 252–254
overview, 249
small redox molecules and redox homeostasis, 250–251
Th1-type immune response, 254–256, 255f
in vitro, monitoring, 256–257, 257f
Monitoring, immune response in vitro, 256–257, 257f
Monoglycoside 7-hydroxymatairesinsols, 28
Monoterpenic alcohol, 291
Monoterpenes, 30
Morbidity, in mother and fetus, 47, 48–50
Morellos, 31
color, 27
Mortality
mother and fetus, OS and, 47, 48–50
underweight children, 53–54
Mother-to-child transmission (MTCT), 264, 265
Mountain tea, 33t, 36, 38
Mouse models
anthocyanins administration in, 239
carcinogenesis in, 291–293
celiac disease, 219
cognitive tests in, 78
diet-induced obesity in, 238
GSH deficiency and, 106–107
IBD, 228
lung cancer, 291
signaling pathways in CNS diseases, 205–206
tumor promotion, 291
Mouth sores, 267
Mozzarella cheese, 179
mTOR (target of rapamycin), 271
Muscle damage, vitamins C and E, 109–110
Mustard seed, 177, 181
Myeloperoxidase, 14–15
Myocardial infarction, vitamin E on, 99
Myricetin, 26, 36, 190
Myristica fragrans, 38
Myristicin, 30, 35, 291, 292t
Myrosinase, 181
N
N-acetyl cysteine (NAC), 106, 177
HIV/AIDS and, 271
NADPH oxidases (NOX), 251
Naphthalene, 294
Naringenin, 26, 36, 38, 39
Naringin, 26, 34, 38
National Cancer Institute, 172, 174, 180, 181, 182
National Health and Nutrition Examination Surveys (NHANES), 72, 105, 154
National Institutes of Health (NIH), 118, 187
Natural antioxidants
bioavailability and effect on biomarkers, 73–75, 74t
classification, 24–30
carotenoids, 28–30, 29f
EOs, 29f, 30
phenols and polyphenols, 24–28. See also
Phenols and polyphenols
distribution, 30–40
fruits, 30–34, 32t–33t
grapes and wine, 32t, 34–35
herbs, 33t, 36–39
olives and olive oil, 39–40
vegetables, 32t, 35–36
smoking and, 95–98
copper, 97–98
flavonoids, 97
iron, 98
selenium, 98
vitamin A and non–provitamin A
carotenoids, 96–97
vitamin C, 95–96
vitamin E, 96
zinc, 97
Natural killer cells, 48
Nausea, 272, 273t
Needs and importance, of dietary antioxidants
in adulthood, 71–73
in elderly, 76–77
Nelfinavir, 273t
Neochlorogenic acids, 31, 36, 37
Neohesperidin, 34
Neonatal stroke, 202
Neopterin, 255–256, 257
Neoxanthine, 31
Neral, 30
Neurodegeneration, 199–207
pathologies in, 202–205
AD, 204–205
PA, 202–203
PD, 203–204
pharmacological approaches, 206–207
redox control and ROS and RNS, 199–200
signaling pathways in CNS diseases, Trxs
protein family in, 205–206
Trxs family proteins in brain, 200–202, 202f
Neuronal isoform of NOS (nNOS), 14, 251–252
Neuroprotective potential, 294
Nevirapine, 272
Nicotinamide adenine dinucleotide phosphate
(NADPH) oxidase, 11–12, 17
Nicotine, in cigarettes, 96
NIH (National Institutes of Health), 118, 187
Nipridil, 207
Nitric oxide (NO), 13–14, 85, 86, 87, 217
Nitrosoperoxycarbonate, 14
Nitroso thiols, 200
N-methyl-D-aspartate (NMDA), 203
Noncommunicable diseases (NCDs), 117
Nonpolar solvents, 9
Non–provitamin A carotenoids, smoking and
dietary antioxidants, 92–93
natural antioxidants, 96–97
supplementation studies, 99
Norepinephrine, 238
Norvir, 273t
NO synthetase (NOS), 13–14, 251–252
Nuclear factor kappa B (NF-κB), 109, 217, 223,
254–255, 257, 267–268
Nuclear magnetic resonance analysis, of phenols,
40
Nurses’ Health Study, 72, 130, 173, 180
Nutmeg, 38
Nutraceutical properties, of spices and herbs, 296
Nutrition
in cancer care, 191–192
HIV and, 267
Nutritional Prevention of Cancer Trial, 99
Nuts, 179
in obesity, 241–242
O
Obesity, 59–60, 233–243
clinical and experimental evidence on
exogenous antioxidants in, 236–242
ALA, 241
anthocyanins and blueberries, 239
CoQ, 241
curcumin, 237t, 239–240
fruits, legumes, and nuts, 241–242
green tea catechins, 237–239, 237t
resveratrol, 237t, 240–241
defective antioxidant defense in, 235–236,
236f
as inflammatory condition, 234
OS and, 48, 234–235
overview, 233–234
pediatric, 54
recommendations, 243
safety concerns and open questions, 242–243
Ocimum basilicum, 37, 290, 292t, 295
Old age. See Elderly
Oleuropein, 24, 39–40
Olives and olive oils, 24, 32t
natural antioxidants distribution, 39–40
Onions, 32t, 35, 177, 180, 181
antioxidant effects, 284, 286t–287t, 288
red, 27, 32t
Oocyte, OS and, 48
Opportunistic conditions, 272
Oral cancer, 291
Oranges, 31, 34, 177, 179
Oregano, 26, 30, 33t, 37, 38–39, 177, 292t
Organosulfur compounds, 30
Origanum majorana, 38
Origanum microphyllum, 38
Origanum species, 24, 37
**Origanum vulgare**, 26, 37, 38
OS. See Oxidative stress (OS)
Osteoarthritis, 295
Outcomes, CVD risk of
observational studies on antioxidant intake and, 131t–138t
RCTs of supplemental antioxidant intake and, 122t–128t
Overweight children, 54, 59–60
Oxidative burst reaction, 11
Oxidative radicals, 87
Oxidative stress (OS), 16–17, 203
in cataractogenesis, 294
children’s health and, 54, 56
in chronic diabetic complications, 152
defined, 84, 119, 215
in diabetes, amelioration, 293
gastrointestinal disorders, 215–228
ceeliac disease and, 217, 218f. See also Celiac disease
IBDs, 222–223. See also Inflammatory bowel diseases (IBDs)
HIV/AIDS and, 267–268
obesity and, 48, 234–235
in pregnancy, 47–51
fertility, 47–48
gestational diabetes mellitus, 50–51
IUGR, 49
miscarriage, 48
overview, 47
PPROM, 50
preeclampsia, 48–49
preterm labor, 49–50
smoking and, 84–99
antioxidant intake, interrelationship, 89–99
chemistry, interrelationship, 85–88. See also Smoking
effects in humans, 88–89
overview, 84–85
Oxygen
chemistry basics, 4–7, 5f, 6t
derived ROS, types, 10–19
HOCl and myeloperoxidase, 14–15
hydrogen peroxide, 10–12
hydroxyl radicals, 12–13
OS, 16–17
ozone, 15–16
peroxynitrite, 13–14
singlet oxygen, 15
substances and compounds with antioxidant activity, 18t–19t
ground-state, 4, 6
singlet, 4, 5, 15
in triplet state, 4, 5f
Oxygen radical absorbance capacity (ORAC), 176, 177, 178t
Ozone, 15–16

**P**
Pancreatic cancer, 187
Papaya, 179
Paprika, 177
PARK2 gene, 204
Parkin, 204
Parkinson disease (PD), 77–78, 203–204
Parsley, 32t, 35, 291, 292t
EO compound, 30
Passive smoking, 84–85
Pathologies, in neurodegeneration, 202–205
AD, 204–205
PA, 202–203
PD, 203–204
Pathomechanism, HIV/AIDS, 265–266
CD4 cells and, 265–266, 265t
viral load, 266
p-benzoquinone (p-BQ), 98
p-coumaric acids, 24, 31, 37, 39, 40
p-cumaroyltartaric acid, 35
p-cymene, 30, 37
Peaches, 31, 32t, 141, 177
carotenoids in, 28, 31
Pears, 31, 32t, 177
Peas, in cancer prevention, 182, 183, 184
Pelargonidins, 27, 35
Pelargonin, 31
Pennyroyal, 30, 33t, 38–39
Peonidin-3-arabinoside, 27
Peonidin 3-O-rutinoside, 33
Peonidins, 27, 35, 36
Pepper, 177
Peppermint, 177
Perillyl alcohol, 291
Perinatal asphyxia (PA), 202–203
Peripheral arterial disease (PAD), 117
Peripheral blood mononuclear cells (PBMCs), 256–257, 257f
Peroxidases, 16
Peroxiredoxins (Prxs), 16–17, 200, 201, 206
Peroxisomes, ROS production in, 7
Peroxys, 86
Peroxynitrite, 13–14, 87, 201
Perrone’s study, 57–58
Petroselinum crispum, 292t
Petunidin, 27, 31
Petunidin glycoside, 34
Phagocytic processes by cells, hydrogen peroxide in, 11
Pharmacological approaches, neurodegeneration, 206–207
α-Phellandrene, 35
β-Phellandrene, 30, 35
Phenolic acids, 24, 25f, 32t–33t, 62
  fruits, 31–33
  grapes, 34
  herbs, 36–37
  olives and olive oil, 39–40
  vegetables, 35–36
Phenolic terpenes, 37
Phenols and polyphenols, 24–28, 32t–33t
  allergies in children, 59
  flavonoids, 25f, 26–27, 32t, 33–34, 36, 73, 75
  in fruits, 31–33
  in grapes, 34
  herbs, 36–37
  molecular structures, 25f
  olives and olive oil, 39–40
  others, 28
  phenolic acids, 24, 25f, 31–33, 32t–33t
  simple, 24, 25f
  in vegetables, 35–36
Phenylbutazone, 295
Phenylypropanoids, 24, 30
Phloretin, 27
Photolysis, 12
Photosynthesis, singlet oxygen in, 15
Physical exercise, 103–111
antioxidants
  endogenous, 106–109. See also Endogenous antioxidants
  exogenous, 109–111. See also Exogenous antioxidants
  general health and, 104
  supplementation for physically active individuals, 104–105
  overview, 103–104
Physically active individuals, antioxidant supplementation for, 104–105
Physicians’ Health Study II (PHS II), 175–176
Phytoene, 31
Phytoestrogens, 28
Phytofluene, 31
Phytohemagglutinin (PHA), 256
Pills, diet vs., 157
Pineapples, 31
α-Pinene, 30, 37
Pinoresins, 28, 39, 40
Piperine, 283f, 293
  of black pepper, 284, 288t
  *Piper nigrum*, 38, 283f
antioxidant effects, 284, 288t
Pleiotropic effect, 141
Plums, 31, 177
Poliumontha longiflora, 292t
*Polygonum cuspidatum*, 141
Polymethoxylated flavonoids, 34
Polyphenols, 24–28, 32t–33t, 73, 78
  allergies in children, 59
  in CHD and strokes, 140–141
  diabetes, 155–156, 156f
  dietary, antiobesity effects, 237t
  flavonoids, 25f, 26–27, 32t, 33–34, 36, 73, 75
  in fruits, 31–33
  in grapes, 34
  herbs, 36–37
  HIV/AIDS and, 271
  molecular structures, 25f
  olives and olive oil, 39–40
  others, 28
  phenolic acids, 24, 25f, 31–33, 32t–33t
  simple, 24, 25f
  in vegetables, 35–36
Polyunsaturated fatty acids (PUFA), 61
Pomace, 32t
Pomegranate, 177
Poultry, 179
Preeclampsia, OS in, 47, 48–49
Pregnancy, OS in, 47–51
  fertility, 47–48
  gestational diabetes mellitus, 50–51
  IUGR, 49
  miscarriage, 48
  overview, 47
  PPROM, 50
  preeclampsia, 48–49
  preterm labor, 49–50
Preterm labor, 49–50
Preterm premature rupture of membrane (PPROM), 50
Prevention
disease, dietary antioxidants and
  in adulthood, 75
  in elderly, 77–79
HIV/AIDS, 274
Prevention, cancer, 174–177, 179–192
  carotenoids, 184–187
  β-carotene, 185, 186t
  β-cryptoxanthin, 185
  α-carotene, 185, 185t
  curcumin, 186, 187
  food sources, 184–185
  lutein and zeaxanthin, 186, 187t
  lycopene, 185, 186
  colorectal cancer and fiber, 188
  cruciferous vegetables, 181–182
  intake recommendations, 182
  iodine and thyroid function, 182
  curcumin, 186, 187
  flavonoids and, 190–192, 190t, 191t
  food sources, 190–192, 190t, 191t
  fruits and vegetables, 179–181
  intake recommendations, 181
Index

legumes, 182–183
  dry beans, peas, and lentils, 182
soy, 183–184
spices and herbs, 291–293, 292t
whole grains, 184
  intake recommendations, 184
Proanthocyanidins, 27
Procyanidins, 62
Production, ROS, 7–10, 8f, 9f
Progoitrin, 181
Progression, HIV, 265t
Prolamins, 216
Prostaglandins, 217
Prostate cancer, 180–181, 190
  legumes in, 182–183
  selenium and, 99, 170, 172, 175
  soy in, 183
Protocatechic acids, 24, 31, 38
Protocatechuic acids, 37
Provitamin A carotenoids, smoking and
dietary antioxidants, 92–93
  natural antioxidants, 96–97
  supplementation studies, 99
Prunus avium, 31
Prunus spinosa, 33
Psyllium, 188
Pulegone, 30
Pulmonary embolism, 117
Pumpkin, 179
Pycnogenol, 62
Pyruvoyl tetrahydropterin synthase, 255–256
Q
Quercetin 3-glucoside, 34
Quercetin 3-glucuronide, 34
Quercetin–rhamnoglucoside, 35
Quercetins, 26, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 62, 73, 93–94,
  110, 283f, 291
Quinic acids, 31
Quinones, in cigarette tar, 86
R
Rac, transcription factor, 12
Radicals
cigarette tar, 85–87
  FRs, 85–86
  quinones, 86
  trace heavy metals, 86–87
  gas phase, 87–88
  GSH depletion, 87–88
  oxidative radicals, 87
  peroxynitrite, 87
  Radish, 27, 32t, 35, 181
  Raisins, 177
Randomized controlled trials (RCTs), 119, 120, 177
  for cancer prevention, 174
  meta-analysis of, 139
  selenium supplementation, examination,
  139–140
  of supplemental antioxidant intake and CVD
  outcomes risk, 122t–128t
RAS homolog gene family member A (RhoA)
gene, 108
Raspberries, 31, 32t, 177
color, 27
Reactive nitrogen species (RNS), 84, 87
cellular, production, 251–252
  redox control and, 199–200
  small redox molecules and redox
  homeostasis, 250–251
Reactive oxygen species (ROS), 3–20, 84, 119
  activation, 267
  in cell turnover and replacement, 3
  cellular, production, 251–252
  common targets of damaging effects, 19–20
  defined, 3, 166
  forms of, 3, 4
  generation, 8f, 48, 103, 152
  O$_2$-derived, types, 10–19
  HOCl and myeloperoxidase, 14–15
  hydrogen peroxide, 10–12
  hydroxyl radicals, 12–13
  OS, 16–17
  ozone, 15–16
  peroxynitrite, 13–14
  singlet oxygen, 15
  substances and compounds with
  antioxidant activity, 18t–19t
  oocyte maturation, ovulation, and
  fertilization, 48
OS by, 48, 54
  overview, 3–4
oxygen chemistry basics, 4–7
generation as by-products and
  intermediates, 5f
  relative rate constants for, 6t
  standard reduction potentials for redox
  couples, 6t
  production, 7–10, 8f, 9f
  redox control and, 199–200
  regulation, 8f
  small redox molecules and redox
  homeostasis, 250–251
Recommendations
  intake
  breast cancer, 189, 189t
  cruciferous vegetables, 182
  fruits and vegetables, 181
soy, 183–184
whole grains, 184
obesity, 243
Recommended daily allowance (RDA), 72, 104
for folate, 168, 169t
Red cabbage, 27, 32t, 35
Red currants, 31, 32t
color, 27
Red grapes, 27, 34
Red onion, 27, 32t
Redox control, ROS and RNS and, 199–200
Redox couples, ROS
standard reduction potentials for, 6t
Redox homeostasis, 250–251
Redox molecules, small, 250–251
Red pepper
anti-inflammatory effect, 294
antioxidant effects, 284, 288t
Red wine, 141, 177
Regulated on activation, normal T-cell expressed
and secreted (RANTES) protein, 16, 270
Relative rate constants, for ROS, 6t
Renal-protective effects, spices and herbs, 295
Respiratory burst reaction, 11, 250
Resveratrols, 28, 35, 111, 156, 237t
CHD and strokes, 141–142
in obesity, 237t, 240–241
Retinol, 92
Retinoic acid (RA), 72, 92, 219
in gliadin tolerance, 219
Retinol activity equivalents (RAE), 72
Retinols, 57, 60, 92, 185
diabetes, 154
Retinyl esters, 92
Retrovir, 273t
Rheumatic heart disease, 117
Rheumatoid arthritis, 295
RhoA (RAS homolog gene family member A)
gene, 108
Riboflavin, 58
Rice, 179
Risk(s)
antioxidants and
celiac disease, 217, 218–219
IBDs, 223–225. See also Inflammatory bowel diseases (IBDs)
CVD outcomes
observational studies on antioxidant intake and, 131t–138t
RCTs of supplemental antioxidant intake and, 122t–128t
factors associated with stroke and CHD, 118
Ritonavir, 273t
Rormarini folium, 39
ROS. See Reactive oxygen species (ROS)
Rosa canina, 26, 33
Rosaceae family, 27
Rosa micrantha, 26, 33
Rosemary, 30, 32t, 37, 291, 292t
Rosa micrantha, 37, 291, 292t
Roses, 32t, 33
Rosmanol, 39
Rosmarinic acid, 24, 37–38
Rutabaga, 181
Rutin, 38, 62
Rye, 28, 32t, 216
S
Safety concerns, in obesity, 242–243
Safflower, 179
Saffron, 28, 29
Safranal, 30
Sage, 30, 33t, 36, 37, 177, 292t
Salicylic acids, 24, 31
Salvia cryptantha, 37
Salvia multiaculis, 37
Salvianolic acid, 39
Salvia officinalis, 37, 39, 292t
Salvia species, 37
Saquinavir, 273t
Satureja herba, 39
Satureja hortensis, 37
Satureja species, 24, 37
Satureja thymbra, 38
Savory, 30, 33t, 37, 38, 177
Schenck-ene reactions, 15
Seccalin, 216
Secoisolaricresinsols, 28
Selenium, 54, 56t, 58, 60, 72, 106, 167
cancer and, 170–172, 171t
celiac disease, 218–219
CHD and strokes, 139–140
diabetes, 155
food sources, 179
HIV/AIDS and, 270
intestinal cancer and, 225
smoking and
dietary antioxidants, 94–95
natural antioxidants, 98
supplementation studies, 99
Selenium and vitamin E cancer prevention trial (SELECT), 175
Selenoenzymes, 172
Selenol, 16
Selenoproteins, 219
Seminal fluid, 47
Serpylli herba, 39
Serratia vaccini, 239
Serum retinol diabetes, 154
Sesame seeds, 28, 32t
Sesamin, 28
Sesaminols, 28
Sesamolin, 28
Sesamolinols, 28
Sesquiterpenes, 30
Sideritis syriaca, 38
Sidestream smoking, 84
Signaling pathways, in CNS diseases
Trxs protein family and, 205–206
Silymarin, 291
Simple phenols, 24, 25f
Sinapic acids, 24, 39
Singlet oxygen, 4, 5, 15
Skin cancer, 291
selenium and, 99, 172
Skin photosensitivity, singlet oxygen in, 15
Small redox molecules, 250–251
Smoking, OS and, 48, 84–99
antioxidant intake, interrelationship, 89–99
dietary antioxidants, 89–91, 90t, 91f
dietary antioxidants, interaction, 95
minerals and trace elements, 94–95.
See also Minerals; Trace elements, case, 95–98.
See also Natural antioxidants in supplementation studies, 98–99.
See also Supplementation, studies
vitamins, 91–94. See also Vitamins, smoking and
chemistry, interrelationship, 85–88
cigarette tar, radicals in, 85–87. See also Radicals, cigarette tar
gas phase, radicals in, 87–88. See also Radicals, gas phase
effects in humans, 88–89
overview, 84–85
S-nitrosylation, 200
Socioeconomic status, HIV/AIDS patients and, 273
Sodium selenite, 172
Solvents, dielectric constant in, 9
Soy, in cancer prevention, 183–184
intake recommendations, 183–184
Soya, 26
Soy milk, 27
Soybean oils, 179
Spearmint, 291, 292t
Sperms, OS and, 47
Spices, 177, 281–296
antiatherogenic and cardioprotective effect, 290–291
anticataractogenesis, 294
anti-inflammatory effect, 294–295
antioxidant effects, 283–289
clove (Eugenia caryophyllus) and eugenol, 284, 287t, 289
garlic (Allium sativum) and onion (Allium cepa), 284, 286t–287t, 288
ginger (Zingiber officinale), 284, 288, 289
red pepper (Capsicum annuum) and black pepper (Piper nigrum), 284, 288t
turmeric (Curcuma longa) and curcumin, 284, 285t–286t, 289f
bioactive compounds, 283f
cancer-preventive property, 291–293, 292t
hepatoprotective and renal-protective effects, 295
neuroprotective potential, 294
OS in diabetes, amelioration, 293
other nutraceutical properties, 296
overview, 281–283, 283f
Spinach, 32t, 179, 185, 186
Spin trapping, 86
Sporadic PD, 204
Sprouts, 181, 182
Squash, 179, 185
Standard reduction potentials, for ROS redox couples, 6t
Stavudine, 272
Stomach cancer, 174
Strawberries, 31, 33, 72, 177
Streptozotocin-induced diabetes, 293, 294
Stroke(s), 117–143
antioxidant(s), 120–143
carotenoids, 130–139, 131t–138t
hypothesis, 119–120, 120f
lycopene, 142–143
polyphenols, 140–141
resveratrol, 141–142
selenium, 139–140
vitamin C, 129–130
vitamin E, 120–129, 122t–128t
hemorrhagic, 118, 129
ischemic, 118, 129
neonatal, 202
overview, 117–118
risk factors associated with, 118
vitamin E on, 99
Stunted children, 57, 58
Subfertility, male, 47–48
Substantia nigra (SNc), 203, 204
Sudanese infants and children, 57
Sulenic acids, 200
Sulfenyltion, 200
Superoxide anion radicals, 6–7, 9
Superoxide dismutase (SOD), 11–12, 63, 86, 109, 201, 252
Supplementation
adult health and, 75–76, 76t
in cancers, 174–177, 178t
dilemma of, 177, 178–179
on HIV/AIDS patients
adverse effects, 273–274
magnesium, in diabetes, 157
for physically active individuals, 104–105
studies, 98–99
combined antioxidant, 99
non–provitamin A carotenoid, 99
selenium, 99
vitamin C, 98–99
vitamin E, 99
Swallowing problems, 267
Swedish Mammography Cohort, 173
Sweet potatoes, 179
α-Synuclein, 204
Syringaresinols, 28, 40
Syringic acids, 24, 37, 38, 39

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>T</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Table grapes, 34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Table olives, 39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tannins, 28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tar, cigarette</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>radicals in, 85–87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FRs, 85–86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quinones, 86</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trace heavy metals, 86–87</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Target of rapamycin (mTOR), 271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tarragon, 33t, 37, 177</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taxifolin, 26, 62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tea, 27, 33t, 75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>black, 36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>flavonoids of, 290</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>green, 27, 36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mountain, 33t, 36, 38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Terpinen-4-ol, 30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>α-Terpineols, 30, 37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetrachloride–induced hepatotoxicity, 295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tetraterpenes, 28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thiobarbituric acid, 272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thiobarbituric acid reactive substances (TBARS), 88</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thiocyanate ions, 182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thiolation, 200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thiol group, 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thioredoxin protein family (Trxs), 200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thioredoxin reductases (TrxR), 200</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thioredoxins (Trxs), 16–17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>protein family</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in brain, 200–202, 202f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in signaling pathways in CNS diseases, 205–206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Th1-type immune response, 254–256, 255f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thyme, 30, 32t, 37, 177, 284, 292t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thymi herba, 39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thymol, 24, 25f, 30, 37, 38, 284, 292t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thymus, 24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Thymus serpyllum</em>, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Thymus species</em>, 37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>Thymus vulgaris</em>, 284</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

| Thymus vulgaris, 37 |
| Thyroid function, cruciferous vegetables and, 182 |
| intake recommendations, 182 |
| Tight junction (Tj), 220 |
| *Tiliae officinalis*, 39 |
| Timolol, 207 |
| *Tocopherols*, 24, 29f, 39, 72, 92, 96, 153, 179, 218; *See also* Vitamin E |
| toenail selenium concentration, 170, 172 |
| Tomatoes, 97, 179, 180–181, 185, 186 |
| Total particulate matter (TPM), 86 |
| Trace elements, smoking and, 94–95 |
| heavy metals in cigarette tar, 86–87 |
| iron, 95 |
| selenium, 94–95 |
| zinc, 94 |
| Transmission, HIV/AIDS, 264, 265 |
| *trans*-3,4′,5-trihydroxystilbene, 28 |
| Tricarboxylic acid cycle, 108 |
| *Trigonella foenum-graecum*, 293 |
| Triplet oxygen, 4, 5f |
| Triterpene carnosic acid, 39 |
| Triterpenic acid, 39 |
| Trolox, 284 |
| Trolox equivalent antioxidant capacity (TEAC), 88 |
| Tryptophan, Th1-type immune response on, 254–256, 255f, 257 |
| Tumor, in mouse, 291 |
| Tumor necrosis factor-α (TNF-α), 217, 218, 220 |
| Turmeric, 177, 186, 281, 291, 294 |
| antiinflammatory drug, 294 |
| antioxidant effects, 284, 285t–286t, 289f |
| cancer-preventive property, 291 |
| Turnips, 181, 182 |
| Type 2 diabetes mellitus (T2DM), 233, 234 |
| Tyrosol, 24, 25f, 39, 40 |

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>U</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ubiquinol, 62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ulcerative colitis (UC), 221, 223–224, 225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Uncoupling proteins (UCPs), 7, 9f</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Undernourishment, during childhood, 53–54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Underweight children, 54, 57</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>United Nations Children’s Fund (UNICEF), 53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ursolic acid, 39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>U.S. Department of Agriculture, 141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>U.S. Preventive Services Task Force, 176</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>V</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Vanillic acids, 24, 31, 37, 38, 39, 40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vanillin, 39, 40</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Vegetables
  in cancer prevention, 179–181
  cruciferous, 181–182
  intake recommendations, 181
  carotenoids in, 28
  natural antioxidants distribution in, 32t, 35–36

Videx, 273t
Vinblastine, 177
Vinyl dithiins, 30, 35
Viracept, 273t
Viral load, HIV, 266
Virgin olives, 39

Vitamin(s)
  in adulthood, 72, 76
  in child growth and development, 56–62, 56t
  in old Age, 76–77
  smoking and, 91–94
    flavonoids, 93–94
    non–provitamin A carotenoids, 92–93
    vitamin A, 92–93, 94. See also Vitamin A
    vitamin C, 91–92, 94. See also Vitamin C
    vitamin E, 92, 94. See also Vitamin E
  vitamin B, 59
  vitamin D, 76
  vitamin A, 28, 54, 56–57, 56t, 58–59, 60, 72, 76, 77
  in cancer prevention, 185
  food sources, 179
  HIV/AIDS and, 268–269
  smoking and
    dietary antioxidants, 92–93, 94
    natural antioxidants, 96–97
  vitamin B, 59
  vitamin C, 17, 31, 37, 48, 50, 54, 56t, 58, 59, 60, 72, 73, 76, 77, 90t
  cancers, 172–174, 173t, 177
  celiac disease, 219–220
  CHD and strokes, 129–130
  diabetes, 153, 157
  DRIs of, 105
  exogenous antioxidant, 109–110
  food sources, 179
  HIV/AIDS and, 268–269
  smoking and
    dietary antioxidants, 91–92, 94
    natural antioxidants, 95–96
  supplementation studies, 98–99

Vitamin D, 76
  smoking and
    dietary antioxidants, 91–92, 94
    natural antioxidants, 95–96
  supplementation studies, 98–99

W
  I41 W94, 273t
  Wasabi, 181
  Watercress, 181
  Watermelon, 28, 179
  Wheat, 179, 216
  Wheat germ, 179
  White grapes, 34
  White pepper, 38
  Whole grains, in cancer prevention, 184
    intake recommendations, 184
  Wild roses, 32t, 33
  Wild thyme, 26
  Wine grapes, 34
  Wines, 28, 141
    natural antioxidants distribution in, 34–35
    red, 141, 177
  Women's Health Study (WHS), 175
  World Cancer Research Fund, 180, 181
  World Health Organization (WHO), 56–57, 56t, 117, 263
  ω-3 PUFA, 61

X
  Xanthophylls, 186

Z
  ζ-carotene, 31
  Zeaxanthin, 31, 72
    in cancer prevention, 186, 187t
  Zidovudine, 272, 273t
  Zinc
    HIV/AIDS and, 270–271
    smoking and
      dietary antioxidants, 94
      natural antioxidants, 97
    supplementation, 54, 56t, 57–58, 59, 60, 61–62
      for neurodevelopment, 60–61
  Zinger officinale, 283f
  Zingiber, 290
  Zingiberaceae, 186
  Zingiber officinale, antioxidant effects, 284, 288, 289
  Zingiber officinalis, 38